





GENEALOGY DEPARTMENT

J




ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01744 4487

GENEALOGY  
979.4  
H624H  
1958





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2016 with funding from  
findmypast.com



March, 1958

Vol. XL — No. 1

1883 — Celebrating Our — 1958  
DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY YEAR

*The*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

# QUARTERLY



— Photo Courtesy Occidental College

ROBERT GLASS CLELAND  
(1885-1957)

See ROBERT GLASS CLELAND, *An Historian's Appreciation*, page 81.



**T**HE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for three-quarters of a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 the *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published each March, June, September and December.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to make the *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms are always welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

*The Society's Purposes and Objectives are:*

- To sponsor and encourage observances of historic dates and anniversaries;
- To preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest with particular stress on Southern California;
- To assist in the marking and restoration of landmarks which inspire interest and respect for events, persons and customs of the past;
- To promote activity in the conservation of public records, historical documents, newspapers, museum material and related Californiana;
- To preserve, as an aid to business and industry, business records, industrial and transportation history and the use of historic material in public relations;
- To encourage the increased use of history in the schools, to the end that there shall be developed a greater interest in, respect for, and loyalty to our American institutions;
- To publish material of permanent historic interest and significance;
- To assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities;
- To hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles (except during the summer months) at which persons of recognized authority in their respective subjects appear as guest speakers, followed by refreshments and a social hour;
- To gather at least once each year in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

*This Society is a public non-profit corporation. The principal sources of revenue for its operations and maintenance are from membership dues, contributions and bequests. It renders a needed public service and is worthy of your support.*

**MEMBERSHIP CLASSIFICATIONS:**

*(Dues include one subscription to the QUARTERLY)*

<i>Life Member</i> .....	\$200.00	<i>Sustaining Member</i> .....	\$ 25.00
<i>Patron Member</i> .....	100.00	<i>Active Member</i> .....	10.00

*Membership dues and contributions to the Society are deductible income tax items.*

*Articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the QUARTERLY, and general society correspondence should be addressed to the temporary headquarters:*

**THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA**

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary*

1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California

Telephone REpublic 4-2823



*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

# **QUARTERLY**



*Reunited at home for their first Christmas  
after nineteen years Mr. & Mrs. Joseph Scott and family  
send you cordial greetings for this festive season.  
Pasadena, California 1931*

### IN MEMORY OF JOSEPH SCOTT

*A reproduction of a photographic Christmas Card mailed to friends  
of the Scott family in 1931. This card, taken from the files  
of the Historical Society of Southern California, was a  
gift to the Society from Mr. Elias R. Forster of  
Walnut, California, on October 27, 1949.  
(See page 96.)*

*Allen County Public Library  
Ellettsville, Indiana*



X742219

*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

# QUARTERLY

---

VOLUME XL

March, 1958

NUMBER 1

---

## CONTENTS:

FIFTEEN DECISIVE EVENTS OF CALIFORNIA HISTORY, PART I . . . . .	3
<i>By Rockwell D. Hunt</i>	
W. M. GWIN: MIDDLEMAN . . . . .	17
<i>By Donald E. Hargis</i>	
THE SENATOR — FAVORITE COASTWISE STEAMER . . . . .	33
<i>By Maymie R. Krythe</i>	
THE METHODIST CHURCH AND THE UNIVERSITY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA . . . . .	58
<i>By Edward Drewry Jervey</i>	
OUR HERITAGE FROM THE DAYS OF THE DONS . . . . .	70
<i>By Thomas Workman Temple, II</i>	
FORGOTTEN LANDMARKS IN VENTURA COUNTY . . . . .	77
<i>By Jeanne Riha</i>	
ROBERT GLASS CLELAND, 1885-1957 . . . . .	81
<i>By Andrew F. Rolle</i>	
BOOK REVIEWS . . . . .	84
ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY . . . . .	87
NEW MEMBERS . . . . .	90
GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY . . . . .	91
COMING SOCIETY EVENTS . . . . .	94
IN MEMORIAM . . . . .	96

---

The HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, 1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

---

# The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

## *Officers, Directors and Committees for 1958*

### OFFICERS:

GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *President*

JUSTIN G. TURNER, *First Vice-President*

FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Second Vice-President and Treasurer*

ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary Emeritus*

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary and Curator*

### DIRECTORS:

Gustave O. Arlt  
JOSEPH J. LA BARBERA

K. L. Carver

Dwight L. Clarke

Edmond F. Ducommun

Colin M. Gair

Lorrin L. Morrison

Marco R. Newmark

Mrs. J. M. Northrop  
Ana Begue de Packman

Frank B. Putnam

W. W. Robinson

Andrew F. Rolle

Miss Grace S. Stoermer

Justin G. Turner

Mrs. Thomas E. Workman

### STANDING COMMITTEES:

*Executive Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; Edmond F. Ducommun, Justin G. Turner, Frank B. Putnam, W. W. Robinson.

*Program Committee:* FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer, Andrew F. Rolle.

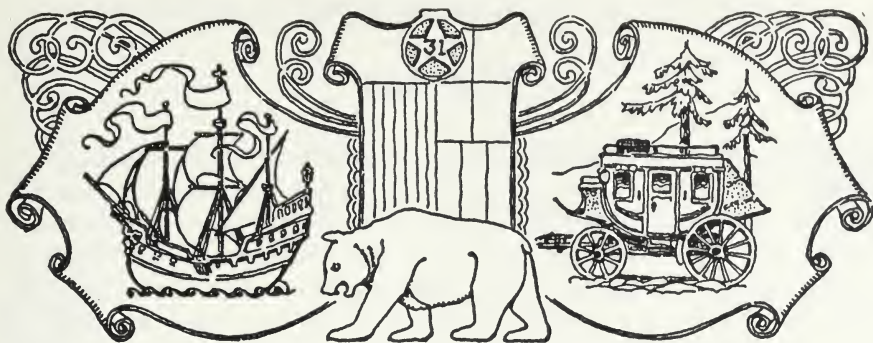
*Publication Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; W. W. Robinson, Justin G. Turner, K. L. Carver, Dwight L. Clarke, Edmond F. Ducommun, Lorrin L. Morrison, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Membership Committee:* K. L. CARVER, *Chairman*; Lorrin L. Morrison, Mrs. J. M. Northrop, Joseph J. La Barbera, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Harold Oswald, Frank B. Putnam, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman, George L. Swartz, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, George S. Moffatt, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Gifts Committee:* MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; GUY E. MARION, *Curator*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, H. H. West, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill.

*Landmarks Committee:* EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba, A. B. Perkins, Miss Ann Patton, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.

*Hostesses of the Social Hour:* MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN and MRS. BEATRICE SABICHI MITCHELL, *Co-chairmen*; Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Mrs. Ernest Yorba, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.



GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Pictorial Editor*

---

*The Historical Society of Southern California* QUARTERLY for March, 1958

---

*Beginning . . .*

# Fifteen Decisive Events *of* California History


*By*  
Rockwell D. Hunt



Part I



## Preface

HE TITLE OF THIS STUDY WAS SUGGESTED, quite obviously, by the title of Sir Edward S. Creasy's well known, valuable volume, published in 1851, *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World, from Marathon to Waterloo*. To each of the battles selected by Creasy, a remark of Hallam about the Battle of Tours may be applied: "those few battles of which a contrary event would have essentially varied the drama of the world in all its subsequent scenes." From Sir Edward's point of vantage, the world history was brilliantly passed in review, with the result that we are presented with a suggestive framework of universal history.

Something similar may be said, within a very restricted area, regarding fifteen decisive events in California history. An overview of the series will go far towards gaining an understanding of the entire history of what has been called the "Empire State of the Pacific." While distinctly disavowing any fatalistic philosophy, I may venture the assertion that, if these events had not taken place when and as they did, the course of California history would have been materially different from the course it actually followed.


I am well aware that in the selection and appraisal of historical events students and writers will differ, at times perhaps quite sharply: but I have not permitted this fact to be a deterrent to me. On the other hand, if happily the selections here made will have the effect of whetting the appetite for more thorough knowledge and a more just interpretation of our significant history, that may be counted all gain.

Certainly there is no magic in the number fifteen — it is simply a convenient number that has been suggested by Creasy; large enough to afford a respectable variety of phases in human events, sufficiently small to avoid the pitfalls of particularism. Some of the events are predominantly political in character; some military; others chiefly economic; still others of religious and moral emphasis. But I disclaim any attempt to present a quantitative evaluation of each event, or to assign any precise weighting in a relative scale of human importance. Because of the complex human equation, and the interweaving presence of imponderables, I am not among those who claim for history the status of an exact science. The sincere student of history, however, should always approach his study in the scientific spirit and seek to maintain true objectivity.

*Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

*Chapter One*

**Discovery by Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo,  
September 28, 1542**

T MAY BE SAID WITH GOOD REASON that California history correctly begins with the discovery of San Diego, by Cabrillo, just fifty years after the great discovery by Columbus. Notice was taken of the world-wide significance of the event by the State Legislature in a Senate concurrent resolution in 1935, designating September 28, 1942, as "Cabrillo Day," and calling upon the people to observe, each year, that day by appropriate patriotic exercises. Accordingly, a State Department of Education bulletin, entitled "John Rodríguez Cabrillo, Discoverer of California," was prepared by Dr. Ivan Waterman, under authority of Vierling Kersey, Superintendent of Public Instruction. The public schools of California were charged with the responsibility of observing Cabrillo Day annually, in a manner in keeping with the importance of the occasion.

The actual discovery represented the convergence of numerous forces and many personalities. First among personalities comes Hernando Cortez, mighty conqueror of Mexico, greatest of all the *conquistadores*, described by Madariaga as "a masterly hand with men; a masterly mind with things; a gift for expression, in action by doing the right thing, in thought by saying the right thing, always at the right time." Under his auspices "ships first breasted the waters of the north Pacific." Theodore Hittell declared; "it is in his California expeditions that is to be found the best exhibition of his courage, his constancy, and his fortitude . . . he must be regarded as one of the most enterprising and persevering, as well as the most loyal of conquerors." Other prominent names include Antonio de Fortuno Ximenez and Francisco de Ulloa.

Cortez had been informed—or misinformed!—that the Americas were a group of islands stretching along the coast of Asia; that New Spain (Mexico) was either a projection from Asia or separated from the mainland by the Strait of Anián. This legendary passage, which came to be identified in thought on the Atlantic side with the fabulous Northwest Passage, was the object of diligent search by navigators under many different flags, for generations, for it was believed that its discovery would open a direct

way to Cathay. No price was too high if only it would establish the shorter route from Spain to the East Indies. The actual influence of the historic myth is almost incalculable.

Hernando de Alarcón had been sent on a special expedition with a view to contacting Vásquez de Coronado, in search of the fabled "Seven Cities of Cibola." From the head of the Gulf of California Alarcón proceeded up the Colorado River for about fifteen leagues, or near a point where Yuma now stands: it is entirely possible that he actually set foot on what is now California soil — and that was a full year before Cabrillo's discovery in 1542. But even admitting that Alarcón did enter the extreme southeastern corner of California, the event must be dismissed as of no great historic significance. The epoch-making expedition of Cabrillo, on the other hand, stands out as the event that marked the real discovery of California, to be followed up by the actual occupation and colonization by Spain.

History had reserved this distinguished honor for Juan Rodríguez Cabrillo, a bold Portuguese navigator "of great courage and honor and a thorough seaman." His expedition, with two vessels, the *San Salvador* and the *Victoria*, sailed from Navidad on the 27th of June, 1542, with a twofold objective: first, the hope of finding the large river, called La Señora — later to be identified with the Rio Grande — then believed to empty into the Pacific; second, solving the great mystery of the Strait of Anián, believed to connect the South Sea and the Atlantic Ocean.

After three months of arduous voyaging northward, Cabrillo sailed past the Coronado Islands September 27: on the auspicious morning of Thursday, the 28th of September, he entered "a port closed and very good," naming it San Miguel. He had actually discovered beautiful San Diego Bay. Well might he in that hour of destiny have exclaimed in triumph, "Eureka" (I have found it)! For on that day it was that the actual Spanish rule in Alta California began — at that time Spain was without an equal as a great colonizing power. And that was in no sense an isolated event, no mere touch-and-go affair. Great excitement was shown among the startled natives when Santa Catalina was visited; then later came the bay of Santa Monica, which, because of the smokes seen on the shore, received the name *Bahia de los Fumos* ("Bay of the Smokes"). Cabrillo proceeded to visit the Channel Islands. Then heading northward the ships were so severely buffeted by fierce



### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

storms that for a while the hapless sailors on each believed the other to be lost. On the 17th of November Cabrillo entered Monterey Bay; but the violence of the sea prevented a landing. Later, coming almost in sight of San Francisco Bay, the rough weather and gloomy prospects decided him to turn southward, and he finally reached San Miguel, where he intended to pass the winter.

But on San Miguel he suffered an injury resulting from an accidental fall, followed by blood-poisoning, and on the 3rd of January he died. The exact place of his burial has never been completely established. But in obedience to his dying injunction the expedition was vigorously continued, without intermission, under command of the chief pilot, Bartolomé Ferrelo, a navigator very "skilled in all the affairs of the sea." He sailed as far north as the present boundary between California and Oregon.

It is therefore clear that the Cabrillo expedition, which traversed the entire coast-line of California, moving slowly and examining the details of the physical features carefully, fully authenticated and confirmed the discovery of Alta California when Cabrillo came to anchor in San Diego Harbor on the 28th day of September, 1542, and claimed the country for the king of Spain.

Regarding the aborigines found along the shore, he reported them living in rude huts in small groups, obviously quite poorly clad, apparently an inferior race. Their meager food supply consisted chiefly of fish and wild game, with acorns, berries and seeds of many kinds. But they were not as low in the scale of culture as the inhabitants of Baja California — as seen by the Jesuits and described by Venegas. On one of the near-by islands was found a primitive temple which, while reflecting unsystematized superstition, nevertheless was an indication of the presence among the Indians of the rudiments of religion.

To be sure, it was a very long time — more than two and a quarter centuries — before actual occupation of Alta California was begun, by the founding of Mission San Diego, in 1769; but Spain never relinquished her claim to the territory by right of discovery — the Spanish period dates its real beginning from that autumn day in 1542. And we must agree with the historian Hittell that to Cabrillo, sometimes called the "Columbus of California," belongs the honor of the discovery of California, "a daring and intrepid, as well as a careful and prudent navigator."

**See Selected Bibliography, page fifteen**

*Chapter Two*

**Founding of San Diego Mission  
by Junípero Serra,  
July 16, 1769**



WHEN, ON THE 16TH DAY OF JULY, 1769, Junípero Serra, Father-President of a band of sixteen Franciscan missionaries, raised the cross of Santa Fé in solemn ceremony, dedicating the Mission San Diego in the presence of simple-minded aborigines, he was filled with humble gratitude and his spirit was suffused with exaltation, as he fervently declared, "All my life has been lived for this glorious day."

Father Serra was almost fifty-six years old. The dream of his youth to become a missionary, which had deepened into a settled conviction, then a consuming passion, had at last become a marvelous reality. The actual founding of the first Franciscan California Mission was a culminating point in the life of the founder, as it was also a beginning of his illustrious career in what we know as the Golden State.

Preceding that day, and as a preparation for it, Serra, a native of the island of Petra, had become a monk before reaching eighteen; then, after Lullian University had conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Sacred Theology and had made him a professor, came the day of his embarkation for New Spain: after a voyage of ninety-nine days he arrived at Vera Cruz, December 6, 1749. It was only after almost twenty years of dedicated labors in the mountainous region of Sierra Gorda that the call and opportunity came to enter upon his real life work.

A new epoch in Spanish colonization, after a very long period of stagnation in the north, had been opened by the appearance of Don José Galvez, Visitor-General to New Spain, with almost unlimited power. He had not been slow to perceive the importance of occupying Alta California, discovered so long before, by Cabrillo. *Presidios* were needed: Russia and England gave cause for concern, challenging the domination of Spain; the Jesuits had fallen into disfavor and had been expelled in 1767. Occupation of California meant the employment of religious as well as military and civic







### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

forces. To Padre Junípero Serra came the commission as Father-President of the Franciscan missionaries, his religious objective being the christianization of the pagans; Captain Gaspar de Portolá, a Catalonian of noble family, was placed in charge of the military forces to proceed to Alta California and occupy the territory. The "Argonauts of 1769" also included Padre Francisco Palóu, Serra's "Loving Disciple," Padre Juan Crespi, intimate friend of Serra, and Miguel Costansó, cosmographer and diarist.

Full details of the expedition, by land and by sea, are available to the student. So significant seemed that day when the expedition was completed, and Serra and Portolá came together, that Theodore Hittell suggested July 1, 1769, as the natal day for Alta California. After careful preparations were completed, the ceremonial founding of the first Franciscan Mission as a concrete act came, on the 16th day of July. The solemn ceremony, with the temporary and improvised arrangements and facilities, is all familiar history. Father Serra raised and blessed the cross, then earnestly preached to the mystified, curious Indians gathered about — an experience totally new to them. The important point for us is that this act signalized, not only the beginning of our missionary history, but also constituted one of the first formal acts in the permanent occupation of Alta California by Spain. It marked the establishment of Mission San Diego by Padre Junípero Serra as one of the decisive events of our history.

A British historian of an earlier day once remarked, "The history of England is the history of her Church"; with equal truth it may be stated, the history of Alta California under Spanish dominion is the history of her Franciscan Missions. As is well known, three chief factors entered into the occupation and conquest — the military, as seen in the founding of the *presidios*; the civic, represented by the *pueblos*; and the religious, signalized by the cordon of Franciscan missions. And there can be no doubt that of the three factors the religious was easily the most influential force employed by the government of Spain.

The full significance of the founding of California's first Franciscan mission is better understood after taking note of the position of Spain among European nations beginning with the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella. Moorish domination had completely disappeared with the fall of Granada into Spanish hands in 1492. Changing events foreshadowed the magnificent empire of Charles

V (Carlos I of Spain). It was Spain that opened the Western door to the modern era. In religion the Papal See held almost unquestioned sway. Geographically, industrially and politically a career of unparalleled magnificence and splendor seemed open to Spain as she faced modern times. As Professor Frank Blackmar wrote: "There never was a better opportunity given to a nation for advancing liberal government and elevating humanity by an enlightened policy of rulers than the one given in the political supremacy of Spain." Still more striking are the words of Charles F. Lummis: "They were Spaniards who first saw and explored the greatest gulf in the world; Spaniards who first knew that there were two continents of America; Spaniards who first went around the world." Without doubt Spain became the greatest colonizing power in the world. That she ultimately failed to make the most of her matchless opportunity, and that she suffered lamentable decadence subsequently — all this must not concern us here.

It was indeed a very long time from Cabrillo's brilliant discovery in 1542 to the beginning of actual occupation by Spain. When it did come it came chiefly as a result of the heroic activities of three men: José de Galvez, Visitor-General to New Spain, who made the momentous decision to send an expedition to take and settle San Diego and Monterey; Gaspar de Portolá, military commandant, "humane and loyal soldier," in charge of the historic expedition; and Junípero Serra, with his sacred commission to establish Christian missions in the new but promising land.

It was the founding of the first mission at San Diego by the "Apostle of California" — who has been given first rank in the Hall of Fame in the national Capitol — under the flag of Spain and the banner of Christianity, that proved to be an event of surpassing importance in our history. Not only did it mark the actual beginning of Spanish occupation and of the cordon of twenty-one Franciscan missions: it served as a pivot-point for the entire Hispanic period of the history of California.

**See Selected Bibliography, page fifteen**



## **The Overland Expeditions of Juan Bautista de Anza, 1774-1775**



VERY SOON AFTER THE BEGINNING OF Spanish occupation of California, at San Diego and Monterey, and greatly accentuated by the discovery of the matchless San Francisco Bay, it became apparent that the opening of a land route from Sonora in northern Mexico, leading into Alta California — really an old dream—was of paramount importance in settling and holding the country so earnestly desired. The truth of this statement becomes more obvious after a study is made of the map of northern Mexico and southern United States, with attention to the topography and character of the terrain involved.

Supplies had to be brought up to the infant settlements in Alta California; but the sea voyage from San Blas or other parts of Baja California was long and hazardous, as well as very expensive; and the sterile peninsula was too impoverished to furnish the northern settlements with a food supply — what was needed was the discovery of an overland supply route from Sonora; nothing could be clearer than that, and no substitute was in prospect.

But another reason for opening such a route, perhaps even more important, was that of holding the country against any potential enemy: there was always the threat of the Russian Bear from the far north; and Francis Drake was not the only Englishman that had cast envious eyes upon the shores of northern California. As early as 1687 Eusebio Francisco Kino, renowned Jesuit leader, had given an impulse toward overcoming the serious barrier. But woeful ignorance of geographical conditions, grave practical difficulties, and lack of financial support proved too much for him — his vision proved to be premature. Likewise Kino's immediate successors were unable to make any significant progress toward the desired end. But now that the Jesuits had been expelled from Baja California, and actual beginnings of the occupation of Alta California by the Franciscans had been made, the question was revived with a spirit of reality and a sense of immediate urgency. Privations were so severe that for weeks complete abandonment of the incipient colony was hanging in the balance.

In 1772 Governor Pedro Fages, successor to Portolá, indirectly made some approach toward opening a trail when he pursued a small band of deserting soldiers into Imperial Valley, resulting in the discovery of Cajon Pass and the Mojave Desert. The chief initiative in planning and executing the real opening of the desired route, however, was achieved by three men, whose names will always be prominent in the history of Spanish California. These were Viceroy Antonio María Bucareli of New Spain, who gave careful attention to the serious transportation problem; Juan Bautista de Anza, indefatigable explorer and colonizer; and Father Francisco Garcés, pioneer trusted friend and counselor of the Indians. The actual head of the enterprise was Anza, whose name has been given to the famous expeditions. He was greatly assisted by a Baja California Indian who had become a San Gabriel Mission neophyte named Sebastian, and had run away.

Through the painstaking researches of Herbert E. Bolton and others the details of this episode and the route taken have become well established. The Viceroy, when thoroughly convinced, made a historic decision. With the approval of Father Serra and the official *junta*, he decided upon an expedition to explore the route and break a trail overland from northern Mexico into Upper California — to discover a practical route in a north-westerly direction from Sonora to Monterey had become a leading quest. Anza shared Bucareli's conviction, and Garcés became convinced of the feasibility of such a route.

Anza's petition for permission to head a party to explore the route was granted in September, 1773; it was agreed that Garcés, a Franciscan monk of wide knowledge and clear understanding, should accompany Anza. In three months, they were ready to start, in spite of the formidable task of enlisting soldiers and colonists and collecting live stock and needed equipment. After a vexatious delay occasioned by a raid by Apache Indians, who made away with more than 100 horses, the actual departure occurred January 8, 1774. The cavalcade included thirty-four persons — twenty of them soldiers — 140 horses, and sixty-five head of cattle — the cattle intended as chief food supply.

The route has been traced with great particularity by Professor Bolton. In about a month the Gila River was reached, the turbulent Colorado River was crossed with the assistance of friendly Indians; then with no maps or well-beaten trails to guide them,

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

they made their way through San Gorgonio Pass, at whose summit a bronze tablet has been placed — its inscription gives the date March 16, 1774, the expedition having traveled from Tubac, near the boundary of Arizona. Imagination can only partly picture the details of that historic march: difficulties to be encountered, obstacles to be overcome, at times hostile Apache Indians to be subdued, hardships to be endured from desert sun, tainted drinking water, and cactus-infested country, are scarcely conceivable to us now.

Arrival at Mission San Gabriel was hailed by the delighted *padres* with the ringing of bells and hymns of praise. Anza was eager to press on to Monterey. The task had now become comparatively simple, for he was thenceforth in a fertile land, and the mission fathers had already broken a trail. On the 10th of April Monterey was reached, where Father-President Junípero Serra warmly congratulated the intrepid Anza, at the head of his party. Then they were once more on the move, taking the route of Gaspar de Portolá and Francisco Palóu, to San Francisco Bay. Sites were selected for a mission and a *presidio*; though the actual founding followed at slightly later dates. Returning by the same route, the party finally reached Tubac on the 26th of May. In July Anza proceeded to Mexico City to report to the viceroy: and thus was concluded the first historic Anza overland expedition, which had accomplished its purpose, opening the way from northern Mexico to Alta California. The path had been broken.

The spectacular second expedition, which was on a far grander scale, started October 23, 1775. The new *presidio* was to be established at San Francisco, and the founding of missions in the Colorado region was contemplated. The viceroy now gave very liberal support to the new project. A strange company it was, indeed, consisting of 240 persons, including whole families of colonists, with 340 horses, 165 mules, and 320 head of cattle. It would be difficult to find anywhere a parallel to that example of enterprising pioneering. The impression the grand cavalcade made upon the bewildered aborigines must be left to the fertile imagination. Eight babies were born *en route*, which, in spite of one mother who died in childbirth, brought a larger personnel at the end than at the start, in itself a high tribute to the exceptional skill of Anza as a frontiersman. Details of the expedition along the route cannot be recorded here. Father Font's official diary reveals every petty detail. It is not to be supposed that everything moved along smoothly — various kinds of problems arose from time to time.



San Gabriel was reached February 12; on the 10th of March the party arrived at Monterey, and the following morning witnessed a ceremonial thanksgiving led by Father Serra. Later in the month Anza, taking with him only a few men, set out for San Francisco. There, after a careful survey, he selected a site for a *presidio*, and one for the mission, naming it Dolores. But these establishments were actually founded at slightly later dates. Both Anza and Font were impressed by the port of San Francisco: Font declared, "The port of San Francisco is a marvel of nature, and may be called the port of ports." When on the 14th of April, Anza turned his face to the South and took his final departure, there was great lamentation; for the settlers had learned to love and revere him, as their leader, as well they might. Without really knowing it himself, he had been instrumental in making one of the greatest contributions in all the history of Spanish California.

With the successful opening of the land route from Sonora to Monterey and San Francisco, he had completed the mission to which his viceroy had assigned him, had added a hitherto unknown sense of permanency and security to the new province, and following the establishment of the *presidio* and the mission at San Francisco, "the culminating point in the Spanish conquest of Alta California" had been reached. The course of Alta California history had been changed; Anza had demonstrated his qualifications for a place in the Hall of Fame — his high rank is conceded by historians, among them Hubert Howe Bancroft, who wrote: "As an explorer, he easily deserves to rank above many who hitherto have been awarded more conspicuous places in history. Neither De Soto, LaSalle, Pike, Long, nor Frémont encountered greater difficulties than he, nor did any of them attack them with so much wisdom and courage."

**See Selected Bibliography, page sixteen**

*(To Be Continued)*

## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER ONE

- Bancroft, Hubert Howe, *History of California*, 7 volumes, San Francisco: The History Co., 1884-1890 (Vol. I)
- Bolton, Herbert Eugene, ed., (1) *Spanish Exploration in the Southwest, 1542-1706*; New York: Charles Scribner's Sons; reprinted 1925. (2) *The Spanish Borderland*; New Haven: Yale University Press, 1921.
- Caughey, John Walton, *California* (2nd edition); New York: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1953.
- Chapman, Charles Edward, *A History of California: The Spanish Period*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1916
- Cleland, Robert Glass, *From Wilderness to Empire. A History of California, 1542-1900*; New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1944 (Chap. I)
- Eldredge, Zoeth Skinner, ed., *A History of California*, 5 vols.; New York: The Century History Co., 1915 (Vol. I)
- Hafen, LeRoy, and Carl Coke Rister, *Western America* (2nd edition); New York: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1950 (Chap. 2)
- Hittell, Theodore H., *History of California*, 4 vols. San Francisco: N. J. Stone Co., 1885-1898 (Vol. I)
- Richman, Irving Berdine, *California Under Spain and Mexico*; Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1911 (Chap. I)
- Sánchez, Nellie Van de Grift, *California: The Spanish Period*; Chicago: Lewis Pub. Co., 1932
- Wagner, Henry Raup, (1) *Spanish Voyages to the Northwest Coast of America in the Sixteenth Century* (California Historical Society, Special Publication No. 4). San Francisco, 1939 (Chap. IV). (2) *Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, Discoverer of the Coast of California* (Bul. of the California State Dept. of Education, No. 14, July 15, 1935); Sacramento: 1935

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER TWO

- Berger, John A., *The Franciscan Missions of California*; New York: Doubleday & Co., 1948
- Blackmar, Frank Wilson, *Spanish Institutions of the Southwest*; Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 1891
- Chapman, Charles Edward, *A History of California: The Spanish Period*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1921
- Engelhardt, (Charles Anthony in Religion) Zephyrin, *The Missions and Missionaries of California*, 4 vols.; San Francisco: The J. H. Barry Co., 1908-1915
- Fitch, Abigail Hetzel, *Junipero Serra: The Man and His Work*; Chicago: A. C. McClurg & Co., 1914
- Hittell, Theodore H., *History of California*, 4 vols.; San Francisco: N. J. Stone & Co., 1897 (Vol. I, Book III)
- Jackson, Helen Hunt, *Glimpses of California and the Missions*; Boston: Little, Brown, & Co., 1923 (first printed, 1883)
- Palóu, Francisco, (1) *The Expedition into California of the Venerable Padre Fray Junipero Serra . . .* Edited and Translated by Douglas Sloane Watson, Assisted by Thomas W. Temple, II; San Francisco: Nueva California Press, 1934. (2) *Life and Apostolic Labors of the Venerable Father Junipero Serra, Founder of the Franciscan Missions of California*. Introduction by George Wharton James: English Translation by C. Scott Williams; Pasadena: George Wharton James, 1913.
- Priestley, Herbert Ingram, *José de Galvez, Visitor-General of New Spain, 1765-1771*; Berkeley: University of California Press, 1916
- Repplier, Agnes, *Junipero Serra, Pioneer Colonist of California*; Garden City, N. Y.: Doubleday, Doran & Co., Inc., 1933

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER THREE

- Bancroft, Hubert Howe, *History of California*, 7 Vols.; San Francisco: The History Co. (Vol. I)
- Bolton, Herbert Eugene, (1) *Outpost of Empire: The Story of the Founding of San Francisco*; New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1931. (2) ed., *Anza's California Expeditions*, 5 Vols.; Berkeley: University of California Press, 1930
- Caughey, John W., *California*; New York: Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1953 (Chap. 9)
- Chapman, Charles Edward, *The Founding of Spanish California. The Northwestward Expansion of New Spain, 1687-1783*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1916 (Chap. VII)
- Cleland, Robert Glass, *From Wilderness to Empire: A History of California 1542-1900*; New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1944 (Chap. 5)
- Eldredge, Zoeth Skinner, (1) *The Beginnings of San Francisco . . .* 2 Vols; San Francisco: Privately Printed, 1912. (2) ed., *History of California*, 5 Vols.; San Francisco: The Century History Co., 1915 (Vol. I)
- Font, Pedro, *The Anza Expeditions of 1775-1776. Diary of Pedro Font*, ed. by Frederick J. Teggart (Pubs. of Acad. of Pacific Coast History, Vol. III, No. 1) Berkeley: University of Calif. Press, 1913 (Spanish and English text)
- Hunt, Rockwell D., *California's Statelty Hall of Fame*; Stockton: Pubs. of Calif. History Foundation, 1950 (Chap. II)
- Hunt, Rockwell D., and Nellie Van de Grift Sánchez, *A Short History of California*; New York: Thomas Y. Crowell Co. 1929 (Chap. VII)
- Morrow, Honoré McCue (Willsie), *Beyond the Blue Sierra*; New York: Wm. Morrow & Co., 1932
- Sánchez, Nellie Van de Grift, *California: The Spanish Period*; Chicago: The Lewis Pub. Co., 1932 (Chaps. XVI-XVII)





— Photo courtesy Wells Fargo Bank, San Francisco

WILLIAM MCKENDREE GWIN




— Photo courtesy Wells Fargo Bank, San Francisco

DAVID C. BRODERICK

# W. M. Gwin: Middleman

By Donald E. Hargis\*

 IN JANUARY, 1848, CALIFORNIA'S 20,000 INHABITANTS lived in a few sleepy outposts, connected overland with the East by rough trails and with the rest of the world by an occasional trading vessel. Within two years hundreds of tent and shack villages had sprung up to house 91,000 immigrants; regular routes of travel were laid out overland and by way of Panama; a constitutional government had been established; and efforts were being made to admit California to the Union. In 1849 there had developed a society which, though crude in physical aspect, was in many ways not far different from that of the eastern seaboard. Not only did prospectors flock to the mines, but also doctors, lawyers, merchants and politicians came to the settlements. From every part of the country ex-Senators, ex-Governors and ex-Congressmen arrived, seeking their political fortunes.

Among these ex-Congressmen who landed in San Francisco in 1849 was one who had resolved before he left the East to become a Senator from California.<sup>1</sup> This man was William M. Gwin, a Southerner by birth and experience and a Unionist by inclination, one who was to play as important a role as he had cast for himself when he left for the West. Enmeshed in the sectional struggle within the Democratic party in the state and confused by his divided loyalties as a Southerner and a Unionist in the larger sectional issues which he faced as a senator, he was, as he put it, "one of the middlemen" on the political scene from 1849 to 1861.<sup>2</sup>

## I.

William McKendree Gwin was born in Sumner County, Tennessee, on October 9, 1805, and was educated in the elementary schools of the district. Following a regular course of reading in law, Gwin qualified as a lawyer, but he never practiced law. He entered Transylvania College in 1825 to study medicine and was graduated in 1828. However, he practiced medicine in Tennessee for only a short period and then left for Mississippi. Gwin went first to Vicksburg, but very soon moved to Clinton, where he was a successful physician until he retired from practice in 1833. Because of his father's intimacy with President Jackson, Gwin became a protégé of Jackson's and, in 1833, was appointed by him as United States Marshal for Mississippi. This position, which he held until 1840,



was the stepping stone to a place of political leadership in the state. He ran for Congress in 1841 and was elected, serving that single term. In 1846 Gwin moved to New Orleans, where he was appointed to supervise the construction of the Customs House. On February 1, 1849, he left the South for California.

In Washington on his way to the West he told Stephen A. Douglas that he was leaving for California to help form a state government and that within a year, he would ask Douglas to present his, Gwin's, credentials as a senator from the state. Only eight days after his arrival in California on June 4, 1849, he spoke at a meeting in San Francisco, advocating the formation of a state government and later in the summer spoke upon the same subject at meetings in Sacramento and Stockton.<sup>3</sup> The people of San Francisco elected him a delegate to the convention which met in Monterey on September 1, 1849, to draw up a state constitution. "From the first day to the last of the Convention Gwin played an impressive role. Some students of the debates accord him the foremost place in leadership, while those who refuse this recognition admit his remarkable ability."<sup>4</sup> His own reaction was that "Mr. Gwin took a somewhat prominent part in its proceedings throughout."<sup>5</sup>

On December 15, 1849, he was elected one of the first two senators from the as-yet-unrecognized state of California. Undoubtedly, his political skill, as demonstrated in the Constitutional Convention, secured his election. In Washington he conferred with congressional leaders, met with the President, and consulted with Clay on the compromise measures in an effort to have the state admitted to the Union. On September 9, 1850, California became a state and Douglas presented Gwin's credentials as a Senator. In the Senate Gwin worked to secure approval for all types of legislation affecting California and was successful with many measures for the benefit of the state. In 1855 his term was up; and although he was an active candidate for reelection, because of a division in the party and the rise of the "Know-Nothings" a deadlock ensued and it became impossible to fill the vacancy.

In California the Democratic party was split into two factions: the Southern section headed by Gwin and the Northern led by David C. Broderick. Broderick wanted to succeed Gwin in the Senate and so the two men were deadlocked from 1854 to 1857, without electing a Senator. In 1857 a second seat became vacant and Broderick was elected for that full six year term. Gwin had to be content with reelection to the other term of which only four years remained. This happened after Gwin made a "deal" with Broderick, whereby, in an abject letter, Gwin gave up his federal patronage

*W. M. Gwin: Middleman*

to Broderick in return for reelection to the Senate.<sup>6</sup> Gwin claimed that he had not made a "deal" in order to return to the Senate but that he had determined long before not to be bothered with patronage. However, there is ample evidence that Gwin would not have been reelected without the letter.<sup>7</sup> In 1859 he continued his contest with Broderick as both stumped California in a series of bitter, personal "debates" in one of the most vindictive campaigns on record.

Gwin's elective political career closed March 5, 1861. After Lincoln took office, Gwin acted for Secretary of State Seward in an unsuccessful effort to contact Jefferson Davis and the Confederate Commissioners to arrange for terms of peace and reconciliation. Gwin returned to California and in October, 1861, left for New York. He was arrested in Panama on suspicion of being a traitor; he was re-arrested when he reached New York but was soon released. Gwin then returned to Mississippi, where he remained until 1862 when he sailed for France. In Paris he convinced the Emperor Napoleon and the French government that he should be allowed to develop a colonization program in the province of Sonora, Mexico. He advanced the plan in an effort to recoup his financial losses suffered through the Civil War.<sup>8</sup> With the active support of Napoleon he made two trips to Mexico; but because of the hostility of the Emperor Maximilian, the opposition of the Mexican people, and the intervention of the United States, Gwin was forced to flee into Texas in 1865. In New Orleans he was arrested by Federal forces and imprisoned for seven months. After his release he returned to San Francisco.

"Contrary to the general belief, his political influence did not end with his senatorial career."<sup>9</sup> In 1872 Gwin was a delegate to the Democratic National Convention, and in the Hayes-Tilden campaign of 1876 he was counted upon to manage the Democratic campaign in California. William M. Gwin died in New York City on September 3, 1885.

II.

Gwin's political, social and economic contacts in the South had formed his character, so that he was a composite type with the democratic principles of a frontiersman, the aristocratic bearing of a southern planter and the diplomatic nature of a statesman. "Gwin was a man of impressive personality . . . polished in manner and in speech, positive in his opinion . . ."<sup>10</sup> In action he was the Southern gentleman: refined, elegant, well-educated, self-assured, and poised. He made many friends and held them with bands of steel. Probably he was assisted in this by his faithfulness to his friends in rewarding them with political favors. He "had the talent,

courage, firmness and fidelity to friends to qualify . . . [him as a] leader."<sup>11</sup> Physically, Gwin must have been an impressive man.

Nature had lavished her bounties with unstinted hand upon Dr. Gwin, in the grandeur of his exterior, and in the magnificence of his person. [He was] . . . fully six foot two inches in stature, erect and stately, of herculean figure, perfect in proportions, and with a carriage and bearing commensurate . . . His massive head was covered . . . with a heavy growth of hair . . . worn in a manner to impart majesty of appearance; from beneath his strong brows shone forth great eyes of luminous gray . . . and the large nose, large and firm-set mouth, and the strongly-molded chin . . . made up a *tout ensemble* matchless in manhood's mature prime. Grandly as nature had wrought the external man, also in the attributes and faculties which distinguish the superior types of manhood had she endowed this favorite of her bounty.<sup>12</sup>

But more fundamental to an understanding of the man than these descriptions, would be an analysis of his basic beliefs and the influence they had on his actions. The factors which were dominant in determining Gwin's outlook were his desire for political power, his adherence to the discipline of the Democratic party, his conviction that what could not be achieved directly could be gained by compromise, his devotion to the interests of California, his love for the South, and his belief that the Union must be preserved.

That Gwin had a desire for political power and had the ability to use it is amply demonstrated in his activities in Mississippi, California and Washington. From his first day in San Francisco he bent every effort toward the senatorship and the political power which went with it. In Mississippi and California, but particularly in Washington, he was on intimate terms and was influential with men of every political color and complexion, gaining their support for his measures and often assembling strange bed-fellows to uphold his causes. Surely no stronger evidence of his overweening political ambition could be presented than his surrender of the patronage to Broderick in 1857. Even to the end of his life he was active in politics and a force in his party in California. No man was more strongly in the traditions of the Democratic party than was Gwin. One of his earliest lessons had been to love and revere Jackson and the party he represented, and he kept those early impressions. He acted consistently with the Democratic party and never bolted a regular nomination or voted against a decision of the party caucus.<sup>13</sup> In matters of national policy he followed the lead of the party and let it decide his vote.

At the same time he was a political strategist who was satisfied with half-a-loaf when he could not obtain the whole one. By this method, although he was forced to compromise on what he



really desired, he secured needed legislation for California for which he could not have received approval by other means. His burning desire to promote the interests of California led Gwin to concentrate most of his attention and efforts in the Senate on local legislation to the almost complete neglect of larger national issues, except as the local issues had national implications.

By far the most significant forces motivating Gwin's actions were his love of the South and his devotion to the Union, existing side by side. Even from the beginning of his career in California it was charged that these views came into conflict in the Constitutional Convention. It was contended that he did not actively support the prohibitions on slavery and that he favored a large area for the state so that it might be divided, with the southern half a slave state. However, it appears that he was opposed to slavery in the state and had no intention of trying to divide it. ". . . he [had] immigrated to California . . . for the express purpose of withdrawing himself and his posterity from that part of the country where slavery existed, believing . . . that the institution of slavery would be a curse to the white inhabitants where it prevailed."<sup>14</sup> An examination of the account of the Constitutional Convention shows that there is no evidence that Gwin took any part in encouraging the division of California or in establishing part as a slave state. There is every indication that he discouraged it.<sup>15</sup>

On the larger stage in Washington, Gwin frequently found himself in difficulty in the conflict of North vs. South. On several occasions this led to the accusation that he was of and for the South. "Until recent years, serious works [have] . . . charged Gwin with being pro-slavery and a Southerner with various plans for aiding that institution. It is recognized now that authoritative evidence fails to support the charge . . ."<sup>16</sup> Gwin's own words on the controversy over the admission of Kansas under the Lecompton Constitution demonstrated how, despite his personal convictions, party loyalty, not Southern sympathy, decided his vote. ". . . but it was well known in the Senate at the time that while Mr. Gwin did not choose to have an open issue with the administration on this question [Lecompton] and join with those democratic senators who went with Mr. Douglas, yet he dissented from the Democratic party led by Mr. Buchanan in the policy they had adopted in Kansas."<sup>17</sup>

In the same way he was accused of being a Southerner when he acted from political expediency, as in gaining support for the Pacific Railroad. He realized that because of Southern opposition he could never secure the railroad by the central route, which was what he and the majority of Californians wanted. So, in order to have a

railroad by some route, he was willing to compromise on the southern one. This action called down the wrath of his enemies and even that of his supporters as an indication of his Southern sympathies. However, it seems rather to indicate his desire for action, even though the goal had to be compromised.

When the break came between the two sections of the country, Gwin was placed in an almost impossible position. As a southern man with close family ties and property interests in the South, his sympathies were naturally with the Confederacy. On the other hand, he loved the Union which he had served as a Representative and Senator. It is not surprising that he advocated a policy of conciliation. He did not believe that the South was right in withdrawing from the Union. "His [Gwin's] views on the subject of secession were persistently misunderstood . . . He never was a secessionist. He was a Jackson Democrat, opposed to nullification in Calhoun's time, and secession at a later period."<sup>18</sup> In general the record of his utterances bears him out. However that may be, his background and close association with the South made the North distrust him, ended his usefulness to the Union government, and led to his eventual arrest and detention. Nevertheless, he could not give himself over completely to the South. "As a Unionist, a believer in the rights of states, a loyal American citizen with a strong heart pull toward the South, and with Northern and Southern lifelong friends now engaged in a fratricidal war, Gwin was veritably a man without a country."<sup>19</sup>

### III.

The issues which occupied most of Gwin's speaking were of a local nature, associated with the interests of Mississippi, California and the West. While he was concerned with the great national and sectional questions which agitated the country, still he did little speaking on them.<sup>20</sup> Along with the local issues were those of a purely personal and political nature in the campaigns in Mississippi and California, particularly in his fight with Broderick for control of the party.

"No man ever devoted himself more ardently to its [California's] interests."<sup>21</sup> Certainly his record in Congress bears this contention out. The major local measures which he advocated in the Senate were adjustment of land claims in California, development of a mining land code, erection of fortifications and public buildings, establishment of a mint in San Francisco, building and operation of a navy yard, survey of the Pacific coast, granting of subsidies for steamship lines to the Orient, settlement of the Indian

problem in California, operation of a regular mail service by land and water to the West, return of the Civil Fund collected before California became a state, erection of an overland telegraph and, lastly, construction of a railroad to California.<sup>22</sup> Many of these measures, as those for fortifications, the navy yard, the coast survey, the mail routes, the telegraph and the railroad, were national in interest. He advocated legislation of interest to the Pacific Coast, not only as a local policy, but also from the standpoint of expanding nationalism.

On the larger political issues Gwin was less expressive. In accord with the principle of expansion he advocated annexation of the Hawaiian Islands, expansion south into Mexico, permanent settlement of new lands and capture of world markets. From 1854 to 1861 the principle of the Constitution as a compact of sovereign and co-equal states guided his thinking so that he endorsed the Compromise of 1850 and the Kansas-Nebraska Act of 1854. He opposed nullification and secession and favored compromising the differences between the North and the South. In 1860 he strove for national harmony and said in the Senate, "There is nothing that can be proposed here, that can by any possibility tend to quiet the country, and restore the Union as it existed, that I will not sustain."<sup>23</sup> And his attempts at conciliation in 1861, though unsuccessful, carried out his doctrine.

#### IV.

"Young Gwin witnessed . . . in the courts, the . . . eloquence of great lawyers, but it inspired him with want of confidence in himself."<sup>24</sup> This fear of speaking was the reason he never practiced law. When he ran for the House from Mississippi in 1841, he ". . . was an untried debater, and, in fact, had never made a speech . . . he was timid as a woman before a popular audience. Then, for the first time, [he] presented himself as a speaker . . . and the vote he received will attest the impression he produced."<sup>25</sup> "Gwin canvassed the state in a series of debates during the course of which he developed from an inexperienced speaker to one of much force."<sup>26</sup> From these uncertain beginnings, "Mr. Gwin became . . . [an] impressive speaker, very prompt in reply."<sup>27</sup> The effect which his speaking made in the mass meetings at which he appeared when he first came to California was largely responsible for his early rise to political prominence. In the debates in the California Constitutional Convention 'No other man . . . approaches him in impressiveness and skill . . . [his speaking was] noteworthy, always seeming conciliatory, thoughtful, learned, and reasonable."<sup>28</sup> ". . . when



elected to Congress and to the Senate, he addressed those bodies without embarrassment and with great force and effect."<sup>29</sup> Though Broderick, his sworn enemy, "... ridiculed Gwin's long written speeches with which he read everyone out of the Senate,"<sup>30</sup> more often have those same speeches been described as "eloquent."<sup>31</sup> Undoubtedly, the truth lies somewhere between these two extremes of criticism as we shall see later.

In his stump speaking in California he acquitted himself ably in nine campaigns. Those speeches were characterized as "... forceful speeches that made his enemies quail."<sup>32</sup> While he may not have had all of the Southerner's "... fluency in eloquent harangue, his vigor in invective, his ostentatious courage . . . and his inscrutable union in his public discourse of sweet reasonableness with ferocious intolerance,"<sup>33</sup> yet he had sufficient of those qualities, coupled with clear common sense, concise statement of fact, and direct delivery to make him an effective and influential speaker.

For the most profitable analysis of Gwin's speaking it is useful to divide his career into the legislative speaking, especially in the Senate, and the campaign speaking, notably in the campaign of 1859.<sup>34</sup> Besides hundreds of references to Gwin's remarks, questions, answers and objections in the Senate, more than fifty speeches are included in the *Congressional Globe*, all but two in reference to California projects. Although there were speeches on all of the major measures which he advanced for the welfare of the state, an examination of two will indicate the chief features of his legislative speaking.

A speech delivered in the Senate on March 23, 1851, in an effort to secure appropriations for a Navy Yard in California is representative of his extempore legislative speaking.<sup>35</sup> The issues involved were control of the Pacific, support of Pacific coast shipping, cost of the yard, and provision for internal improvements entirely within one state. The audience was a divided Senate with a large minority interested, the major section neutral, and a small but active minority opposed on the grounds of cost and what already had been done for California. The speech (1) reviews the attempts to secure the yard; (2) demonstrates the need for the base to support trade; (3) shows how the base will secure the Pacific against England; (4) proves that the cost is not excessive; and (5) points out that California has now received her fair share for naval improvement. The introduction is a brief review of the state of the legislation; the conclusion, a summary of the chief arguments with emphasis on the control of the Pacific for the safety of commerce. While the speech has recognizable organization, the arguments are not care-

fully integrated. The lack of transition from argument to argument weakens the structure so that the relationship between parts of the argument and the cumulative effect of the reasons for action is missed.

The reasoning is deductive with, in each instance, a statement of the major premise, which is then lucidly developed through the use of supporting evidence. A mass of statistics as to the cost of the yard, the volume of shipping, the amount spent on Atlantic seaboard installations, and the sums which California has given to and received from the Union is the major form of support and is used efficiently. Aside from three or four uses of testimony and limited restatement, there is no other support. As a large portion of the speech is rebuttal, the arguments of the opponents of the bill are restated and counter arguments advanced. The reasoning is logical, easy to follow, and free from fallacy. There is comparatively little pathetic proof: an appeal to beware of England in her effort to dominate the seas and a veiled appeal to guard against the domination of the South. The infrequently used ethos centers around Gwin as the representative of a new state which has not been given her fair share of what she has contributed to the Union. Both pathetic and ethical proofs are secondary to the logical argument.

While the style of the speech cannot be considered "oral" in the contemporary sense, it is straightforward and easily understood. Although the sentence structure is frequently complex, yet it is never confusing. There is a directness which may seem dry, but not hackneyed. There are no allusions, figures of speech or wit and humor except for occasional sarcasm. The style is close to that of the lawyer's brief. When this speech is compared with others which were read from manuscript, it becomes apparent that it was delivered extempore. However, there must have been careful preparation of the statistics, which Gwin surely had in note form. General evidence on his legislative speaking suggests that it was given in an energetic, conversational manner — as the nature of the subject matter dictated; Gwin was the reporter, detailing the evidence for his case. The marshalling of the facts was influential in making up minds and changing opinions when one considers that there were both apathy and active opposition to the Navy Yard and that the measure was passed by a comfortable margin.

From the beginning of his term in the Senate Gwin was concerned with legislation to validate the land claims in California based on Spanish and Mexican grants and later claims of Americans who had immigrated into the territory before it became a state. Gwin's series of speeches on the settlement of the land claims,

typical of his formal Senate speaking, is undoubtedly his best legislative oratory. They were delivered on January 8, 1851; February 5, 1851; and August 3, 1852.<sup>36</sup> While the first two were on the same bill and the third on a separate measure, they may be considered as a unit. The issues involved were the protection of private property, the rights of the Spanish and Mexican grantees, the rights of the American settlers and the possible methods of settling the claims. The majority of the members of the Senate were not particularly concerned; a large minority were aware of the need and desired satisfactory legislation; and a small group, led by Senator Benton, was openly opposed to Gwin's plan.

The speeches reviewed (1) the attempts to have a bill passed, (2) the chaotic conditions in California without a settlement, (3) the history of the Spanish and Mexican claims, (4) the methods of settlement which should be adopted, and (5) how California would advance if the claims were settled. The introduction to each speech is a statement of the status of the legislation with a clear forecast of the plan of the entire argument. The conclusions, vivid appeals for action, have more style and polish than other sections. The fifth of February speech concludes with an appeal for passage of the bill.

Then California, the thirty-first star of the American constellation, now beaming upon the waters of the Pacific will shine with a lustre not eclipsed by any of her sister lights in the political firmament. Our State, rich in the precious metals, and with exhaustless resources in other respects, will be among the foremost in the march of civilization. The God of Nature has given her a geographical position which places her in an attitude to contend for the rich trade of the East. She overlooks the Polynesian islands and the Chinese and Indian empires. By the power of steam, she is brought in rapid intercourse with the rest of the Union and with the world. And even now the faces of the Tawny Asiatics are almost as familiar to our people as the Europeans are to the citizens of the Atlantic States. She will draw within her golden gates the treasures of the East; and, under the impulse of the spirit of enterprise peculiar to our race, human sagacity cannot foresee the altitude of her future greatness, nor the imagination of man predict the grandeur of her destiny.<sup>37</sup>

The conclusion of the August third speech is an impassioned pathetic plea for those Americans, Gwin's particular charges, who had settled on disputed lands:

Who is there with mercenary rancor enough to pursue such settlers, and denounce and stigmatize them in opprobrium as "squatters?" — a class of men whose triumphs are everywhere written upon the face of this continent — the men, bold, and adventurous, who fled from the tyranny of the old world, and at Jamestown,



Virginia, the Plymouth Rock of Massachusetts, and St. Marys, in Maryland, laid the foundations of the settlements which have spread over the broad bosom of this mighty Republic from the Atlantic to the Pacific, from the icy regions of the north to the tropics, before whom forests have disappeared, under whose hands cities have arisen, with whom the arts and sciences are in their highest development, by whom tyranny in every form, political, social, and religious, has been overthrown, the dignity, glory, and independence of man has been asserted and maintained, and the American republic advanced to the front rank of the nations of the earth!

This is the class of men whose interest I am proud to advocate; to whose cause every faculty I possess shall be devoted, and for the protection of a small portion of whom I invoke the sanction of the Senate to the measure I have presented.<sup>38</sup>

These examples are typical of the elaborate perorations found in Gwin's formal legislative speaking.

The speeches are thoughtfully organized with arguments linked into unified wholes. At the outset of each there is a forecast of the reasoning and clear transitions lead from section to section. At the same time, there are frequent summaries, which build in cumulative effect until all of the reasons are marshalled. The overall organization is simple and easily comprehended. The reasoning is deductive with a concise statement of the premise, which then is developed by carefully worked out chains of argument and evidence. The chief supporting material is reasoning which built on an historical examination of the settlement of similar claims, a review of Supreme Court decisions, an exploration of the treaties leading to the admission of California, a review of the Spanish and Mexican land systems, and a study of the law of nations. There are comparatively few figures of speech except in the perorations and but a limited use of statistics and illustrations. Gwin continually supports and summarizes his ideas by restatement. The argument is logical, detailed, distinct and basically free from fallacy.

Pathos is used skilfully with fear, pity, contempt, anger and fair play as the pathetic appeals. Fear is expressed over possible reactions if the claims are not settled; pity, displayed for the older claimants with their property in jeopardy and for the new settlers who cannot find unclaimed lands; contempt, shown for land speculators; anger, revealed for senators who cannot grasp the need for swift settlement; and fair play, desired for both the old and new settlers. These appeals, although made with some restraint, are pointed and telling. The ethos centers on Gwin as *the* representative of the people working to settle the land problems in the "American Way." He is able to identify himself with both the Spanish and Mexican claimants and with the "squatters" as their

friend and champion. The ethos is reasonably effective, but not one of the most convincing points in the argument.

The wording, while essentially direct and perspicuous, has occasional stylistic flourishes and turn of phrase; the more involved structure is evident in the pathetic and ethical argument; and the conclusions quoted are typical of this style. However, with the reasoning and evidence Gwin made his points succinctly, sparing words and going immediately to the central idea. Some of the statements of reason are blunt and almost schematic in wording. The style, occasionally elaborate, is fundamentally clear and meaningful.

Gwin testified that these speeches, along with others of the same type in the Senate, were written and read from manuscript.<sup>39</sup> This becomes evident, too, when their organization and style are compared with that of his extempore ones. The nature of the man and of his materials suggest that the delivery was direct and positive if somewhat pedestrian. However, these speeches have been described as "imposing"<sup>40</sup> and he as "... a clear, impressive and forcible debater."<sup>41</sup> "Upon [these speeches] . . . Mr. Gwin may safely rest his claims as an enlightened statesman."<sup>42</sup> While the third speech did not achieve Gwin's ends, the first two undoubtedly had influence. In them Gwin was trying to defeat Benton's plan for settling the claims and he "... won the victory over that great master . . ."<sup>43</sup> At the same time, he secured reasonably speedy passage for his own scheme in a Senate which was both apathetic and hostile. He is given credit through his speaking for the passage of his bill into law.

In the summer of 1859 Gwin returned from Washington to California to "stump" the state. As the leading "regular" Democrat, although he was not running for office, he felt it his duty to work for the "regular" candidates and to fight Broderick and the Anti-Lecomptonites. In a series of six speeches given in the outlying towns of northern California, Gwin "debated" with Broderick.<sup>44</sup> Crowds of from 500 to 1000 villagers, miners and farmers, friendly to Gwin and the Buchanan Democrats, gathered in the street to hear him speak. Gwin built his speeches around (1) Broderick's ungentlemanly conduct in the campaign; (2) Broderick's failure as a Senator; (3) the services of the "regular" party and, incidentally, of Gwin to the state; (4) the correctness of the official Democratic position on the extension of slavery; (5) a rebuttal of the charges of graft and fraud brought against him by Broderick; (6) a defense of his "deal" with Broderick in the election of 1857; and (7) the greatness of the Democratic party. All of these issues were men-

tioned in every speech, with strong emphasis in each instance on Broderick's conduct.<sup>45</sup>

The speeches are haphazardly organized. As Gwin said, ". . . it was only my purpose to make a few desultory remarks."<sup>46</sup> In every speech in a short, pointed introduction he refers to the town in which he is appearing, identifying himself with the audience. The conclusions, devoid of summary statement or, except in one instance, of peroration, are appeals for the audience to vote the "regular" ticket. The organization is loose and discursive. As there are seldom any transitions, with Gwin jumping from point to point, it is difficult to follow the thought from idea to idea. They are not planned discourse, but conversations on a wide range of topics.

While Gwin made clear statements of the premises which he sought to establish, he seldom felt it necessary to support them with reasoning or evidence. As he was speaking to audiences already convinced of his point of view, the speeches were to stimulate rather than to convince. In this situation there was less need for supporting materials for his statements. When he did develop a point, it was deductively with support by "reading from the record." Closely connected chains of reasoning are missing, and the evidence seldom is related back to the major premise.

As nearly all that Gwin said was in rebuttal to the charges brought by Broderick, whose speaking was of the sort that, "never had such a volume of vehement wrath and terrible abuse poured from the mouth of a public man, directed at another,"<sup>47</sup> Gwin made extensive use of pathetic and ethical appeals. He was incensed by the accusations Broderick was making against him and characterized Broderick as a cheat, a dishonest man, a vulgarian, a renegade, one incapable of telling the truth, a traitor, a failure, not a gentleman, and a turncoat. The pathetic appeals are at first handled with restraint; Gwin perhaps was trying to be the "gentleman." In the later speeches, as he became more and more angry, he became as vehement and vindictive as Broderick. The ethical appeal is founded on Gwin as a *real* representative of the people and of the only legitimate Democratic party; he identified himself with the party leaders, particularly Jackson. He stated that the charges of graft and self-interest were the efforts of disappointed office seekers to smear him and that he had always tried to be honest and upright, but that his motives had been misjudged. The ethical appeals are skilfully handled and, joined with the pathos, were telling on the partisan audiences.

Although the basic statements of idea are clear, because of the conversational quality of the speaking and its obvious impromptu



nature, the style is loose and rambling. There is little suggestion of stylistic polish in contrast to the formal Senate speaking. Figurative language is not used and the only humor is the sarcasm directed against Broderick. Gwin is firing what he hopes are fatal shots at his enemies, and he has neither time nor inclination for a polished style of address. There evidently was little previous preparation for these impromptu speeches. Perhaps, as Gwin read Broderick's speech of the day before or it was reported to him, he thought through the points which he wished to stress; but there is no evidence of plan, organized reasoning or collected support. However, none of the major issues were new to him as he had spoken on all of them in the Senate. On the "stump" Gwin was "... reasonably skilful in the use of those arts by which large assemblages are entertained and aroused to action."<sup>48</sup> He did not have the energy and animation of certain other speakers, but he did have conversational directness of a quiet type, coupled with dry bluntness. Because of the attack and defense nature of the speaking there was more energy and emotional expression than previously.

As the Buchanan Democrats were safely in the majority, it is difficult to assess the influence of Gwin's speaking on the voter. It did help to solidify and increase the strength of the "regular" party and make Broderick's task an impossible one. The problem of who won the debates must remain a moot question. In any case, the speeches added to Gwin's prestige and confirmed his undisputed party leadership.

## V.

William M. Gwin was influential through his speaking both with his colleagues in the Senate and with his constituents in California, although undoubtedly his strongest influence was exerted through his backstage manipulations and party control. He started in Mississippi as a man who had never made a speech, and developed into a mature and reasonably effective speaker, who used his talents widely in varying situations. Guided by his political ambitions which allowed for compromise, by his unswerving loyalty to the Democratic party, by his natural sympathy for the South, by his fidelity to the Union, and by his all consuming interest in California, Gwin worked throughout his political career. Local measures for the benefit of his adopted state occupied most of his speaking, and yet he took a stand for economic and political expansion, for states rights, against nullification and secession and for conciliation. Although he was not a great orator, Gwin deserves study, not only from the limited view of him as California's cham-



pion in Washington, but also in the broader sense as an influential American, "one of the middlemen," caught in the swelling tide of disunion.

If his speeches seem "staid and formal" by comparison with other more flamboyant speakers of the day,<sup>49</sup> they have also a personal quality which makes them communicative. The organization of the written ones is clear-cut and concise; it is less methodical in the extempore; while in the impromptu ones it is discursive and rambling. The statement of the major arguments is always succinct, with the reasoning almost exclusively deductive. The logical development and extensive use of effective support are the strongest points in the written and extempore speeches. Pathetic appeals appear infrequently except in the "debates" where, vindictive and even abusive, they are used often. Occasional ethical appeal is focused on Gwin as the representative of the people and of *the* party. Except for the stylistic elaboration in the appeals and the perorations of the written speeches, the style is plain. His delivery was characterized by a dry, blunt, conversational directness; comparatively suave and reserved in the Senate, it was more animated and expressive on the "stump." Basically, it secured contact for him with his listeners.

With his influence in the formation of the state government and on national legislation for California to 1861, Gwin literally molded the state to his own imagining; cajoling, compromising, and forcing, he laid the groundwork for its future development. Although, ". . . the student of this early period has occasion for feeling that California's history during the fifties might have been different if Gwin had not been sent to Washington,"<sup>50</sup> still the difference hardly could have been to California's disadvantage. His political career ". . . had been eminently useful, and brilliant in great results."<sup>51</sup> "The services of Doctor Gwin . . . should be gratefully remembered by the citizens of [California]."<sup>52</sup>

#### NOTES

\* This paper is an attempt to evaluate Gwin as a speaker and the influence which he had through his speaking on events in California.

1. "Memoirs of Hon. William M. Gwin," ed. W. H. Ellison, *California Historical Society Quarterly*, XIX 1, (1940), 3.

2. *Ibid.*, 2, 270.

3. See: Hargis, Donald E., "Pre-Convention Speaking, California: 1849," *Western Speech*, XVIII, 3 (May 1954), 167-175 for an analysis of Gwin's speaking.

4. McPherson, H. M., "William McKendree Gwin, Expansionist," unpublished Ph.D. thesis (U. of California, 1941), p. 120.

5. "Memoirs," *op. cit.*, 6.

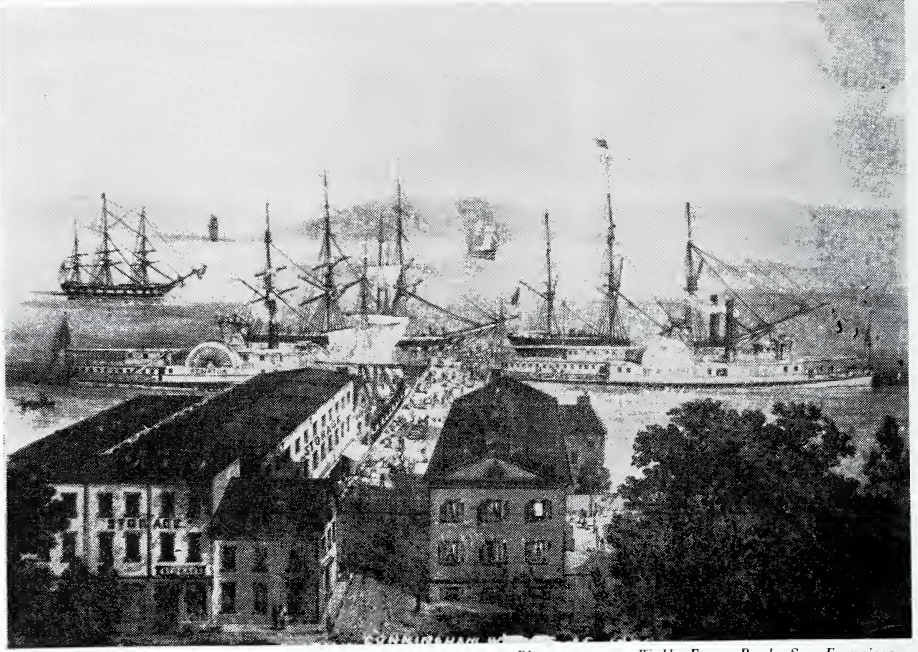
6. O'Meara, J., *Broderick and Gwin* (Los Angeles, 1932) and Lynch, J., *A Senator of the Fifties* (San Francisco, 1911) have detailed accounts of the "fight" between Gwin and Broderick.

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

7. Cf. O'Meara, *op. cit.*, p. 193; Lynch, *op. cit.*, p. 155; Bancroft, H. H., *Works*, XXIII, "History of California," VI (San Francisco, 1888), p. 108; Hittell, J. S., *A History of the City of San Francisco* (San Francisco, 1878), pp. 297-8.
8. Cf. McPherson, *op. cit.*, p. 275 and Coleman, E. J., "Senator Gwin's Plan for the Colonization of Sonora," *The Overland Monthly*, 2nd Ser., XVII, 102 (1891), 606.
9. McPherson, *op. cit.*, p. 11.
10. Tinkham, G. H., *California Men and Events* (Stockton, 1915), p. 83.
11. Claiborne, J. F. H., *Mississippi, as a Province, Territory and State* (Jackson, Miss., 1880, p. 429).
12. O'Meara, *op. cit.*, pp. 33-34.
13. "Speech by W. M. Gwin," *The Sacramento Daily Union*, July 15, 1859.
14. "Memoirs," *op. cit.*, 8; cf. Goodwin, C., *The Establishment of State Government in California 1846-1850* (New York, 1914), p. 7; Ellison, W. H., *A Self-governing Dominion: California, 1849-1860* (Berkeley, 1950), p. 35.
15. Browne, J. R., *The Debates in the Convention of California* (Washington, D.C., 1850), *passim*.
16. "Memoirs," *op. cit.*, 25.
17. *Ibid.*, 276.
18. *Ibid.*, 360.
19. Ellison, *op. cit.*, p. 309.
20. "Speech by W. M. Gwin," *The Sacramento Daily Union*, July 29, 1859.
21. Browne, J. R., "A Quarter of a Century," *Overland Monthly*, 1st Ser., XV, 4 (1875), 348.
22. *The Congressional Globe* (Washington, D.C.), 1850-1861.
23. *The Congressional Globe*, XXVIII (1861), 1404.
24. Claiborne, *op. cit.*, p. 428.
25. *Ibid.*, pp. 433-34.
26. McPherson, *op. cit.*, p. 26; cf. *Columbus* (Mississippi) *Democrat*, Aug. 7, 1841 and *Vicksburg* (Mississippi) *Whig*, Oct. 14, 1841.
27. Claiborne, *op. cit.*, p. 434.
28. Royce, J., *California* (New York, 1848), p. 208.
29. Claiborne, *op. cit.*, p. 434.
30. Bancroft, *op. cit.*, 728.
31. Claiborne, *op. cit.*, p. 446; Ellison, J., "California and the Nation 1850-1869," *University of California Publications in History*, XVI (Berkeley, 1927), Tinkham, *op. cit.*, p. 83.
32. *San Francisco Herald*, Nov. 6, 1860.
33. Royce, *op. cit.*, p. 181.
34. A separate study might well be made of Gwin's speaking in the California Constitutional Convention of 1849.
35. *The Congressional Globe*, XXIV, Part I (1862), 828-32.
36. *Ibid.*, XXIII, Appendix (1851), 54-61; 129-35; and XXIV, Part I (1853), 2033-37.
37. *Ibid.*, XXIII, Appendix, 135.
38. *Ibid.*, XXIV, 2037.
39. "Speech by W. M. Gwin," *The Sacramento Daily Union*, Aug. 1, 1859.
40. See note 31 and Royce, *op. cit.*, p. 207.
41. Claiborne, *op. cit.*, p. 434.
42. *Ibid.*, p. 446.
43. *Ibid.*
44. *The Sacramento Daily Union*, July 15, 18, 29 and August 1, 2, 15, 1859. The "debates" were long-range as Gwin never met Broderick face-to-face. Broderick's speeches are reported in *The Sacramento Daily Union*, July 11, 14, 16, 19, 25 and August 1, 3, 4, 6, 10, 18, 26, 1859. See: Hargis, Donald E., "D. C. Broderick: Pioneer Senator," *Speech Monographs*, XVII, 2 (1950), 149-60 for an analysis of Broderick's speaking.
45. See: Hargis, Donald E., "The Issues in the Broderick-Gwin Debates of 1859," *California Historical Society Quarterly*, XXXII, 4.
46. "Speech by W. M. Gwin," *The Sacramento Daily Union*, Aug. 15, 1859.
47. O'Meara, *op. cit.*, p. 213.
48. Eldredge, Z. S., *History of California* (New York, 1915), p. 484.
49. Lomas, C. W., "Southern Orators in California Before 1861," *The Southern Speech Journal*, XV, 1 (1949), 37.
50. Goodwin, *op. cit.*, p. 350.
51. Claiborne, *op. cit.*, p. 442.
52. Browne, "Quarter of a Century," *op. cit.*, 348.







— Photo courtesy Wells Fargo Bank, San Francisco

## SAN FRANCISCO HARBOR

*This rare photograph shows the Steamers Senator and New World  
at a wharf on San Francisco's famed Embarcadero.*

# *The Senator . . .* Favorite Coastwise Steamer

By Maymie R. Krythe



WHILE STAGE COACHES RAN OVER ROUGH TRAILS, between Northern and Southern California after the state was admitted to the Union in 1850, many travelers preferred to use the coastwise steamers between these points.

On February 25, 1849, the steamer *California*, of the Pacific Mail Line, had reached San Francisco. By the end of that year, at least fifty vessels were operating at the bay and on inland waters, transporting Gold Rush adventurers to the diggings. Some of the ships had been built locally, while others were brought in sections from the East, and assembled here. However, the *Senator* and the *New World* came round the Horn, under their own power.

Such vessels stopped at way stations, like San Luis Obispo and Santa Barbara. Since there were no landing docks, at first, passengers had to be taken ashore in small boats. When these capsized — as often happened — unlucky travelers fell into the water, and this mishap caused much merriment for those waiting on the shore.

At San Pedro Bay, ships anchored out at Deadman's Island; then lighters and barges conveyed travelers and freight to the mainland. At San Pedro Tomlinson's stages loaded passengers for Los Angeles, while those who had gone ashore at Wilmington, rode to the pueblo, about twenty miles to the north, in the Banning coaches. These rival companies often staged exciting races over the rough road to the City of the Angels.

For more than three decades the most popular and beloved steamer along the Pacific Coast was the 500-ton *Senator*, a side-wheeler, with a 450 H.P. engine. She was 219 feet long, with a 30-foot beam, and a 12-foot hold. Built in the 1840's, on the Atlantic Coast, she had run between Boston and St. John, also on the Fall River Line, and was used as a packet on Long Island Sound.

During the Gold Rush, shipping was badly needed on the Northern California Rivers to carry gold seekers to the mines. Lafayette Maynard (formerly a lieutenant in the United States Navy) had carefully examined a survey of Sacramento (made by Wilkes). He came to the conclusion that deep-sea steamers of from 600-800

tons could navigate, successfully, the Sacramento River from San Francisco to the town of Sacramento. Maynard also saw the money-making possibilities of such a project.

He went East in 1849, and succeeded in persuading a syndicate, composed of Charles Minturn and others, to furnish the capital for the venture. Maynard was included in the company. At once the *Senator*, a staunch craft, was bought, completely overhauled, refitted and made stronger for her long perilous journey around the Horn, a trip which was to prove one of the most eventful in early steamship annals. The skipper on this voyage was United States Navy Lieutenant Richard Bache, her First Officer, Lieutenant Benham, U.S.N.

She carried no freight, but was well stocked with provisions and coal; the latter completely filled her hold and main deck rooms. One authority states the *Senator* took on six passengers — at rates of \$600 for cabin and \$300 for steerage — but another source says the only passenger was General John E. Addison.

The *Senator* left New York on March 10 (or 12), 1849, and had a good trip as far as the Equator. There, running out of coal, she sailed up the Amazon (90 miles wide at that point) and reached Pará, nearly a hundred miles inland. Here she stayed for nine days, replenishing her fuel supplies, and was visited by thousands of natives, from the town and province, who had never seen a steamer before.

At Rio de Janeiro the *Senator* remained 10 days and took on more coal. Here an author, named Robert T. Warren, went aboard. Reaching the mouth of the La Plata River, she met such stormy weather that she almost foundered, and as a result, had to put in at the Island of St. Catherine. There the ship stayed for seven weeks for repairs, leaving on June 3.

The *Senator* made a fresh start; but in making her way through the Straits of Magellan, her coal was all used; and it was impossible to obtain any. The weather was very cold and there was three feet of snow on the ground. The crew went ashore and used the ten axes they had on the ship to cut wood. It took them five days to get enough to run the *Senator* for one day. After being detained for several weeks, the steamer slowly made her way up the archipelago to Chonos, and reached the Island of Chiloe. Luckily enough fuel was taken on to run her to Valparaiso in July.

After re-coaling, the *Senator* made it to Callao, Peru, and a few days later reached Panama on September 14, 1849. Charles Minturn was on board as agent for the syndicate; but the ship stayed in Panama for a few weeks, waiting for advice from the rest



### *The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

of the owners. Hundreds of eager gold hunters were there, hoping for transportation to the California gold fields.

When the *Senator* left the Isthmus, she was carrying 520 persons, who had paid \$500 apiece for cabin space, or \$200 for steerage. After a one-day stop at Acapulco, Mexico, she arrived at San Francisco, October 27, 1849, after an exciting and gruelling voyage of almost eight months.

In his book, *Seventy-Five Years in California*, William Heath Davis tells that he, W. D. M. Howard, Bezar Simmons and Sam Brannan, the originator of the project, went on board the *Senator* soon after she landed. Brannan, as spokesman, offered the owners \$250,000 in gold at \$16 per ounce for the steamer. This was refused, and the men were told the *Senator* was absolutely not for sale; for they realized her money-making capability.

Soon the steamer was put on the run between San Francisco and the city of Sacramento. This was an important event in river transportation. The ship, which was to become "the favorite daylight steamer" made her first river trip on November 5, 1849, commanded by Skipper John Van Pelt, who had taken the first steamer, the *Sacramento*, up this same river.

Because of her size, speed and comfort, the *Senator* surpassed the other river boats. She usually made the run in ten hours, traveling it three times per week. In the spring of 1853, she made her record trip, six hours and 25 minutes. The vessel was considered "by far the most beautiful, most commodious, most comfortable and, at the same time, the most successful steamboat that ever ran on the Sacramento." Her officers, too, were highly commended for their efficiency and were said to be "gallant and obliging." Even though she had worthy rivals, the *Senator* was termed "the finest, fastest and safest" steamer on this stream.

During the winter of 1849-50 the noted traveler and author, Bayard Taylor, made the trip from Sacramento to the City by the Golden Gate; and in his book *Eldorado*, he has given us an excellent, detailed account of this journey.

Taylor, a reporter on Horace Greeley's New York *Tribune*, was sent by the latter to cover the Gold Rush in California. He spent eight months on this jaunt, traveling through California, then to Mazatlan, Mexico, crossed to Vera Cruz, next shipped to Mobile, and finally returned to New York.

Bayard Taylor relates that he left Sacramento on the *Senator*, before dawn, on a clear windy day. One minute before sailing, her bell sounded; and they were off. He walked around, found the decks filled with customers, and met again several persons he had

known before on the Atlantic and Pacific Coasts. He was impressed by the *Senator* and declared: "After my recent barbaric life, her long upper saloon seemed splendid enough for a palace."

After passing the town of Sutter, the bell sounded for breakfast. Taylor had bought a ticket for \$2; and at once joined the eager crowd going down the cabin stairs. "The long tables were set below in the same style as at home; the fare was abundant and well prepared," he tells us.

As the *Senator* went down the Sacramento, she passed through many twists and turns. In the distance Taylor could see Mt. Diablo, and the snow-covered tops of the Sierras. Along the river banks were rude log houses, or tents, of settlers; and in some places trees had been cleared away and there were small plots of vegetables.

Often navigation was difficult for the *Senator*; for, when trying to negotiate some of the bends, her bow would run into the trees; and in backing, the stern often hit the other bank. Small boats had to run under limbs of trees, and closely hug the bank as the *Senator* went by. When they passed the "city" of Montezuma ("a single house on a headland projecting into Suisun Bay") Bayard Taylor says the bay was "dancing in a fresh northern breeze" as they sailed toward Benicia.

This town, with its frame houses and a church with a white spire, seemed quite different from busy Sacramento. Since there had been several weeks of rain, the countryside was green and looked very beautiful. As the *Senator* neared the strait, that opened from San Pablo Bay into the Bay of San Francisco, it was sunset, and Taylor wrote:

I have seen the dazzling sunsets of the Mediterranean flush the beauty of its shores, and the mellow skies which Claude used to contemplate from the Pincian Hill; but, lovely as they are in my memory, they seem cold and pale, when I think of the splendor of such a scene in the Bay of San Francisco.

The reporter also described his arrival in the city, with its busy waterfront, where many ships from all over the world docked. He looked at the "triple crown of hills behind, clearly marked against the sky;" he noted the "glimmerings of tents and white buildings" and heard "the sounds of active life" in San Francisco, during those busy Gold Rush days; and so ended his journey on the *Senator*.

In 1852-53, this boat was completely repaired and re-fitted. It boasted a fine barber shop, some handsome "bridal chambers," the "Ladies' Saloon," with its elegant carpets and furniture, and large "airy staterooms."

### *The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

At first the fare for the trip from San Francisco to Sacramento was \$30 (later reduced to \$25). Meals were \$2 each; and a state-room cost \$10. Freight was carried, at prices ranging from \$40 to \$50 per ton.

It is said that the *Senator* "made more gold than she could carry;" also that she had transported enough of this metal from Sacramento to San Francisco to sink herself two or three times. On one run from Sacramento, for instance, she conveyed 520 persons, over half of whom were bound for the Atlantic Coast. Usually she had about 300 travelers and 200 to 300 tons of freight on each run. One source stated: ". . . the *Senator* made more money for her owners than any other vessel, big or little that ever floated." Another declared: "During the first year on her run, her profits exceeded \$60,000 per month, and ever since she has been a very profitable boat for her owners." During her first five years on the West Coast, she earned more than \$1,500,000.

Soon much rivalry sprang up between the different boats; there was "cutthroat" competition. And the various companies had "runners," who before departures used to carry on a "warfare of words" and "often of fists" in regard to the merits of their respective craft. The contest between the *Senator* and *McKim* was especially keen. The latter was called a "junk," a "scow" or a "dog-power propeller," while the *Senator* was praised for its "unsurpassed accommodations, unusual celerity and undoubted safety."

Horace Bell, in his *Reminiscences of a Ranger*, describes the actions of the runners in Sacramento, and tells that "Old Joe Grant of sainted memory" would go "roaring along . . . Who wants to go to 'Frisco? 'Ere's a ticket on the *Senator*! Don't go on the *McKim*; if you do, you'll get drowned! She'll be sure to sink before she gets there. Buy your tickets for the *Senator*!"

At the wharf in Sacramento there was always a crowd of loungers when the steamers left. There was betting on the runs, too. The *Senator* was the fastest, but the *Confidence* was really better adapted to river use, and could lead the former "in angles and turns." On November 12, 1851, the *Alta California* stated: "It is hoped that the spirit of rivalry between these two will not endanger the lives of the passengers."

On one occasion, when the *Senator* and *McKim* were both trying to see who could make the dock first, the two vessels collided near Benicia. The Second officer of the *McKim* jumped over on the *Senator*, and attacked the officers in the wheelhouse. He didn't allow himself to be "pacified" until after the *McKim* got in first.

The *Senator* carried many miners and sometimes families with



children. One man, who was traveling with his wife and baby, from San Francisco, told that the latter two were the centers of attention. Because of their presence, the gold hunters stopped their swearing, showed the wife much respect, and paid attention to the baby. Several spoke of the children they had left at their homes across the continent.

Early in the 1850's the *Senator* sprang a leak at San Francisco, and was sinking fast. Two tugs and several fire engines tried unsuccessfully to pump the water out. The steamer sank at the dock; but not long afterwards was raised and re-conditioned. At that time she was connected with the People's Line, and commanded by A. J. Averill. "Having received her new boilers, been thoroughly refitted, will resume her place on the Sacramento route . . . her cabins are unsurpassed in finish and elegance."

After a few years of river service, the *Senator* was transferred to the coastwise trade. For she had been actually constructed for ocean use, and was of too deep draught for rivers. On two occasions, in running through the slough, her paddle wheels were injured. Also as the coastal service was poor, with infrequent and uncertain runs, the *Senator* was needed for the trip between the northern and southern sections of the state.

The first steamer in such use had been an old side-wheeler, the *Gold Hunter*, which began operating in 1849 between San Francisco, and Mazatlan, Mexico, with stops including San Pedro. Also, the *Goliah* was put in service, making two round trips each month, carrying passengers, freight and mail. Other early steamships were the *Seabird* and the *Southerner*.

When, in October, 1855, the *Senator* left the Sacramento, and sailed from San Francisco on her first successful southward run, she began a notable shipping career; and coastal service was much improved. Previously she had been repaired at Mare Island and masts and sails added, in case they should ever be needed. At this time the *Senator* was owned and operated by the California Steam Navigation Company. Her schedule included two round trips per month (leaving San Francisco on the 5th and 20th) although the traveling public wanted at least three sailings monthly. The *Los Angeles Star* proudly reported, on October 13, 1855, that the *Senator*, commanded by Captain Burns, had just arrived from San Francisco in 36 hours — a record run.

When the steamer arrived at San Pedro Bay, she anchored out at Deadman's Island. It was dangerous to go nearer the coast since violent storms often swept over the then open roadstead. Most of the little steamers and barges that carried passengers and freight

### *The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

ashore here belonged to Phineas Banning. This energetic young man had reached San Pedro in 1851 from the East, and soon was engaged in the forwarding and commission business. His stages carried travelers not only to Los Angeles but to several other points; and his great freight wagons went as far as Salt Lake City. He was really the "Transportation King" of his time and region.

At first Banning carried on his business at the beach below the bluff where the city of San Pedro is now located. But in 1848 he founded the town of Wilmington (named for his birthplace in Delaware) on the inner slough (six miles away), where small ships could get over the sandbar in the channel and unload at his dock. From his first arrival in California, he had a dream of a safe harbor, but that would entail years of planning and struggles before large vessels could use Wilmington as a port.

Because San Pedro was so isolated from the world, whenever a ship was arriving or departing, everyone shared in the excitement of "Steamer Day," in Los Angeles. This was described by the *Star* of March 21, 1857:

The hurry and bustle of the day, the running to and fro, galloping in hot haste, the loading and departure of the long line of monster wagons, with their 10 and 12 mule teams, the coursing of gaudy stages, the driving fast and furious of the numerous expert whips, the rush of the Post and Express offices, and the eager pleadings for 'one moment longer' — in short, the thousand and one circumstances which attend the hasty dispatch of all business matters. Then following the meeting and treating and parting of friends, the jingling of glasses, and the 'pop' of champagne when the cry of 'All Aboard!' stops the reveling; then comes a rush for seats, crack goes the whip, off go the horses amid adieus and waving of hats and hands. Away dash the stages, leaving us for two more weeks to tranquillity, and repose; after while the next arrival is alluded to — talked of — looked for, and finally in her own time she is at hand; when the same scenes are re-enacted, and the same bustle and hurry, the same crushing and crowding, and so we go all the year around — and so it is with us the arrival and departure of the steamer are the great events of our business lives.

Those reporters surely could write in flowery style in the 1850's; and the *Star*, a week later, March 28, 1857, again gives a fine word picture of the enjoyment the Southern Californians took in the steamer, *Senator*, which played, for several decades, a most important role in their lives:

The Steamer *Senator* arrived at San Pedro on Sunday morning, and the passengers came up to town in the afternoon. This was unexpected, as no arrival was looked for till the next day. So much for the super sailing qualities of this fine ship over her predecessor. The *Senator*, we believe, will continue on this station. Captain

Seeley is a popular commander, the officers, polite and attentive, and the accommodations of the ship not to be surpassed.

On Wednesday we had the pleasure of riding down to the beach with Phineas Banning, in one of Banning and Wilson's stages, that connect with the steamer at San Pedro. The ride down was very agreeable, the plains at this season presenting a pleasing prospect. The pasture is good, although the grass is short, and the hopes of a hay crop not flattering . . . Numerous herds of cattle were to be seen along the plains, enjoying the luxuriant pasturage. Shortly after arriving in San Pedro, the company were entertained by Judge Banning at dinner, which was served in excellent style and consisted of the luxuries of the season.

The company comprised Colonel Thomas T. Fauntleroy, commanding the Pacific Division; Colonel Soward and Lady; Mayor Lee; Captain Jones; Lts. Saunders, and Allston, Captain Seeley, Steamer, *Senator*; Captain Stevens, Collector of the Port; Judge Hartley of Yolo County; also a number of merchants, and other gentlemen of this city, on the way to San Francisco.

After dinner the party were rowed out to the Steamer, *Senator*, in one of the large boats, when we had the opportunity of inspecting the accommodations of this elegant craft. Her cabins are large and handsomely furnished, and the passengers were pleased with their accommodations. About 9 o'clock the steamer put out to sea when the shore company returned to San Pedro in their boat. We spent the evening very pleasantly at the Fort, in the company of our kind host and his friends, and next morning returned with him to town.

Often the Angelenos traveled on the *Senator* to San Diego, for which they paid \$10 — plus \$1 for a carriage to take them from the wharf to Old Town. This made a pleasant jaunt for them and a chance to spend some hours on the *Senator*. In 1858 the clipper, the *Laura Bevan* had been lost at sea; and an artist, Thomas Ayres (under contract to Harper and Brothers) with his portfolio of drawings, was one of the victims. The passengers on one trip of the *Senator* saw wreckage of the sailing ship.

In January of this same year, 1858, Southern Californians, who were appreciative of Captain Seeley and the good services he gave their region, planned a ball in his honor. Not long before this, he had asked several citizens to make the round trip to San Diego as his guests. They were delighted with the experience, drank his health and, as usual in those days, passed resolutions thanking their host.

In return, they asked the Captain and some of his officers to a dance in Los Angeles, to meet "the fair women and maidens" of the pueblo. As the party from the *Senator* was nearing the town, a delegation of prominent Angelenos met them; and after a formal exchange of greetings, went to Los Angeles together.

That evening the Grand Ball was "characterized by an exuber-



*The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

ant flow of spirits and kindly feelings." It created much excitement in the community and was successfully carried out under the able direction of Sol Lazard. "The ladies were brilliant and amiable as they always are, when they please to be," the *Star* reported. This enjoyable event, showing Los Angeles hospitality and their kindly feelings toward the gallant skipper of the *Senator*, was long remembered.

The *Star*, again, on April 10, 1858, reported this ship's arrival:

The Steamer, *Senator*, Captain Seeley, arrived at the port of San Pedro, on Monday morning, having accomplished an unusually quick and pleasant passage. Over 100 passengers were on board, who speak in the highest terms of the courtesy and attention of Captain Seeley and his officers. Having had the pleasure of being of the party, we can add our testimony to the untiring care of each to the duties of his position and the strict superintendence preserved by Captain Seeley.

The steamer has been thoroughly repaired of late and is one of the most comfortable and safe vessels on our waters. The table is abundantly supplied with good things of life, and is under the charge of a skillful steward, assisted by a numerous staff of attentive waiters.

Captain Gorman is First Officer. He is proverbial in his intimate knowledge of the coast and his correct seamanship. The office is under charge of A. O. Spencer who discharged the duties of purser in a manner to give entire satisfaction to all with whom he is brought in contact . . .

Again in June, 1859, a Grand Ball was staged for Captain Seeley, at the home of Don Manuel Garfias on Main Street. The rooms on the lower floor were placed at the disposal of guests by Mayor W. H. Harvey. That evening the place was thronged "with the fashion and beauty of the day." Dancing, which began at 9 p.m. continued till dawn, only interrupted, at midnight, for an elegant supper. This was served in the adjoining apartment by Mr. Marchesseault of the Montgomery House Restaurant; and the menu included all the delicacies of the season.

An excellent band discoursed eloquent music; and the evening passed off in the most happy and agreeable manner. Nothing was wanting that could contribute to the pleasure of the worthy guests, who fully appreciated the kind intentions of his entertainers . . .

During 1859 the *Senator* made three trips per month, and had reduced the fare to \$25 (which most persons considered still too high) as from time to time some one would put on a competing vessel. The *Senator* usually stopped at Santa Barbara, San Pedro and San Luis Obispo on her runs.

At San Pedro Bay, Banning and Tomlinson were strong rivals

for the lightering and staging businesses. Once this year, when three Tomlinson patrons were making their way out to board the *Senator*, their old boat leaked and began to sink. At once a Banning lighter rescued them and deposited them safely aboard the steamer for San Francisco.

In May, a *Star* reporter who had made the trip south on the steamer, wrote as follows:

The *Senator*, Captain T. W. Seeley, arrived here on Tuesday last from San Francisco. She was detained until 3 o'clock in the afternoon of the day of sailing for the purpose of bringing the Atlantic mails, which arrived on Sunday morning; contrary to expectations, she had to stop at San Luis Obispo; she encountered strong head winds the whole trip, but nevertheless made her usual good time.

We had an opportunity of observing the management of affairs on board the *Senator* and cordially endorse the public sentiment regarding the capability of Captain Seeley, as well as the politeness and attention which was exhibited alike to all on board; also the skill and seamanship of Captain Gorman, first officer, and the efficiency and courtesy of the gentlemanly Purser, A. Spencer, Esq. The very best feeling evidently prevails among all employed aboard the ship, the result, no doubt, of the firm, but kind and general manners of the popular and very able commander.

However, in spite of such flowery praise, the passengers for the *Senator* were sometimes subjected to delays in sailing. For the Captain was an inveterate poker player, then "considered the gentleman's game of chance." After he had brought the *Senator* safely to San Pedro Bay, from the north, Captain Seeley would hurry up in a Banning stagecoach to meet his pals at the popular Bella Union Hotel on Main Street. Meantime, he left the vessel in command of First Mate Butters, who completed the voyage to San Diego and return, in 48 hours. If the skipper and his companions at the Bella Union were in an especially interesting game, they kept on playing — result, the *Senator* was sometimes delayed as much as 24 hours.

In spite of these inconveniences, the *Senator* still carried many passengers, for even though, during the summer, the stages ran three times a week between Northern and Southern California, most businessmen preferred to go on the *Senator*. During 1859 Phineas Banning often traveled on this steamer; and John Temple and his wife (owner of the great Los Cerritos Rancho, on part of which Long Beach is built) came down from San Francisco making the last part of a long journey which had taken them to Europe. The Reverend Mr. Boardman, and his wife, traveled by this steamer to take up his duties as the Presbyterian minister in Los Angeles. On December 17, 1859, the Honorable John G. Downey, with his

wife and daughter, left on the *Senator* to become the Lieutenant Governor.

Genial Captain Seeley's name often appeared in the *Los Angeles Star*, such as this item of October 15, 1859:

The ladies desire us to express their gratification in the reception of the new melodeon designed to aid in Protestant worship at School House No. 2. They request us to thank the contributors generally for their cheerful liberality, and Captain Seeley of the *Senator*, especially, who besides giving largely, purchased the instrument for them and brought it from San Francisco free of charge; also to Mr. Banning who gave liberally and brought it from San Pedro without charge. The melodeon is one of the best and will be doubly prized because so generously paid for and bought.

One of the most interesting visitors to California, during 1859, was Richard Henry Dana, Jr., who had come to the West Coast in 1835, and had described his experiences in gathering hides, in his classic *Two Years Before the Mast*. This time he entered the Golden Gate in the "superb steamship *Golden State*," next going down to San Pedro on the *Senator*.

There he did some exploring, found the hide trade much changed; there were no longer ships dealing just in hides and tallow, but these products were carried with other cargo. Dana could hardly recognize the landing at San Pedro, for there was a new one at the head of the creek. He had a man land him at the old place. Then Dana made his way up the bluff, and found two buildings instead of the old one he had known — the Mission hide house. At the new landing place Dana saw two or three storehouses, and other buildings, and a stage coach station from which passengers set out for Los Angeles.

A frequent traveler on the *Senator*, during the 1860's was Judge Benjamin Hayes, who had come from Missouri to Los Angeles in 1850. He was elected as Judge, and held court in several Southern California places, including Los Angeles, San Bernardino and San Diego. Often he traveled to and from the last named place on the *Senator*.

In his interesting diary, *Pioneer Notes*, Judge Hayes describes such a trip, taken in January, 1860. Reaching Wilmington by stage, he was welcomed by Phineas Banning and entertained at dinner at his home. Then the Judge went out in a small boat to the *Senator*.

On board he was delighted to meet his friends, Captain Seeley, First Mate Gorman, and some San Diego acquaintances. Also on the steamer he found J. Ross Browne, a well known writer and artist. (In 1849, he acted as stenographer at the State Constitution



Convention at Colton Hall in Monterey). At this time Browne was an agent of the U. S. Treasury Department, and also interested in the welfare of the California Indians. According to Judge Hayes, Browne was critical of the management of the Indian reservations, with the exception of the Klamath Reservation.

In his diary, the Judge wrote that night:

The sea is smooth, the moon shining brightly, but one prefers the coal fire of the saloon to the deck outside; in agreeable conversation it comes time for rest.

And the following day — January 8, 1860:

Ah, indeed, it was rest for me last night. I slept soundly until the report of the vessel's cannon awoke me as we were rounding Ballast Point, to enter the harbor of San Diego . . . Lt. Moore and other friends are waiting on the wharf. Soon off for Old Town in the carriage of the landlord, Mr. Tibbetts.

A Frenchman, Monsieur Petit de Vergennes, at his third trial, had finally been convicted of perjury and was to go north on the *Senator*, from San Diego, to serve his sentence. Hayes tells that de Vergennes had been successful as a doctor in Southern California. He considered him "more a fool than a knave," but said he must have been guilty in this instance. There was a sad parting between the Frenchman (who apparently was not in good health). Hayes relates that this affected good-hearted Captain Seeley, and the Skipper declared, "A shame! He shall have a cabin passage, and I will intercede to have him placed in the hospital."

This year — 1860 — we notice that the *Senator* carried much assorted freight. There were 520 head of sheep brought down from San Francisco to be pastured on Santa Catalina and added to the 5,000 owned there by Ed McDonald, a friend of Phineas Banning. He lived in Wilmington, where a street still bears his name. In October a fine flock of merino sheep was imported from the East to San Francisco via Panama, at a cost of \$100 per head. They were sent down on the *Senator* and destined for ranches near Tejon. It was said they had stood the long journey well, without loss to their owners.

Grapes were an important Southern California product, and the *Star* stated, August 25, 1860:

The first shipment of grapes of the season was made yesterday through Major Banning's Commission House, per Steamer *Senator*, for San Francisco; it consisted of a few hundred boxes from Santa Ana.

And on September 26 we learn:

Shipped through the forwarding house of P. Banning per steam-

### *The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

er *Senator*, which sailed on the 8th inst. 1,000 boxes of grapes, 303 sacks of corn, 3 pipes wine. Also by the same house per Steamer of the 24th. inst. 1,800 boxes of grapes.

Another interesting shipment via the *Senator* was four 16-passenger Concord stage coaches, which had been manufactured in Concord, New Hampshire, by the famous firm of Abbot Downing. They were for use on the run between Los Angeles and Visalia.

There was some heavy weather in February as reported in the Los Angeles paper:

On Wednesday evening a heavy gale from the Northeast came and blew with great violence along the coast. The Steamer *Senator* and the Brig *Boston* in San Pedro Harbor were compelled to weigh anchor and stand out to sea.

There was such a demand for passage along the coast that at times, both stage lines were crowded on the trip to Wilmington; often some couldn't obtain space; and the *Senator* was usually heavily-laden with varied California products.

Since the Angelenos were eager for theatrical entertainment, John Temple fitted up, in 1860, the second floor of the Temple Market, as a theatre. The *Senator* brought down the first group to perform there, about February 20; and they gave a production on Washington's Birthday, to the delight of the townspeople. "The scenery is magnificent, surpassing anything before exhibited in this city," so one paper reported.

That same month the delegates to the Democratic State convention went north on the *Senator*. Later that year, she landed two companies of U. S. Infantry, as Drum Barracks had been established in Wilmington.

Sometimes travelers on this popular ship became poetic in regard to her. One, who signed himself "Vega," wrote a revery when making the journey, and ended it in this way:

Bold *Senator*! Noblest of boats that on our inland waters floats,  
seeks outside elements to brave, and measure strength with ocean's  
wave; nor fears explosion, wreck, or strand, while Captain Seeley  
holds command.

In contrast to this eulogy, there were uncomplimentary remarks about the coastwise shipping. As early as 1860 many began to refer to such craft as "old tubs." There were some steamers so poor and unsafe that the companies operating them had to change their names often, to get people to take passage on them. Even the *Senator* was referred to by some as "The Rotten Senator," "The Old Hulk" or "The Floating Coffin."

This came about because the Californians resented the high-

handed methods used and arbitrary way in which the Steam Navigation Company treated their patrons. At times a ship would leave the day before it was advertised to do so, or would be delayed. In addition, passengers were not always informed about the ports at which a steamer would stop, and this caused much inconvenience. But worst of all, were the high prices for fares and freight.

Therefore, in March, 1861, a group of indignant citizens held a public meeting in Los Angeles, with Mat Keller as chairman. They protested the exorbitant rates and drew up a memorandum to Major Samuel Hensley and other owners of the *Senator*:

Resolved, that whilst we duly appreciate the regularity and promptness with which the Steamer, *Senator* has made her trips between this place and San Francisco, and while we also bear witness to the skill, careful manner and kindly disposition of the officers in charge of the *Senator*, we are still of the opinion that a reasonable reduction in the present rates of fare and freight upon said boat would enure to the advantage of the owner of the boat as well as the company at large.

These citizens also informed the steamship company that thousands of their cattle had been lost through the droughts. Although mineral wealth might improve conditions, the Southern Californians wanted to attract more good immigrants. But it was impossible to do so, as long as there was a steamer monopoly that charges such high prices. A long list of merchants signed this petition; and they threatened to form a company and put on a rival steamer. (This was done later, but the big company always managed to squeeze them out).

The year 1861 saw the beginning of the Civil War. Since most of the Southern Californians had come from the South, there was much sympathy for the cause of secession here. Albert Sydney Johnston, head of the Army Department of the Pacific at San Francisco, resigned and came down on the *Senator*. He stayed for a time with his brother-in-law, Dr. J. S. Griffin, before starting for Texas to "join up" with the Confederates. (Later as General Johnston, he lost his life at the Battle of Shiloh).

Henry Hamilton, the fiery editor of the *Star* declared:

. . . although he (Johnston) has been superseded by the Black Republican authorities, we are confident he would have maintained the integrity of the flag and the trust committed to his care, at all hazards against all and every comer.

Winfield Scott Hancock had arrived in Los Angeles in 1859 to set up a Quartermaster's Department for the Army. This resulted in the establishment of Drum Barracks in Wilmington. He and



*The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

Banning were close friends, as Phineas was one of the few staunch Union men in the district.

The *Senator* brought down fifty wagons for use of the Quartermaster's depot in Wilmington; and many U. S. soldiers came to San Pedro Bay on this steamer, including one hundred cavalymen and their horses, late in 1861. Also a Colonel Wright arrived via the *Senator* to take charge of the troops here when Winfield Scott Hancock was ordered to the East.

After Phineas Banning had told his friend, Hancock, farewell and the *Senator* was taking him and his wife to San Francisco, Banning remarked, "There goes a man who will make his mark in the world." This came true for he, as General Hancock, distinguished himself at the Battle of Gettysburg, and later was a candidate for the Presidency.

A famous visitor to Southern California in 1861 was Lady Franklin, wife of Sir John Franklin, who lost his life during his Arctic explorations. With her niece, Miss Cracroft, she reached San Pedro Bay on the *Golden State*, and for a short time stayed at the Bella Union Hotel. While in Los Angeles, the people, because of their "sympathy for her sorrow and long years of unsuccessful search for the body of her husband," showed her much courtesy. They took her on short trips to the nearby country; also B. D. Wilson gave a delightful garden party in her honor at his Lake Vineyard home. Before she left on the *Senator* for San Francisco, Phineas Banning entertained her with a reception and collation at his Wilmington home; and she was given a great ovation as she departed for the north.

Early in February, 1862, when the *Senator* reached San Pedro Bay, she brought news of a tragic event on board, as Dr. Thomas Foster was lost at sea, either accidentally or as a suicide.

Deep sympathy was awakened . . . on the arrival of the Steamer, *Senator*, and the rapid dissemination of the report that Dr. Thomas Foster, the ex-Mayor, had been lost overboard on January 29th on the boat's trip northward. Just what had happened to Foster will never be known; in San Francisco it was reported that he had thrown himself into the sea, though others who knew him well looked upon the cause of his death as accidental.

That same month, Captain Seeley told of a seismic disturbance on the down voyage of the *Senator*. The morning of February 3 it became stormy; and off Point Concepción the steamer encountered a heavy gale which the skipper declared was the wildest in all his seafaring experiences on the Pacific Coast.

The *Senator* was heavily laden with 780 tons of goods, and at one time the Captain was on the point of throwing all this cargo

overboard, when the storm abated somewhat. When they reached San Pedro Bay it was too rough to enter; therefore, the *Senator* had to lie for half a day at the bay of Santa Cruz Island. A schooner also had been compelled to put to sea because of the rough weather at the roadstead. A horseman arrived in Los Angeles with the news of an earthquake in San Bernardino on the same day when Captain Seeley had felt the seismic disturbance at sea.

The Oregon, Victoria and San Diego Steamship Line (of which S. Hensley was proprietor), operated the *Senator* in 1863, three times monthly along the coast. At times new gold strikes were reported; and the *Senator* brought down many adventurous gold seekers for mines at Soledad, and on one trip, 200 men enroute to new diggings on the Colorado.

This year, 1863, was a tragic one for the *Senator*. On the morning of March 14, at 7:30, in a dense fog, the ship off Point Firmin, struck a rock, three miles from Deadman's Island. There was a large hole in her stern bottom; she sprang a leak and began to fill with water. She fired her signal gun, but it was some time before the little Banning steamers, the *Comet* and *Ada Hancock*, also some Tomlinson lighters could make out her position.

Her passengers were all taken off safely by the tugs; and the crew transferred the cargo to the barges except for 75 tons of coal. Then Captain Seeley succeeded in backing the *Senator* inside of Deadman's Island, where she lay on a sandbar, called the "Hog Back." At high tide she was filled with water. For three days the *Senator's* position was unfavorable; it was feared she would break in two, and become a total loss. Captain Seeley thought she had made her last voyage. It was the first serious mishap the *Senator* had ever experienced.

The *Tri-Weekly News* of Los Angeles, on March 16, 1863, said that the *Senator* was an old boat that should be laid up:

For 12 years she has been in constant use in Southern California waters and has made a princely fortune for her owners. She has done real service, but a wooden boat does not last forever.

The pump on board was not very effective; so an additional one of large size (that had been made at Wilmington) was put to work. The California troops stationed there offered their services; and in a few days the water had been pumped out; she was floated; the 9 by 12 foot hole was repaired temporarily, but she had been badly strained. Captain Seeley had thought the *Senator* would have to be towed to San Francisco, but even though in a disabled condition, she left March 23. With only her officers and crew aboard, the steamer reached the Golden Gate safely. While she was under-

*The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

going extensive repairs, the *Pacific* took over her run, until April 12 when the *Senator*, once more with Captain Seeley in charge, was again put into service.

This item appeared in the *Los Angeles Star*, March 21, 1863:

The *Senator* and her Captain T. W. Seeley have ever been great favorites on this coast, and her career has been an unusual one, this being the first serious accident that has befallen her; and the Captain and crew deserve great credit for getting her precious cargo in safely, and saving the ship from destruction.

Not long after this accident to the *Senator*, came the dramatic disaster on April 27, 1863, to the small steamer, *Ada Hancock*, belonging to Phineas Banning. It was the worst catastrophe in the history of the San Pedro Harbor.

While on the second trip from the Wilmington wharf, to place passengers aboard the *Senator*, the *Ada Hancock* careened suddenly in a strong wind. This admitted water to her boiler room; the boiler exploded with such great force that the little steamer was destroyed to the water's edge. Later fragments were discovered on an island about three quarters of a mile away.

Although the accident happened about 5 P.M. the news didn't reach Los Angeles until 8 P.M. At once Dr. Griffin and an army surgeon, Dr. Todd, hurried to the wharf at Wilmington. Soldiers from Drum Barracks were trying to help the injured. At least 26 persons were killed; and several of them were buried on the beach.

Among the many injured was Phineas Banning, who was hurled high into the air from the *Ada Hancock*; his wife and her mother, Mrs. Sanford, were also hurt. The dead included the popular Captain of the *Senator*, Thomas W. Seeley; Joseph Bryant, skipper of the *Ada Hancock*; Dr. H. R. Myles, a druggist, and his betrothed, Miss Hereford (sister of Mrs. B. D. Wilson); Tom Workman, Banning's chief clerk; Albert Sydney Johnston, Jr.; William T. B. Sanford, brother of Mrs. Banning, and once postmaster of Los Angeles; and William Ritchie, the Wells Fargo messenger. The \$10,000 he was carrying was lost. Fred E. Kerlin of Fort Tejon lost both his life and treasure — \$30,000 in greenbacks — this disappeared as did the jewelry of several victims.

On May 9, 1863, the *Star* told of the funeral of Captain Seeley, in San Francisco:

The body of this most excellent gentleman was conveyed to his last resting place, Lone Mountain Cemetery, in San Francisco, according to a large concourse of truly sorrowing friends. The shipping in the harbor had their flags at half mast; and every token of respect was paid to one of nature's noblemen.



After the death of Captain Seeley, First Mate Butler took over, and he remained in command for some time. However, he didn't know the coast too well. Once on the way to San Francisco, the fog lifted and showed the shore 30 miles north of their destination. Then a passenger exclaimed, "Why, Captain, this isn't at all the part of the coast where we should be!" At once this angered the sensitive officer and he threatened to put that passenger in irons.

During 1864 the *Pacific* and *Senator* alternated on the runs between Northern and Southern California. A news item reported that S. J. Hensley had sold his interest in the old, but favorite steamer. This caused a strong editorial, May 10, in the *Los Angeles News*. It was headed:

THE OLD STEAMER SENATOR — CITIZENS BEWARE!

The *Senator* has monopolized the trade of the Southern Coast for many years; she has been well patronized at the most exorbitant rates for passage, and freight, for which there has been little or no reciprocation on the part of the owners, in the way of accommodation . . .

The machinery of the *Senator* is perfectly sound; capable, perhaps, of wearing out another hull as good as the one it now occupies, was in the commencement. She is manned by an experienced and gentlemanly set of officers — highly respected in this community; but we learn she is kept afloat and 'propelled solely by and for the benefit of the pockets' of the Steam Navigation Company, whom the people of California know only to their own sorrow and regrets.

The editor urged the people of Los Angeles and Southern California to travel to San Francisco by the stage coaches and not to patronize the *Senator* because of the high rates. But this apparently didn't have much influence on travelers; for the *Wilmington Journal*, December 3, 1864, reported that on "Steamer Day," the arrival of the *Senator* always caused a "terrible rush of business." At its last arrival no less than fifteen freight and other wagons with eight or ten mules carried enormous loads that were so high the drivers couldn't make themselves heard by the mules, and had to use their whips.

In 1865 there was more talk against the *Senator* — dubbed by many "The Floating Coffin," which should be replaced, they urged; but the steamer continued her journeys. Two years later, Holloday and Brenham purchased the *Senator* for use on their line, The California, Oregon and Mexican Steamship Company. After five years' ownership by this firm, there was much competition offered by the Pacific Mail Steamship Company. So the owners sold their ships, including the *Senator*, *Pacific*, *California* and *Orizaba* to the Pacific Mail. This company used these steamers on their San Diego branch,

## *The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

with three stops monthly at San Pedro and Anaheim Landing. Some of the ships sailed twice a month for San Francisco, with stops at Monterey, San Simeon and San Luis Obispo.

After twenty years of Pacific Coast service, the *Senator*, in 1869 was re-built to carry 142 cabin and 50 steerage passengers.

Her old "hog frame" was gone, her decks were raised, some of her timbers renewed. Now 226 feet long, 30 wide, 13.5 deep, with a capacity of 1,012 tons of freight . . . Her outside staterooms were done in rosewood, and the decking on her main saloon was of alternating planks of walnut and ash. Her four bridal suites were beautifully and tastefully ornamented. — San Francisco *Bulletin*, June 6, 1869.

There was a bit of excitement on the *Senator*, now commanded by Captain Dall, in October of this year, when Undersheriff Wiley came on board. He arrested a man who called himself Captain Barry. The latter was accused of selling, at San Juan, a horse he had hired at a livery stable in Los Angeles.

Prominent Southern Californians continued to patronize the old *Senator*, and in October the passenger list included such men as ex-Governor John G. Downey, ex-Governor Pío Pico, Colonel Larabee and General Phineas Banning.

There was an important marriage in Los Angeles, in December, 1869, when Augusta Mallard, daughter of Judge J. S. Mallard, was married to Major Ben Truman. He had been an Eastern newspaper man, and connected with New York dailies; he also served as private secretary to President Andrew Johnson. After the Civil War, Truman came to California as a postal inspector. Following the wedding, the happy pair rode on a special train down to Wilmington, where they boarded the *Senator* for San Francisco, and then on to Washington. For the Major was to act as correspondent for the New York *Times* during the session of Congress. (Later Ben Truman bought the Los Angeles *Star*, which he owned and edited for several years).

In the *Star* of March 19, 1870, someone wrote a letter to the editor, which was printed under the title of

### A TRIP DOWN THE COAST

We went on board the Steamer *Senator*, which was about to sail for San Diego. At first there was considerable confusion among some of the passengers who claimed they had taken and paid for different staterooms from those which the tickets called for; but the good Captain Gregory and the accommodating Purser soon put everything to right and made everyone feel satisfied, comfortable, and happy.

The weather was fine and the trip delightful, the steamer made fast time to Santa Barbara, where she remained for a few hours, thus

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

affording passengers, anxious to do so, an opportunity to visit that beautiful little town . . . After a safe and happy voyage, we arrived at San Pedro about 6:30 on Monday morning.

Captain Gregory, who is an able and efficient commander, a polite and true gentleman, received the highest encomiums of the passengers. The officers and crew are likewise efficient, obliging, and attentive. All were well pleased with the *Senator* . . .

Phineas Banning was again a passenger on the *Senator*, in January, 1871, when he began the first part of a long trip, which would take him across the continent to Washington, D.C. It was his object to draw attention to the need for improved harbor conditions, "to look after matters pertaining to the welfare of the county and this part of the world generally." The *Star* commented:

He will urge the passage of all measures which will have a tendency to improve and aid the development of the Southern counties, as well as Arizona. We wish him a pleasant journey, and abundant success in his undertaking.

In April, 1871, there was much apprehension felt in Southern California in regard to safety of the *Senator*, which was caught in the worst storm of the season, a heavy northeaster. When the *Senator* finally arrived, quite late, at San Pedro Bay, Captain Harloe reported that he had been compelled to put back twice into Monterey because of rough seas.

In April, 1872, the *Santa Barbara Times* revealed that the *Senator* had been engaged for some days in transporting to the mainland, from Santa Cruz, 20,000 head of sheep, for which More Brothers had paid the sum of \$70,000. Late that year the *Senator* ran aground in San Diego and was delayed for a day or two in starting its northward trip.

It is interesting to note the varied cargo the *Senator* carried through the years, both in the way of freight and passengers. For instance, early in 1873 the *Los Angeles Express* revealed that on board the *Senator* was a "real live member of the nobility of England," a Lord Dunraven, who after landing at San Pedro Bay, went to Los Angeles and later engaged in some bear hunting near Fort Tejon. And in May of that same year an Undersheriff of Los Angeles County boarded the *Senator*, handcuffed to the notorious bandit, Tiburcio Vasquez, who had committed many crimes in Southern California.

Again this steamer weathered a bad storm in February, 1873; and as was usual, the grateful passengers drew up a set of resolutions which they sent to papers in San Diego, Los Angeles, Santa Barbara and San Francisco for publication.

Resolved that Captain M. Harloe, commander of the *Senator*,



### *The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

and his officers are entitled to the gratitude of the undersigned for their untiring devotion to their duties during the late severe storm, and that we fully appreciate the prudence and caution exercised by them for the safety of ourselves, and the ship entrusted to their care.

Resolved that the action of Captain Harloe in remaining uninterruptedly at his post for nearly 48 hours with utter disregard for his own wants and comfort, and with an eye solely to allay the apprehension and calm the fears of those on board, during the long hours of danger, cannot be too highly praised, and presents an example worthy of imitation by commanding officers under similar circumstances.

In 1874 there were some changes in the companies operating along the Pacific Coast. Goodall, Nelson and Perkins were using the *Constantine*, the *Kalorama*, the *Monterey*, *San Luis* and *California*, while the *Senator*, *Pacific*, *Orizaba* and *Mohongo* were in the hands of the Pacific Mail Steamship Company.

Twice this year, in February and in November, the *Senator* encountered heavy storms, and once had to put over to Catalina for some time. The *Express*, November 30, reported:

The Steamer, *Senator*, arrived from San Francisco yesterday. On her way up, in crossing the bar at the Golden Gate, she shipped a sea which made things lively, and damp in the lower cabin for awhile. It broke in the windows, sloshed around in the lower cabin, nearly exterminated the chambermaid, filled a boat hanging to the davits, and generally caused a great deal of mischief.

The Pacific Mail Steamship Company, in January, 1875, sold its coastwise steamers, including the *Senator*, to Goodall, Nelson and Perkins for \$400,000. There were news items about the *Senator's* arrival at San Pedro Bay with 100 passengers and 200 tons of freight on January 19, and with 167 travelers and 300 tons of freight in February, 1875. Sixty-seven Chinese were brought down to work on Senator Jones' new railway, between Los Angeles and Santa Monica.

As usual, local newspapers lauded the work of the skipper of the *Senator*; the *Express*, April 25, 1875, declared that Captain Harloe could look back to a career without accident. It appeared he couldn't make a mistake, as he had become quite familiar with every characteristic of the coast. There was an old tradition about how he used "to get out a fog scrape."

Once when Captain Harloe was down getting a little sleep, his mate went to him during a dense fog, and declared he had completely lost his reckoning. Just then a gull lit on the bow-sprit; the Captain walked forward, and returned in a few minutes, telling the mate to head the *Senator* "east by north, half north."

For I know that's a San Simeon Bay gull, and sure enough, they steamed right into the bay and tied up at the wharf.

Colonel R. S. Baker who built the famous Baker Block in Los Angeles, sold part of his holdings of the San Vicente Rancho to Senator John P. Jones. Then the two laid out the town of Santa Monica. After a hotel and some bath houses had been constructed, a large number of people went there, on July 15, 1875, to attend an auction sale of the lots. Many persons even came down from San Francisco on the *Senator* to attend this sale, and the *Express* gave a detailed account of this arrival:

The old *Senator*, like the Flying Dutchman, or the Wandering Jew, is destined to be a tradition of the ages.

She rejoices in a perennial youth, and will play her paddles forever. She is as good today as she was away back in 1847 . . . The boat has never before been entirely remodeled. From stem to stern new timbers have been fitted into her, until she is just as good as new. A mammoth boiler has replaced the old. The carpenters and painters have been at work all over the vessel, and it would be difficult to find a more comfortable ship. Her motion is easy, and Captain Stothart by his uniform and impartial politeness to the passengers makes the trip a pleasure.

The First Officer, Mr. Shillabar . . . is a model of good nature and efficiency, and Mr. Gilman, the purser, complements a set of officers, whom we cannot forbear eulogizing for their exact appreciation of the needs of the traveling public.

Among the passengers on this run of the *Senator* from San Francisco were Mr. Pritchard, the Secretary of the Los Angeles and Independence Railroad, and the famous "silver-tongued" orator, Tom Fitch, who talked on the steamer to the 150 persons who were interested in buying lots in Santa Monica. Fitch glowingly spoke of "The Zenith City by the Sunset Sea" (Santa Monica), declaring that it would become a great harbor and that ships from the Orient would bring trade here.

The *Express* correspondent wrote of the landing at the new site as follows:

The *Senator* steamed into the Bay of Santa Monica about 8 o'clock. Twilight had just begun to gild to a night lit up by a glorious moon, when the vessel was made fast to the wharf . . . the sight was quite inspiring and suggestive; and with the *Senator* there were two steamships and three other vessels with the Steamer, *Los Angeles* to arrive today . . . From the time the *Senator* left San Francisco until she saw and replied to the first rocket from the wharf, about 35 hours had elapsed, giving about an average of 10 miles an hour for the whole trip.

Since most of the *Senator's* passengers could not get accommodations at Santa Monica, they rode up to Los Angeles on stages

*The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

owned by the famous "Whip," John J. Reynolds. Later the *Senator* called at San Pedro.

In October of this same year — 1875 — the *Senator* again encountered some bad weather. A thick fog covered Santa Monica and the entire southern coast. The steamer left San Buenaventura at one p.m. and at Santa Monica many persons were waiting to meet friends. Colonel Crawford ordered his engineer to blow the whistle of an engine, stationed at the end of the wharf, at short intervals as a signal to the incoming *Senator*.

About 5 o'clock the answer was heard and the *Senator* was approaching. In half an hour the whistle was heard a little to the south and west of the wharf, and soon a large black shadow showed itself on the face of the fog bank. This was followed by the appearance of the noble steamer, making directly for the wharf. By half past six o'clock nearly all her passengers were landed; and safely seated in the cars, they sped away for Los Angeles.

In October the *Senator* brought down from the north several fast horses that were to run in the annual Los Angeles County Fair. Two of them were thoroughbreds that, after taking part in the races, were to be added to the "fine equine stock of Los Angeles County." And a month later — November 20 — we read that an important passenger on the *Senator* was the well known entertainer, "Herman the Great, world famous magician," who was to perform for the Angelenos.

Early in 1876 there was some discussion about the seaworthiness of the Goodall, Nelson and Perkins steamers, and an Assembly Committee held an investigation. Various experts testified that the *Senator* was a good ship; Captain Burns, marine surveyor, said she was better for the southern trade because of her low guards. The marine surveyor for the California Insurance Company, Captain Hutchings, told of making trips on the *Senator* when she had been in bad storms. "I can say that she is as good a sea boat as I have ever been aboard."

The *Express* asserted that since her remodeling, the *Senator* had been almost completely rebuilt, and that she was one of the most attractive vessels on this coast. "Her commander, Captain Stothart, is not surpassed in many waters for vigilance and competency as a seaman, and for politeness and assiduity as a gentleman."

The steamer was still popular, arriving on one trip with 60 passengers and 1000 tons of freight for Santa Monica, and 17 travelers and 75 tons of cargo for San Pedro. Among the items transported this year from San Francisco were noted racing horses, Golden Gate, Revenue, Colorado and Confidence. The *Senator* in March brought



down 32 cases of coin from the Southern Pacific Railroad to distribute among its employees.

Ben Truman, the owner of the *Los Angeles Star* for several years, with his wife returned from the East, and came down on the *Senator*. He had visited the Centennial Exposition in Philadelphia, and through detailed letters had kept the people of Southern California informed of events there.

There was some excitement on the *Senator* on one trip in February. Just before the steamer reached Santa Monica, a man discovered that his stateroom had been entered and that \$180 in gold notes had been stolen. Captain Stothart knew that two professional thieves were on board; but as no police officer was on the ship, Mr. Buck had to wait for legal redress until he reached Los Angeles, when Detective Emil Hanis took charge of the case.

Rough weather continued to cause the *Senator* some difficulty from time to time. On January 17, 1878, the steamer reached San Pedro Bay about 9 p.m. after being caught in a real storm. She had made attempts to land at San Luis Obispo, Santa Barbara and Santa Monica, but had to give up in each case. Finally, by using a "canoe" the Los Angeles passengers were landed at Banning's wharf in Wilmington. Since the sea was still rough, the *Senator* wasn't able to discharge her cargo but went on down to San Diego.

The Los Angeles *Herald* printed a letter from the persons on this trip. Dana C. Pearson headed the 100 passengers in preparing resolutions, which all adopted.

Whereas — this is the fourth day out from San Francisco with no harbor for protection or safety, at the mercy of one of the most terrific storms known for years, on this coast, without the slightest loss or accident, therefore

Resolved — that our thanks are due, and are heartily tendered to Captain J. N. Ingalls, his officers, and crew for their gallant conduct and noble bearing in the management of this steamer and their splendid, vigilant care manifested in our safety.

Resolved — that this expression of our gratitude be published in the coast counties.

There was quite a close relationship between the *Senator* and other steamers and the California newspapers. The *Los Angeles Star*, for example, reported the movements of the *Senator*, etc., and often praised the officers for such favors as bringing down papers from San Francisco. It was important in early days to get other papers, for the smaller sheets often copied extracts from outside newspapers. Southern California editors and reporters would exchange letters; and news of foreign affairs were taken from Eastern papers from time to time.

*The Senator . . . Favorite Coastwise Steamer*

Finally the career of the beloved old *Senator* in California was drawing to a close. In 1882 she made her last voyage by steam; her engines were removed and she became a barge. Then in 1884, the *Senator* was turned into a temporary barkentine for the long voyage across the Pacific; for she had been sold and was to be used as a coal barge in far-off New Zealand. The press reported:

Sailed, March 26 Brigantine bark, *Senator*, for Auckland. Thus departed through the Golden Gate for the last time the ship which was always mentioned as the "Old *Senator*," not with any reference to her age, but as a term of endearment, in remembrance of the personal comfort to which she so essentially contributed in the days when Californians dwelt in tents.

In his book, *Seventy-Five Years in California*, William Heath Davis wrote:

The Old *Senator*, by which name she was familiarly known, is now moored in the waters of Australia as a coal vessel. Had she possessed intelligence, she might have been too proud of her nationality and for her deeds of the past in the accumulation of wealth, to become a naturalized subject of a British Colony, by a change of flags.

So ends the Saga of the *Senator*; and all the Californians and others who traveled on her always remembered her; for her career was an important part of the romance connected with early steamers along the Pacific Coast.

# The Methodist Church *and the*

## University of Southern California

*By Edward Drewry Jervey*



**D**RAWING INSPIRATION from their founder John Wesley, Methodist ministers have consistently been concerned that a Christian education be available to their people. In this long tradition California Methodists were no exception. In 1851 the California Conference chartered "California Wesleyan College," later changed to "The University of the Pacific" and eventually to "The College of the Pacific." In 1860 the "Napa Collegiate Institute" was established by this same Methodist Conference.<sup>1</sup>

Methodists in Southern California also manifested this unquenchable thirst for education. As early as 1871 two laymen, Robert Maclay Widney and Abel Stearns, were ready to erect a building and begin an endowment for a university, but the death of Mr. Stearns ended the endeavor. Four years later John Tansey, then Presiding Elder of the Los Angeles District of the California Conference, bought some land with the intention of starting a University. The following June he died, and this plan was abandoned.<sup>2</sup> Meanwhile, G. S. Hickey, pastor of the Fort Street (First) Methodist Episcopal Church in Los Angeles, enlisted the help of several ministers and laymen and in December, 1875, began a school in the vacated brick church adjacent to their new church building. The Rev. J. D. Hammond, a tourist and graduate of Genesee College, was enlisted as temporary teacher until the spring when O. S. Frambes took over the leadership.<sup>3</sup> When the Southern California Conference met for the first time in September, 1876, the members declared themselves officially in favor of legally establishing a school of high grade in Los Angeles to be known as "The Los Angeles Academy." This was to be a continuation of the school being run by O. S. Frambes.<sup>4</sup> For the next three years the Conference zealously promoted the Academy while a committee sought to obtain lands that could be the basis of an endowment fund for an institution of higher learning. Robert Maclay Widney and the Rev. A. M. Hough worked especially hard, and in July of 1879 the three years of searching came to an end. Various offers of land had been received and appraised, and in July an offer from South-



## *The Methodist Church and the University of Southern California*

west Los Angeles (then known as West Los Angeles) was secured by Mr. Hough and accepted by the trustees of the Conference. Messrs. O. W. Childs, John G. Downey and Isaias W. Hellman, Protestant, Catholic and Jew, gave three hundred and eight lots in West Los Angeles for the establishment of a University.<sup>5</sup>

This institution was to be known as the "University of Southern California" and was "to be under the control and management of the Methodist Episcopal Conference of Southern California, or such other Conference as it may be changed into." Further, "a majority of said Trustees shall be members of the Methodist Episcopal Church."<sup>6</sup> The University was to be controlled by a Board of Directors elected annually by the Southern California Conference in whatever manner the Conference might choose to adopt.<sup>7</sup> The Endowment Fund was placed under the control and management of a separate Board of Trustees.<sup>8</sup> Until 1893 each catalogue issued by the University made it absolutely clear that the University was "firmly secured to the Methodist Episcopal Church." By action of the Trustees of the Los Angeles Academy this small school was closed in June of 1880, and all assets were transferred to the University.<sup>9</sup>

On October 6, 1880, the University of Southern California opened with fifty-three students. Marion McKinley Bovard, beloved and consecrated minister of the Southern California Conference, began office as the first President. Streets surrounding the University were named after the donors of the property as well as bishops and other prominent people of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and these street names were carried for many years.<sup>10</sup> The following spring the University Methodist Church was organized to minister especially to the University faculty and students.

Progress was slow as the University tried to assert itself. Much credit for its continuance must always be given to President Bovard and his brother, F. D. Bovard. Both worked sacrificially and often without any aid from others or profit for themselves, asking only for the high privilege of educating men and women. Influential Methodists slowly began to realize the potentialities of the University to the life of Southern California. In June, 1885, Mrs. Sarah Tansey gave extensive land to endow a Chair of Christian Ethics at the University.<sup>11</sup> In September of that year an announcement was made at the Annual Conference that was to have far-reaching effects on the life of Southern California Methodism.

The *California Christian Advocate* in 1873 had commented that "no church can grow and prosper and accomplish its mission in saving the people, whose ministry is uneducated."<sup>12</sup> Many peo-

ple in California had long realized that this was true and hoped that somehow a seminary might be established. One of these was Senator Charles Maclay. Senator Maclay had come to California in the early days of its settlement as a missionary of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He had labored for awhile among the early pioneers and then located to go into business. He served a short term in the State Senate. After helping to establish The University of the Pacific, he came to Southern California in 1875 and purchased an extensive amount of land. In September, 1885, the Annual Conference heard that this Christian layman had made a magnificent gift of \$150,000 to endow a College of Theology to be known as the Maclay College of Theology.<sup>13</sup> Ten years previously the leaders of Southern California Methodism dreamed of a great institution for Christian Higher Education. Now Senator Maclay had extended the vision, looking to the future when young men would go forth from the halls of a seminary in their own area to spread the message of Christ and to be a leaven in society. In addition to this endowment Maclay also gave a beautiful campus site of ten acres in San Fernando and agreed to erect a suitable building. Feeling that this still would not be enough, he gave additional land to serve as a reserve fund to meet any deficits or unusual necessities in the running expenses. In August of 1887, R. W. C. Farnsworth was elected the first Dean, and on October 5th the first term at Maclay began. Classes were held in whatever space was available, including the Dean's study and the San Fernando Methodist Church, since the main building and boarding hall were still under construction. In September of the next year the new building at Maclay was formally dedicated, and R. S. Maclay, brother of Senator Maclay, was installed as Dean, succeeding Mr. Farnsworth, who had died. Senator Maclay made the formal presentation:

Bishop Bowman, I now present to the Methodist Episcopal Church this building, free from debt, hoping that I may live long enough to see it filled with earnest students who shall go out into the world to preach Jesus Christ and Him Crucified.<sup>14</sup>

Two years later Charles Maclay died. He had kindled a light that was to shine gloriously into the future.

Meanwhile the University also had been expanding rapidly in other directions. The land boom of the eighties had a decisive effect on the educational attempts of the Southern California Conference. Numerous gifts from other interested people like Senator Maclay had prompted the Conference to start several institutions. By 1888 there were seven schools under the direct control of the Conference: Liberal Arts (Los Angeles, 1880); Chaffee College of

## *The Methodist Church and the University of Southern California*

Agriculture (Ontario, 1883); College of Medicine (Los Angeles, 1884); Maclay College of Theology (San Fernando, 1887); Tulare Seminary (Tulare, 1887); Sisson University (Lower California, 1887); College of Fine Arts (San Diego, 1888). Five other schools were projected: seminaries at Rialto, Ramona and Escondido; an observatory in Los Angeles; a College of Art at Ensenada. Every one of these schools was an integral part of what was known as the "University System." The center of the system was the College of Liberal Arts, and the other schools were spokes of a gigantic wheel radiating out to spread education over the face of Southern California. All of these constituted the University of Southern California, under the control of the Methodist Episcopal Church yet offering Christian non-sectarian work:

The connection of the University with the Methodist Episcopal Church is definite . . . the instruction and all matters pertaining to the educational work are wholly non-sectarian, yet decidedly Christian . . . These (schools at Tulare, San Fernando, etc.) are definitely connected with the University and are parts of it, as much as the College of Liberal Arts.<sup>15</sup>

In the late fall of 1888 the real estate boom burst, and the University was quickly in financial trouble. The Directors were forced to sell much of the property, and when the depression subsided in 1894, only the College of Liberal Arts, the College of Medicine, Maclay and Chaffee remained as parts of the University. Chaffee subsequently became a separate institution. By 1890 the College of Liberal Arts was seriously in debt and was saved from closing only because President Bovard and a few others were willing to assume full responsibility as they had in the first year of the school's operation. In 1891 for lack of funds Maclay was reduced to one faculty member, Dean Maclay. In December the death of President Bovard added to the crisis. Fortunately, J. P. Widney, first Dean of the College of Medicine, and an astute administrator, was elected to fill the vacancy.

In 1893 a crisis for the University was reached, and several events of crucial significance for the future occurred. The College of Liberal Arts, still the heart of the University System, passed the hump when an individual made a very generous gift to retire a considerable part of the debt.<sup>16</sup> The financial situation at Maclay was much more grave. Because of the depressed business conditions, there was no income from the Maclay endowment fund. Furthermore, the original Deed of Trust by Senator Maclay prevented the trustees from selling any land within the endowment fund for less than \$150 an acre. At this time there was no possibility



of sales at such a price, and had the land been sold for a cheaper price, the property, under the terms of the deed, would revert at once from the University to the original donor or his heirs.<sup>17</sup> Had Senator Maclay still been alive, he most probably would have changed the deed to allow the sale of some of the land to preserve the school intact. His heirs could not change the deed. Maclay College, then, was not in debt as was the College of Liberal Arts, but Maclay was land poor. Rather than incur any debt, the Board of Regents closed the school in June. Later the property in San Fernando was sold.

Actually the closing had been anticipated for some months because of the progressing plan of consolidation being worked out by President Widney. When he assumed the Presidency, Dr. Widney immediately saw that a real cohesive force was lacking in the University. "The great problem was to simplify and unify the system, to centralize and consolidate its resources."<sup>18</sup> This was done first by securing release from all conditions forbidding encumbrance of college property from the original donors, and second by changing the organization of the Board of Directors. Heretofore the College of Liberal Arts was under the direct control of the Board of Directors of the University, while other schools, like Maclay, had their own separate Board of Regents. Now this college was given a governing body of its own, and in 1892 it was incorporated with the distinct provision that three-fifths of the fifteen Regents must always be members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Finally, the various Boards of Trustees in charge of endowments for each school were abolished and centralized under one body. These endowments were not held directly by the Directors of the University Corporation.<sup>19</sup> The Annual Conference voted its full approval.<sup>20</sup> This reorganization was a colossal task and put the University on a solid foundation. It saved the Methodist institution from many future legal complications as well as probably its very existence.

On August 29, 1893, as a part of the plan of reorganization, the University made two settlements. In 1886 Judge R. M. Widney had founded a Reserve Endowment Fund to meet necessities as they might arise in any of the departments of the University. Half of this land was reconveyed to Judge Widney, and the University received clear title to the remainder, free of all restrictions, to be used in whatsoever manner the Board desired.<sup>21</sup> The second settlement did essentially the same thing with the Maclay endowment fund. About one-half of the original property, together with some money, was reconveyed to the Maclay heirs, and the remaining land, with improvements and securities, was given over to the Board of Di-

## *The Methodist Church and the University of Southern California*

rectors of the University Corporation, free of all restrictions, to be used in whatever manner the Board deemed best for the University.<sup>22</sup> The Annual Conference believed that a substantial portion of the funds would be used to re-open Maclay at West Los Angeles and that lots adjoining the campus of the College of Liberal Arts had been purchased for this purpose.<sup>23</sup> However, the funds were used to strengthen the College of Liberal Arts.

Looking back today, after three decades of growing division between the Conference and the University, it is easy to ask why the Board, composed of Methodist laymen and ministers, did not immediately see to it that Maclay was re-established on a firm foundation and to blame them because they did not. Yet it is not possible for us now to know all the extenuating circumstances. At the time, with the existence of other Methodist schools of theology throughout the nation, these Christian men may well have felt that unless the College of Liberal Arts, the heart of the University, was firmly established, there would soon be no school at all.

President Widney resigned in 1895, and George W. White succeeded him. Shortly after his succession the final step of re-organization occurred. The two existing corporations, "University of Southern California" and "The College of Liberal Arts of the University of Southern California" merged as "University of Southern California," and a Board of Trustees supplanted the old Board of Directors.<sup>24</sup> The University, as previously, legally continued to be firmly secured to the Methodist Episcopal Church. Meanwhile Maclay continued its work from October, 1894, to June, 1899, as a part of the College of Liberal Arts. Then once again for lack of funds the school was forced to close, this time for eight years. Efforts to secure funds failed since many people believed strongly that no efforts should be spared to further strengthen the College of Liberal Arts. To this end a permanent endowment fund was launched, and by 1902, \$200,00 was assured.<sup>25</sup>

At the insistence of the Annual Conference, Maclay reopened in the fall of 1907 with Ezra A. Healy as Dean. In 1911 the Conference rejected a proposal to place Maclay under a separate Board of Control such as existed in the other professional schools of the ever-expanding University. To those in charge of the University it was evident that a separate board should have been set up. Whether acceptance of the proposal would have later prevented the breach is questionable. But at least for the University, in retrospect, it was well that the proposal was not accepted. It made possible an expanded program and integration of Maclay into the total University as the Board of Trustees saw fit.<sup>26</sup> In 1913 courses in religion were

opened to lay workers, and within five years a diversity of courses in religious education were being offered yearly, including Y-Secretaryship and deaconness training. In October of 1922 John Fisher succeeded Dean Healy at Maclay, and Rufus B. von KleinSmid succeeded George F. Bovard as President of the University. He was the first layman elected to the Presidency. He immediately began to co-ordinate the work of Maclay with the newly created departments of Bible and Religious Education in order to train men and women not only for the parish ministry but also for other full-time church vocations. In keeping with this broadened program the name "Maclay College of Theology" was changed to "The School of Religion on the Maclay Foundation," of which one of the departments was Divinity.<sup>27</sup> This was done upon the recommendation of an Annual Conference committee of seven members who had studied carefully the entire situation for two years. In 1925, by action of the Trustees of the University, Maclay College of Theology was terminated.

Through the last decade another crisis had been rapidly approaching. Since 1900 the University officials had been struggling to raise a permanent endowment. Many interested individuals had contributed substantial amounts, but the Annual Conference itself had not been of any real financial help. The Conference Board of Education in 1908 typically admonished the Conference that "our offerings for its support should be increased commensurate with the larger work that it is doing."<sup>28</sup> That year the Conference gave \$4,769 to the University, while one-fourth of the pastors reported nothing for the school.<sup>29</sup> By 1927 the amount contributed had risen to better than \$14,000.<sup>30</sup> In 1910 the Board of Education warned of the "vast wealth dangling its bait" before the Trustees to try to abolish the organic relation between the University and the Conference.<sup>31</sup> Many foundations, few of which looked with favor upon denominational schools, were offering funds to Boards of Trustees and causing many institutions to break their denominational ties. The Los Angeles District Superintendent warned that unless something was done speedily by the Conference "the Methodism of Southern California will wake up some morning and remember that opportunity has a forelock but no hindlock."<sup>32</sup> In the twenties von KleinSmid declared again and again that "Control Implies Support."<sup>33</sup> An endowment drive of \$500,000 in 1913 by the University was postponed because of the war. Then in 1918, in conjunction with the Methodist Episcopal Church Education Jubilee, the University received almost \$1,250,000; but delinquency on the part of some 2,000 subscribers reduced this amount considerably.<sup>34</sup>



## *The Methodist Church and the University of Southern California*

In the twenties the Doheny family was extremely generous to the University, but the scandal with Albert Fall cast a great deal of uncertainty on these gifts in the minds of many Conference members.<sup>35</sup> This in turn did not endear the Conference to Doheny and other substantially wealthy friends of his who were also making contributions to the University.

In 1928 the crisis was precipitated by another financial campaign. The remarkable growth of the University had made it an "established fact" that "the University had . . . grown beyond the power of the Conference to maintain it effectively."<sup>36</sup> The annual budget of the University was \$1,250,000; the Conference now could give it less than \$10,000 direct, and the pressure of other claims prevented a campaign for endowment among the churches. The University was forced to launch a mammoth campaign independent of the Conference. Yet almost at once it found itself stymied by the fact that it could not, as then constituted, legally receive and hold gifts and bequests. The trustees had to be self-perpetuating rather than elected by the Annual Conference. The trustees unanimously voted to change the Articles of Incorporation, and they were so amended. The Conference Board of Education, sensing that "the proposed change was inevitable, because imperative,"<sup>37</sup> gave a very modified assent to the proposal. The majority of trustees still remained Methodists. In further interest of the Conference the University appointed a committee to consider the entire matter of reorganizing the School of Religion so as to make it an affiliated school of the University but making the Conference the sustaining and controlling power of the school. Accordingly, a Conference commission was appointed to work with the University to study the entire question "touching the aim, location, erection and endowment of such an institution."<sup>38</sup> The Conference then requested the University trustees to set aside from their funds an amount of money that would represent the past contributions of the Church to the University to constitute the beginning of the contemplated foundation. Moreover, the acceptance of the change in the Articles of Incorporation by the Conference was contingent upon the University accepting this request.<sup>39</sup> The University refused the request on the grounds that the University had carried Maclay at a loss for so many years that it had thus wiped out any obligation to return either direct contributions or the endowment of years past.<sup>40</sup> The first giant step toward total secularization of the University had been completed. When the final step was taken in 1952, the Board of Trustees regarded the year 1928 as the terminal date of affiliation of the University with the Methodist Episcopal Church.<sup>41</sup>

Three courses remained open to the Conference: (1) the school could remain under complete control of the University with the Conference acting in an advisory capacity; (2) an inter-denominational school in Southern California could be established; (3) an entirely independent school could be established by the Annual Conference.<sup>42</sup> The decision of the University in regard to the old Maclay funds and past contributions was, of course, not satisfactory to the Conference, but the crisis of the depression left the Conference unable to force the issue. The depression made it impossible to start a separate school, but throughout the thirties the Conference commission continued its investigation. The School of Religion continued its tasks under the leadership of Bruce Baxter, Dean 1931-1934, John Hill, Dean 1934-1936, and Carl Knopf, Dean 1936-1939. In 1934 the University Senate of the Methodist Episcopal Church recognized the School of Religion as an accredited graduate school of theology of the Church.<sup>43</sup> The University continued to share in Methodist World Service Funds.<sup>44</sup> At least in the eyes of the Church the school was still clearly a Methodist institution.

Unification<sup>45</sup> created more intense feeling that a separate school might be established, but the commission felt that the time was not ripe and commended the graduate School of Religion of the University as worthy of support. In 1949 Dr. Earl Cranston was chosen to head the School of Religion. Through the last eight years of critical readjustment he has helped guide the Methodist interest in a school of theology. In November of 1952 the Trustees of the University changed the Articles of Incorporation once more, eliminating the provision that a majority of the trustees had to be Methodists. This was done "to eliminate any possibility of misconception."<sup>46</sup> Significantly, a week later the trustees received the first annual gift of \$419,000 from the County of Los Angeles for services through the University's School of Medicine.<sup>47</sup> The following February a committee was appointed by Bishop Gerald Kennedy to represent the Conference in negotiations with the University to clarify the relationship between the Conference and the School of Religion. Subsequently a "Declaration of Trust" was entered into by the University and the Conference by which a joint Board of Administration was created. This rather uneasy relationship proved unsatisfactory, however, and in 1955 the Declaration was terminated by mutual consent. By June of 1956 a new school of theology, under the direct control of the Southern California-Arizona Conference of The Methodist Church, wholly independent of the University of Southern California, had been incorporated as a legal organization. The new school first met at the University

## *The Methodist Church and the University of Southern California*

Methodist Church while the Conference looked for a permanent home. Seventy-nine years previous Charles Maclay had made possible the Maclay College of Theology through a generous gift. Now another Christian, who desires to remain anonymous, has donated extensive land in Claremont that the tradition of Maclay may be continued. In the fall of 1957 classes opened on the campus of Claremont College while the permanent campus was being readied.

To assess the long history of the Southern California Conference, and its successor Conference, in its relationship with the University of Southern California is no easy undertaking. The hopes and dreams of the early leaders of the Conference were that a magnificent institution of Christian learning could be established and cultivated for the people of Southern California. When Maclay College of Theology became a reality in 1887 as a part of the University, those original desires took on added significance. Times changed. The University survived the almost fatal depression of 1888-1894, and even as Los Angeles mushroomed the University did likewise. To many connected with the University, as well as no small number in the Annual Conference, the University had grown too big for the Conference. If every institution of Methodism that did not receive all the support it felt entitled to from an Annual Conference severed its relationship, Methodism today would have few, if any, institutions. The leaders of such schools have always known that much support must be sought elsewhere. Yet it must be admitted that few institutions of Methodism had grown as large as had the University of Southern California in 1928. Needing a tremendous endowment, the University had to change the corporate laws, and twenty-four years later the last reference to the Methodist Church was eliminated from these same laws. With this step a great university, born and nurtured in the Christian faith and life, became entirely secularized. It had followed a pattern not unique in the history of American higher education.

### NOTES

1. Rockwell D. Hunt, *History of the College of the Pacific, 1851-1951* (Stockton: College of the Pacific, 1951), pp. 6-7, 96.
2. See W. Ballantine Henley and Arthur E. Neelley (eds.), *Cardinal and Gold* (Los Angeles: University of Southern California, 1939), p. 7.
3. J. B. Green, "Genesis of the Southern California Annual Conference," *California Christian Advocate*, LXXV (September 16, 1926), 12. Apparently Hickey was following the resolution adopted at the California Annual Conference in 1872 under the heading "Los Angeles Academy" which requested the ministers of Los Angeles, Compton and Santa Barbara to confer with a Board of Trustees already appointed, among whom was Robert Maclay Widney. This resolution may well have come as a result of Messrs. Widney and Stearns' plan of 1871. See "Southern California," *California Christian Advocate*, LXXV (September 16, 1926), 12, and *Minutes of the California Annual Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, 1872* (San Francisco: Methodist Book Depository, 1872), p. 25.



## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

4. *Minutes of the Southern California Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, 1876* (Los Angeles: Mirror Printing, Ruling and Binding House, 1876), pp. 18-19. Cited hereafter as *Southern California Minutes*. (The California Conference embraced all of California Methodism until 1875 when action was taken dividing the State into two Conferences. The Southern California Conference was formally organized September 6, 1876).
5. *Southern California Minutes*, 1879, p. 11.
6. From the Original Deed of Trust, *Catalogue of the University of Southern California, 1884-1885* (Los Angeles: Mirror Printing and Binding House, 1885), pp. 4-7. Cited hereafter as *Catalogue*.
7. University of Southern California, "Minutes of Board of Trustees," 1880-1895, p. 2. Cited hereafter as "Minutes of Trustees."
8. *Catalogue*, 1883-1884, p. 4.
9. *Southern California Minutes*, 1880, pp. 14-15.
10. Rockwell D. Hunt, *The First Half Century* (Los Angeles: University of Southern California, 1930), p. 4.
11. *Southern California Minutes*, 1885, p. 51.
12. "A School of Theology," *California Christian Advocate*, XXII (December 18, 1873), 4.
13. *Southern California Minutes*, 1885, p. 14.
14. Leslie F. Gay, "History of the University of Southern California" (unpublished A.M. thesis, University of Southern California, 1910), p. 179.
15. Marion McKinley Bovard to Dr. Edwin W. Fowler, July 10, 1888, Bovard MS, Bancroft Library, University of California.
16. *Southern California Minutes*, 1893, p. 38.
17. Gay, *op. cit.*, p. 171.
18. *Ibid.*, p. 214.
19. *Ibid.*, pp. 216-222.
20. *Southern California Minutes*, 1893, p. 41.
21. "Minutes of Trustees," 1880-1895, p. 249.
22. *Ibid.*, p. 250. It is very important to note in view of the growing controversy thereafter that the "Minutes of Trustees," the Gay thesis, and the Annual Conference *Minutes*, 1893, p. 40, are in complete agreement that no restrictions were placed on any of these funds. They could be used as the Directors chose to do so.
23. *Southern California Minutes*, 1893, pp. 40-41.
24. Henley and Neelley, *op. cit.*, p. 38. Since the main interest of the Conference after 1900 began to center in Maclay, the expansion of the University will be considered only as it relates to and affects Maclay.
25. Hunt, *The First Half Century*, pp. 11, 15.
26. Personal interview with Rufus B. von KleinSmid, Chancellor, University of Southern California, July 15, 1957.
27. *Yearbook of the University of Southern California*, 1922 (Los Angeles: University of Southern California, 1922), p. 202.
28. *Southern California Minutes*, 1908, p. 32.
29. *Ibid.*, p. 86. The churches were asked to make a thirty-five cent contribution for each member. Ten cents of this was to be credited to Maclay.
30. *Southern California Minutes*, 1927, p. 99.
31. *Southern California Minutes*, 1910, p. 112.
32. *Southern California Minutes*, 1914, p. 109.
33. *Southern California Minutes*, 1929, p. 30.
34. See John W. Hancher (ed.), *The Educational Jubilee* (Cinn: The Methodist Book Concern Press, 1918), p. 400, and *Southern California Minutes*, 1920, p. 94.
35. Personal interview with Tulley Knoles, Chancellor, The College of the Pacific, and former secretary to President Bovard, July 15, 1957. Dr. Knoles has stated in writing for this writer that in 1913 and 1914 Mr. Doheny, Sr., personally gave President Bovard a check to cover the deficits of the University. This interest in the University never ceased. Because of the scandal in the twenties Bromley Oxnam, now an outstanding Bishop of The Methodist Church, opposed the nomination of Mr. Doheny, Jr., to the Board of Trustees of the University. See *Southern California Minutes*, 1924, p. 21.
36. *Southern California Minutes*, 1928, p. 94.
37. *Ibid.*
38. *Ibid.*
39. *Ibid.*, p. 95.

## *The Methodist Church and the University of Southern California*

40. *Southern California Minutes*, 1934, p. 95. Unfortunately for the Conference it must be admitted that the direct contributions never carried any restrictions and that the endowment funds, by terms of the settlement in 1893, could be used in any way that the Board desired. Cf. *supra*, p. 12, n. 22.
41. "Minutes of Trustees," 1941-June, 1955, p. 756.
42. *Southern California Minutes*, 1929, p. 31.
43. Henley and Neelley, *op. cit.*, p. 125.
44. *Southern California Minutes*, 1929, p. 31.
45. In May of 1939 the three major branches of Methodism — Methodist Episcopal Church, Methodist Episcopal Church, South, and Methodist Protestant Church — united.
46. "Minutes of Trustees," 1941-June, 1955, p. 756.
47. *Ibid.*, p. 768.

# Our Heritage *from the* Days of the Dons

By Thomas Workman Temple, II

*An Address Delivered at the Dedication of  
the Palomares Adobe in Pomona, October 20, 1957*



QUERIDOS AMIGOS: DICHOSOS OJOS QUE OS SALUDAN! "*Twice blessed are these eyes that greet you!*" To this traditional salutation of early California may I add how honored I feel to address you today, at the kind invitation of Homer Duffy and Julian Brannan. I am indeed honored to be present with Mrs. Temple when such singular recognition is again accorded the Family of Palomares. In 1934 I was also privileged to be present with Father Andrew Resa of Mission San Gabriel Arcángel, at the dedication of the monument at Ganesha Park to the three earliest Pioneers of Pomona Valley — Ygnacio Palomares, Ramón Vejar and Luis Arenas. Today, Gabriela and I, in the name of the family, rejoice with the Palomares, and may the glory of their fair name live long in this valley and city of their ancestors, who left us a noble heritage from the days of the Dons.

Today I would like to speak to you of that heritage — of the customs and habits of the native *Californios* — their social, domestic and religious gatherings and the peculiar traits of their private relations. For even today, much as our grandparents before us, we like to revert with fondness to those beginnings of California when in the midst of peace, contentment and plenty, our ancestors lived their lives in repose, anticipating nothing for *mañana* that would interfere with their simple manners, nor disturb the even tenor of their ways.

Of course it wasn't all a life of repose or *mañana* for that matter. However, Father Grogan of San Buenaventura always insisted that he had once found a California grave stone with this inscription — *Aqui reposa Juan Espinosa, Nunca en su vida hizo otra cosa* — "Here, Juan Espinosa continues to repose — For all he did in life was doze!" — I am sure the good padre was stretching a point there!

The early customs, traditions and manners were brought to Alta California by the *Fundador* — Founding Families from New



## *Our Heritage from the Days of the Dons*

Spain, i.e. Mexico, Baja California and Spain, the Mother Country. In referring to the Palomares with their Vejar, López, Alvarado, Ávila and other connections — from La Villa de Sinaloa came Justo Nazario Saez, recruited by Captain Rivera in 1773, and arrived at San Diego with Lieutenant Ortega in September, 1774, with the very first Spanish families — the Lugos, Garcias, Verdugos, Vallejo, Sotelo, etc., come to plant their feet and their traditions in this new land. His daughter Benita Saez was baptized by Padre Serra at Monterey in 1780. In 1794 at Mission Santa Clara she married the first Palomares, José Christobal, of el Real de San José de Canelas, Durango.

Juan Francisco López and his brother Claudio — ancestors of the Vejars and of "Gene" Biscailuz — were born in Baja California; the former was present at the founding of Mission San Gabriel on September 8, 1771; the latter was confirmed by Padre Serra there in 1782.

Salvador Vejar, master carpenter and *soldado* too, came in 1792, as an instructor; a native of Tepic, Mexico; Doña Feliciana de Arbayo — winsome widow of the Anza trail — came in 1776 from Culiacan; the Avilas of 1793 were from El Fuerte, Sonora, and the Alvarados from Loreto, Baja California.

Settled in this Spanish province of Alta California far from the center of government at Mexico City, isolated from the rest of the provinces of New Spain, later Mexico, and with but rare chances of communication with the rest of the world, the *Californios* in time formed a society whose habits, customs and manners differed in many ways from the other people of New Spain. They were a truly colonial society, proud of their native or adopted land, yet with a strong affection for their King. The old soldiers always boasted they had been *soldados del Rey*.

Sergeant José Francisco de Ortega speaks for them all. Here he was returning from San Diego to Loreto, Baja California, in 1770, on the way home from the great adventure of 1769, the Spanish occupation of the Ports of San Diego and Monterey. Suffering from scurvy, exhausted, and with the taste of mule meat still in his parched mouth, he pours out his heart to Governor Armona:

Truly I say to Your Excellency, that I am my master's servant (the King's servant) and with but a single soldier, Pablo Antonio Cota, I blazed a trail as far as San Diego, and would have broken my way far beyond, in the knowledge that whenever my life could render a service to God and my King, I would consider myself the most fortunate of men!

After Mexican Independence in 1821, the *Californios* too, be-

came more independent, that is, when some governor they did not like was sent here. They did not have the best of feelings for those from *la otra banda* — the other side, i.e. Mexico, those who had not been blessed by being born in California! The natural feeling of the colonial!

From New Spain they brought their deep, religious feelings and customs that permeated their every day life. That love and respect for the 4th Commandment of God — “Honor Thy Father and Thy Mother” — which flourished in their native valleys of Sinaloa, Sonora, they made to blossom anew in this fair land, and this love they lavished with tenderness and devotion to their parents as well as to their godparents in full measure.

They also lavished their respect and reverence on the Franciscan Padres, full of energy, industry and noble ambition, who brought a softening influence upon their customs, manners and pursuits. To be buried in the cast-off robes of a *padre*, was an honor eagerly sought for, and often enjoined upon their children by their parents in their wills.

Many of those early wills are extant. They read like a Catechism, and their great faith, aspirations and blessings upon their children are an inspiration today. Doña Josefa López, widow of the first Vejar, Don Salvador, in 1862 distributed the pictures and statues and her altar among her sons. Pablo Vejar was left a picture of San José, the great patron of Rancho San José and its Palomares and Vejar grantees; Ricardo got three other pictures, of La Purísima Concepción, Ntra. Sra. de los Angeles, and Sn. Juan Bautista; Lazaro Vejar got the family altar with its statue of San José. Since he died of small pox in 1863, I have often wondered if this is the same statue that graced La Capilla de San José at La Casa de Don Ricardo Vejar.

It may not be too well known that Bishop Tadeo Amat administered the Sacrament of Confirmation at the Vejar Chapel in January, 1856, when Polonia Garcia was confirmed. She later married José Mariá Rojas — perhaps some of her descendants are present today. Again in June 20, 1868, the little Chapel echoed to the good Bishop's words at Confirmation. Raquela Reyes, among others, received the Sacrament that day. She married Mariano Linares.

In her will, Doña Josefa López ends with this benediction — *“Pido a mis hijos encarecidamente que considerando el Amor que siempre les he tenido — vivan en paz y buena inteligencia, honrando así la memoria de un padre y una madre, a quienes siempre respetaron!”*

“I most earnestly charge my children in consideration of the

## *Our Heritage from the Days of the Dons*

love I have always borne them, to live at peace with good will and understanding, thus honoring the memory of a father and mother, whom they have ever respected!" No better advice; I am sure it was religiously followed down through succeeding generations.

This Doña Josefa López de Vejar in 1851 once traded thirteen *varas* of her property on Calle Principal, Main St., Los Angeles, to Felipe Rheim, a German merchant, for a double barreled shotgun — "*una escopeta de dos tiros!*" Only condition was that Rheim should allow her the use of the irrigation ditch to water her vineyard. You can be sure that if her water was ever shut off, Rheim was going to get both barrels from Doña Josefa!

It was also the custom for the *Californios*, mostly the *Fundadores* to be buried under the thresholds of the mission doorways, so that the faithful might tread over their graves as a mark of humility. This appears in José Raymundo Carrillo's will of 1806. We know that Don Claudio López is buried inside the main entrance on the Gospel side near the holy water font at San Gabriel Arcangel, where a chance drop of holy water might also ease his soul into the "Celestial Courts of Heaven."

Paternal advice given to children is charmingly contained in a fine letter of Leo Carillo's ancestor, José Raymundo Carillo. This was to his only daughter, María Antonia, just after her marriage to Dn. José de la Guerra in 1804. She had sailed away to Monterey. Lonely, he wrote — with your indulgence I would like to read you parts of the original — and then in translation. I feel it will be worth your while.

Amada hijita mia, Maria Antonia Carrillo:

Carissima hija de todo mi carino — es imponderable lo que he estranado tu auiciencia, ya sabes lo mucho que te amo, como hija unica qe. Dios nos dio a tu Madre y ami para nuestro consuelo: este sera mayor perseverando tu (como lo espero) en el Sto. temor de Dios, un amor reverente a tu Marido, respecto a los Sacerdotes Ministros del Altissimo, Caridad con los Pobres, y mucho mas con los enfermos, y sobre todo la frecuencia de Sacramentos para ser feliz en este vida, y despues en la otra.

Estos son hija mia, los consejos que tu pobre padre te da, y el unico tesoro que te puede desear.

Me diras que fui ingrato porque no me despedi de ti, pero advierte hija mia, que ya me conoces lo amartelado que soy para contigo y por consiguiente, tu lo eres tambien para con tu Padre, y tube por mejor arrendarme cayadito y llorando por el camino: Dios te heche su Benediccion Santissima! — y mira en que te puede complacer tu amartelado Padre que te ama, y todas tus felicidades te desea. Jose Raymundo Carrillo.

TRANSLATION: Beloved little daughter of mine, Maria Antonia



Carrillo: Dearest daughter of all my heart: how can I express how very much I have felt your absence? You do know the depth of my love for you, as the only daughter God gave us, your mother and me, for our comfort and joy. These shall be all the greater, should you abide (as is my hope) in the holy fear of God, with a devoted love for your husband, a respect for the Clergy, Ministers of the Most High, Charity for the Poor, and much more for the Sick; and above all, with the frequent reception of the Sacraments, so as to be happy in this life, and afterwards in the one to come.

These my daughter, are the good counsels with which your poor father endows you, and the only treasure that I can wish for you!

You will scold me that I was rude because I did not say goodbye to you. But reflect my daughter, you already know how devotedly I love you and in turn, how much you adore your father. Thus, I thought it best to slip away quietly, crying to myself on my way home. May God give you His most holy blessing! — As for yourself see in what way your devoted father, who loves you and wishes you every happiness — can best serve you. Jose Raymundo Carrillo.

Here Don José Raymundo speaks for all *Californios* — and their tender regard for their children — again, no better advice could be given in his day and age.

Of course hospitality of the *Californios* was proverbial — liberal and most generous to friend and stranger alike — a spontaneous and uncalculating kindness and courtesy that was extended without the slightest thought of recompense or reciprocity. This was their outstanding characteristic, and every foreign visitor to our ports, missions and ranchos in the early days, bore witness to the same testimony that the *Californios* were the most generous hosts in the whole world.

Many an *estrangero* — foreigner — who braved desert sands from the East or rounded Cape Horn to get a peek at our California and quench his "California Fever" was soon induced to spend his remaining years here, willing victim to the cordiality of his welcome.

Don Benito Wilson, who came without any intention of remaining, in the 1841 Workman-Rowland Party, justified his decision to stay in these words: "Receiving so much kindness from the native Californians, I arrived at the conclusion that there was no place in the world where I could enjoy more true happiness and true friendship than among them. The people were honest and hospitable, and their word was as good as their bond."

The liberality of the *Californios* was such that a person could travel from San Diego to Sonoma without a *real* in his pocket, and never want for a roof over his head, a bed to rest his weary bones, food and drink and even tobacco to smoke. Not infrequently mine

## *Our Heritage from the Days of the Dons*

host would leave a small pile of coins in the guest room. Fresh horses were always supplied at missions and *ranchos* alike. I assure you that Rancho San José was no exception.

There was one link in the chain of society in early California which did much to keep in a strong and affectionate manner, the social relations between men. This was the magical, spiritual affinity of *compadre* and *comadre*. Whoever stood sponsor — was godfather and godmother to a child at baptism or confirmation — became the *compadre* and *comadre* of the father and mother of the child, their *ahijado* or godchild. Ever treating one another with respect and affection, and having the child as a living symbol of their esteem, these relations held all society within its tender and loving embrace.

There was also the responsibility of the godparents to look after the spiritual and material well-being of their godchild. Many an orphaned *ahijado* was brought up in the household of his *padrinos* — loved, educated, and married off like their own children.

A little story having to do with this *madrina* and *ahijado* relationship — of an ancient godmother, and her “smart alecky” little godchild. One day at La Misión Vieja where I was born, on the way home from the Temple School some of us boys were coming down the road. I could see my grandmother approaching; she was old, infirm, but active enough to go visiting her *parientes*, relatives to *comadrear* of an afternoon. As she shuffled past us one of the boys cried out: “*Miren muchachos, allí va una vieja*” — Look boys, there goes an old “witch.” Grandma wheeled around on her good leg and fixed the young whipper-snapper with a knowing stare: “*Alejandro! Que no sabes que yo soy tu Madrina?*” Alejandro don’t you know I am your godmother? The astonished boy knelt down to receive her blessing and mumbled: “*Perdoneme Ud. Madrina — pero yo pensaba que era una Vieja.*” Pardon me Godmother Mam — But I thought you were an old “witch!” Which is a pretty fast comeback in any language! This became grandmother’s favorite joke on herself.

As you may know, both Clarence Palomares and I are past presidents of *Los Compadres de San Gabriel*, an organization devoted to the revival and perpetuation of California’s fine traditions. These are our *ahijados* — godchildren — we their *padrinos* or sponsors — Bud and Isabel Fages are officers. At present we are in rehearsal for our ninth annual presentation of *Los Pastores*—Nativity Play at Mission Playhouse — on the Sunday before Christmas.

Judge Benjamin Hayes knew the San José intimately. In 1860 he wrote these lines. I quote them here in full. He had been visit-

ing at Lake Vineyard, Don Benito Wilson's estate, and continued on to San José.

My heart would be cold to forget the faces of old I was ever happy to see in this smiling valley — Alvarados, Vejars, Ybarras, Palomares — their fortunes have changed since the blissful year of 1852 and threaten yet greater changes as the spirit of speculation begins to brood over and close around them. Longer here perhaps than elsewhere have endured the ancient California customs, with elegance of manners, natural hospitality, courtesy, mirth, outgushing of gaiety and simple rural life.

Home of the Jarabe and Son, of Truth as well and Friendship, mysterious cement of the soul—sweetener of Life—sincere, strong that has never changed for me. Merry houses, bright thoughts, unbounded confidence, firm devotion. When again will I see them — (he was writing at the *Pueblo*). These will remain for memory to cherish ever — nor without that fairest image, "Dolores" — A heart on her lips, a Soul within her eyes!

I am sure the judge was here referring to Dolores Alvarado who later that same 1860 married Fenton Slaughter, mother of the late lamented Julia Slaughter Fuqua, gone to join her ancestors. *Que en Paz descanze!* May she rest in peace!


I have tried to bring you something of the charm of the valued traditions, customs and manners of the days of the early Palomares, Vejars, in this sweet smiling valley. They left us a priceless heritage that we should be proud to redeem from a storied past, a way of life somewhat streamlined in this mid-20th century by their descendants, yet withal, the same tried and true traditions of their early California forebears.

Here today, where the first Our Father, the first Ave María was raised to heaven by Ygnacio Palomares, I like to feel there still issues a prayer in the hearts of his many descendants, as well as in those of the rest of us, a grateful people, of whatever race, creed or color, to the same beneficent God, that He may continue to bless and prosper this great Valley of Pomona, once the far-flung Rancho San José, of Ygnacio Palomares, Ricardo Vejar and Luis Arenas.



# Forgotten Landmarks *in* Ventura County

*By Jeanne Riha*

UST ABOVE THE LOS ANGELES COUNTY LINE lies Ventura County, a treasure land for the historically-minded explorer who wants his findings accessible but not greatly publicized.

Few markers point the way to historical landmarks. Yet the historic shrines are there for those willing to seek them out. They lie in shining green citrus groves, booming towns, scrub-covered hills and stream-splashed gorges. They trace a story of development from Spanish exploration and mission life to great cattle ranchos, later land subdivision and irrigated farming and now the inroads of urbanization.

Outside the city of Ventura off Highway 399 at Cañada Larga road lie unmarked ruins of the old aqueduct that once served Mission San Buenaventura several miles south. Today only a broken chain fence marks off relics of the old Indian-built irrigation system that once watered some 30 fertile acres of gardens and orchards around the Ventura mission. But in its weed growth, the masonry wears a garb appropriate to more than a century and one-half of existence.

Another part of the seven-mile long aqueduct system survives in similar oblivion on a weed-grown hillside just off the 100 block of East Main street in Ventura. Unobservable from the business street, this old settling tank is known to few persons you query for directions in the nearby business district. No sign marks the access, a flight of steps called Valdez Alley off Main Street. The adobe brick building, its lime-plastered walls now scarred with scribbling, was Ventura's jail after its irrigation duties ended. Its small size indicates crime was not a major problem in early Ventura.

Nearby is Mission San Buenaventura founded in 1782, the last of a coastal chain of missions established by famed Father Junípero Serra. This is one of Ventura county's best known attractions.

In the 1870's the old mission building was revamped in a modernizing operation that covered or destroyed many of its historic features. Recent historians have been less than flattering about this remodeling job.

Now the mission is in final stages of a program to restore the ancient charm of the old Indian-built structure. For two years a Ventura architect pored over histories of the mission, records left by the fathers and old pictures. Fate also lent a hand. When workmen yanked off floorboards covered with linoleum, they found rough Spanish tile dating presumably from founding days. These were laid in the middle aisle and sanctuary of the church, causing some parishioners to turn their ankles but lending historical accuracy.

The original beams, covered for years by a ceiling, again have been exposed. Side altars superimposed on old Indian paintings were ripped off and the paintings restored with the help of existing bits of painting and old pictures. The original size windows have been restored and replicas of the old doors substituted for a later version. Anachronistic art work was removed. Many other changes sought to recapture the original styling. At the same time, many utilitarian features of the church were modernized.

Outside the cities in rural Ventura County lie many other landmarks. Once the southern half of the county was cut into nineteen huge ranchos held under Spanish and Mexican land grants for cattle grazing. Long ago these tracts were divided. Irrigated, they produced handsome citrus and avocado groves and thriving vegetable fields of two or three crops a year.

Parts of the old ranchos remain, some under ranching families with a century-long history in the county. Despite the changes in ownership an aura of romance clings to some of the old holdings.

The two most famous buildings, the adobe at Rancho Camulos and the old Olivas adobe, are closed to the public today. The first, once part of the immense San Francisco rancho granted to Antonio del Valle about 1840, has been greatly remodeled. Parts of the original structure remain, including a long front porch and some adobe walls thirty inches thick. The fresh white building with green trim lies on Highway 126 two miles east of Piru. It sprawls in the shade of a century-old black walnut tree that, at festivities, has sheltered 600 persons at one time under its 155-foot branch spread. The Spanish style home, flanked by a now-dusty little family chapel, gained much fame as locale of part of Helen Hunt Jackson's novel, *Ramona*.

West of Highway 101 between Oxnard and Ventura runs a

## *Forgotten Landmarks in Ventura County*

small unmarked road. Until recently it lay between bean fields. Now one field is giving way to an industrial site. Down that road lies the Olivas adobe house built early in the 1840's by Raimundo Olivas who was granted 2000 acres by a Mexican governor after Spain lost control of this area. The well-kept house, closed to the public today, is said to retain much of its old charm and original appearance. A tan adobe with blue trim, it lies secluded and unoccupied today behind a shield of trees and shrubs.

Another old adobe, more accessible to the public, is the 94-year-old ranch home at Rancho Arnaz. The property now is a ranch and apple selling business on Highway 399 on the way to Ojai. Although remodeled, the old adobe still has the original 27-inch walls, many of the old rooms, the original beams in one of the bedrooms and the old study in which Don José de Arnaz practiced medicine.

This Spanish-born gentleman once included among his holdings the entire San Buenaventura mission grant. Present owners of the ranch, the Langford family, allow persons with a genuine interest in historical spots to view the old buildings.

Fame of another type invests a modest stucco house at 255 North Ojai Street in Santa Paula. Here in her years of retirement lived Mrs. Olive Mann Isbell, generally considered the first public school teacher in California. She taught in rooms of the Santa Clara mission before her retirement. Her Santa Paula house has been greatly remodeled since present owners bought it in 1909. It is unrecognizable from early pictures, but five original rooms remain.

Farther east, in the canyon behind Piru, are remnants of an old horticultural venture. Great stretches of olive trees and remains of fruit orchards set residents to reminisce about the "Garden of Eden" that developer David Cook tried to recreate there. Cook, who founded Piru, was a Chicago publisher of Sunday school literature.

He bought almost 14,000 acres during the 1880's and planted them in exotic fruits, nuts and olive trees, the latter imported from the Holy Land. Cook's workmen were expected to display a religious bent, attending church, and refraining from profanity, liquor and tobacco. Contemporary accounts called his venture "an earthly paradise" but it was more earthly than paradise because profits were meager and Cook later returned to Illinois. The orchards, especially the olive groves, remain scattered throughout the canyon.

Just inside the sparsely-timbered Los Padres National Forest in northern Ventura County an explorer can find several rustic spots that combine historical interest with scenic appeal.

Along Highway 399 a few miles north of Ojai in a setting of sycamore and oak trees is Matilija Hot Springs, once a famous



resort and now a county park. Known for its mineral waters, it provides year-round mineral baths as well as picnic facilities in season. In the 1880's the springs were hailed for their benefits to rheumatism sufferers. Today arthritics come from Los Angeles for relief, and women come from Ojai to wash their hair in the soft water.

Nearby is Wheeler Hot Springs resort, now closed and soon to be remodeled into a trailer park. Longtime residents express hopes that the bulldozer will spare the luxuriant wooded growth and that the beneficial springs will get proper attention. These springs were discovered accidentally in the 1880's by Wheeler Blumberg, son of a developer in the area, while hunting deer in Matilija Canyon. Old timers claim both springs have mineral properties suitable for different ailments and are among the finest of their types in the world.

From stagecoach days Wheeler Hot Springs and Matilija Hot Springs drew vacationists and fishermen eager to get into the mountains quickly. At their popularity peak the resorts were jammed. Yet neither is jaded today by man or time. Both are fresh in their forested settings.

Even the oldest ranchos are historical newcomers compared with relics found last summer in a dry wash of Cuyama Valley which lies partly in the northwest corner of Ventura County. A University of California scientist turned up several thousand animal fossils dating back as many as 30 million years. More scientific sleuths will be on the trail of prehistory in the area next summer. Meantime, the remnants of more recent events remain for Californians with a yen for exploring.

# Robert Glass Cleland

## 1885-1957

### *An Historian's Appreciation*

By Andrew F. Rolle



ROBERT GLASS CLELAND, a former president of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, died in Pasadena, California, on September 4, 1957, at the age of seventy-two. Cleland was one of the early builders of the society. Born at Shelbyville, Kentucky, and a resident of California since the 1890's he graduated from Occidental College in 1907, took his Ph.D. at Princeton (1912), and later received the LL.D. degree from Coe College (1941) and the Litt. D. from Occidental (1943). He joined the Occidental faculty in 1912, was first occupant of the Norman Bridge Professorship in History and served as Dean of the Faculty, vice-president, and, until his death, as honorary trustee of the College. He was for a time also a trustee of Princeton University.

Despite the many fine tributes paid to Robert Cleland since his death it is hard for me not to write something about him as an historian. In 1943, the year I graduated from college, and the year in which Dean Cleland "retired," I wrote an appreciation of his career for the college newspaper, *The Occidental*, part of which read:

Dr. Cleland has been a source of inspiration for the thousands who have heard his voice. As a writer he holds the distinction also of being California's premier historian.

I shall never forget how he quickly sought out the anonymous writer of this piece and how well he wore his mantle of modesty upon that and many other occasions. It was not easy for Dean Cleland to talk about himself.

A few more words about him may help indicate how significant a stature he earned in the world of scholarship. When he died he had been associated with Occidental for over fifty years. It was a great lifetime full of contacts with important ideas, significant people and worthwhile books, a lifetime during which he saw the evolution of society from the horse and buggy age to the atomic era.

From the time when he accompanied his parents from Kentucky to live on a ranch near Duarte in Southern California in the early 1890's, until his death, Cleland was intimately associated with the West and its history. Upon his "retirement" at Occidental in 1943 he joined the staff of the Huntington Library where he enjoyed ten fruitful years of writing and lecturing. In this period he also administered, with Rockefeller Foundation support, a most effective program of research in American history, with emphasis upon the West and California. About this "new focal point" for regional studies in the West John Walton Caughey has written in his book, *California*: "The Huntington Collections and a supporting grant from the Rockefeller Foundation provided the sinews, and the example and guidance of Robert G. Cleland provided the leadership."

Cleland, as much as any other scholar, gave shape and form to the history both of California and of the political, economic and cultural growth of the American Southwest. A major portion of his research was concerned with California's emergence from a frontier wilderness into an agricultural and industrial empire. In 1922, by the age of thirty-seven, he had already produced the best one-volume history of California. Widely known also as a sportsman, Cleland fished and hiked over much of the western scenery which he described so knowingly in the dozen or more books which he wrote. Among these were: *A History of California, The American Period* (1922); *The March of Industry* (1929); with Osgood Hardy; *The History of Occidental College* (1937); *The Cattle on a Thousand Hills, 1850-1870* (1941); *From Wilderness to Empire* (1944); *California Pageant* (1946); *California in Our Time* (1947); *El Molino Viejo* (1950); *History of the Irvine Ranch* (1951); *The Place Called Sespe* (1943 and 1956); *This Reckless Breed of Men* (1950); *A History of Phelps-Dodge* (1952) and *One Hundred Years of The Monroe Doctrine* (1923). With Oscar Lewis he also edited for the New York publisher, Alfred Knopf, a series of volumes dealing with Western America. Many of his books, and especially his *Cattle on a Thousand Hills*, treated extensively the relationship of California to its Hispanic origin. As editor of the *Mexican Yearbook* for several years he further exploited this theme and collected the large body of materials now in the College Library's Cleland Collection.

His last effort, undertaken with Juanita Brooks, was *A Mormon Chronicles The Diaries of John D. Lee* (1955) which won an American Association for State and Local History Award. It is remarkable that Dean Cleland could have produced such a large quantity of



*Robert Glass Cleland*

good literature, carrying also, for so many years, heavy administrative responsibilities. Scores of articles and reviews could be added to his list of titles.

As professor and dean he was beloved by several generations of students who recognized in him an unusual combination of teacher, administrator and writer. Though sometime a severe taskmaster, especially in earlier years, he encouraged by his example numerous students to enter professional careers. Among these were the late Dr. George McAfee McCune, onetime Chief of the Korean Division, United States Department of State, and a faculty member of the History Departments at Occidental and the University of California at Berkeley; Dr. William Bell Langsdorf, who went from Occidental's History Department to the presidency of Pasadena City College; and Dr. Glenn S. Dumke, recently Occidental's dean of the faculty and now president of San Francisco State College. By his encouragement of both good teaching and research Dean Cleland helped build a tradition of excellence in historical studies at Occidental, a tradition which has included a Rockefeller Foundation program of study of the American Southwest with its series of annual conferences that have brought hundreds of new comers to the campus.

Cleland also won for himself a sizable reading public which was attracted by his vigorous and colorful literary style. His major purpose in both teaching and writing seemed to be, in his own words, to "light up the landscape of history." Those of us who were fortunate enough to have experienced his company, whether at his ranch near Greenough, Montana, or at the Huntington Library, or in Alumni Hall, where he lectured for so many years, will not quickly forget the strength of Robert Glass Cleland as both humanitarian and scholar.

---

*Note:* A Cleland Memorial Collection of History and Bibliography has been established at Occidental to which his friends can make contributions by sending them to the College Librarian.

# Book Reviews

ARCHIVES OF THE ARCHDIOCESE OF SANTA FE, 1678-1900. By Fray Angelico Chavez, O.F.M. (Academy of American Franciscan History, Washington, D.C., 1957.) 283 pp. with *Appendix and Index*. \$7.50. *Illustrated end papers with map* showing locations of Pueblo Indian Missions, Reduction Indian Missions, Genízaro Indian Settlements, Spanish Parishes and Spanish Settlements with Churches.

This valuable compilation covers Loose Documents, DM's, 1678-1869, Books of Patentes, Books of Accounts, Books of Baptisms, Books of Marriages, and Books of Burials. — G.E.M.

AN APACHE LIFE-WAY: the Economic, Social, and Religious Institutions of the Chiricahua Indians. By Morris Edward Opler (University of Chicago Press, 1941.) \$6.00; 500 pp. with *Index, Bibliography, Map, Illustrations*.

This book deals with every phase of tribal life from birth to death, childhood, becoming of age, social relations of adults, folk beliefs, medical practice, shamanism, maintenance of the household, marital and sexual life, the Round of Life, Political organization and status. For anyone interested in Indian life and customs, this book will give keen satisfaction and much enlightenment.

— G.E.M.

AMERICAN FICTION, 1851-1875. By Lyle H. Wright (Huntington Library, San Marino, 1957.) 413 pp., with title index. \$7.50.

While this book review may seem somewhat out of place in a quarterly devoted primarily to history, it offers, as the sub-title indicates, "a contribution toward a bibliography" covering all important fiction in the third quarter of the last century. In any library this book will prove to be a valuable tool in tracing the works of fiction, whether novels, romances, short stories, tall tales, tract-like tales, allegories, fictitious biographies, or travels. Since fiction deals with all phases of life, the many titles — 2,832 numbered in all — may well prove to set forth the history of this period.

— G.E.M.

THE CALIFORNIAS, 1846-1957. By Philip S. Rush. (Published by the author, 1957.) 167 pp. with *Introduction, Index and Special Addenda* containing public officials, a chronological summary. *Illustrated, Maps*. \$4.00.

This book is a continuation of his earlier, "*Historical Sketches of the Californias, Spanish and Mexican Periods*," published in 1953, and brings the history of the Californias, Northern, Southern, and Baja, down to date. The author lists the many sources he has

### Book Reviews

consulted and acknowledges his debt to them. Water development, building of the railroads, coming of the air age, the development of Baja California, Imperial Valley, the state in Civil and Spanish Wars, World Wars I and II, and the Korean War, the Port of Los Angeles, and the latest railroad undertakings in Baja California.

— G.E.M.

**THE PLACE CALLED SESPE:** The History of a California Ranch. By Robert Glass Cleland. (Huntington Library, San Marino, 1957.) 120 pp. Now in 3rd printing. *End Papers, Map.*

*San Cayetano* as the "Place Called Sespe" is sometimes known, deals with this rancho from 1769 to the present day and gives the succeeding owners. It is located in the Santa Clara Valley of Ventura County. The concluding paragraph of the book sets the picture excellently.

"A hundred and ten years have passed since Carlos Antonio Carrillo first petitioned for the Rancho Sespe. During that period so insignificant in the long sweep of time, the world Don Carlos knew and loved — the world of half-wild cattle, of unfenced wilderness, of cumbersome carretas slowly creaking through the dust — has given place to cities and orchards and highly cultivated fields; to automobiles and airplanes, and all the other incredible miracles of our modern age. But in the pleasant valley of the Santa Clara, between the mountains on the north and the high hills on the south, the Place called Sespe still clings to the memories of a vanished day; still cherishes the tradition of gracious, unaffected hospitality; still offers to the understanding visitor its ancient benediction of tranquility and peace."

The will of Carlos Antonio Carrillo who died in 1832, with its eleven clauses, will interest all history lovers. — G.E.M.

**IN OUR SECOND CENTURY.** By Jerome A. Hart. (The Pioneer Press, 1931.) 454 pp. with *Index*.

The author, a veteran newspaper editor of San Francisco, begins his book with the close of the Civil War and presents through fascinating chapters the history of this country down to 1930.

He "reviews events that have stirred the world from the time he cast his first vote, in 1876; the Custer massacre; the lobar disturbances; the anti-Chinese riots; General Grant's arrival at San Francisco from his world tour; our centennial era of inventions; Edison's electric light; Muybridge's motion pictures; the telephone; the linotype.

In the European bear-pit wars are raging; the Phoenix Park murders shock civilization; Captain Boycott's persecution coins a new word; Parnell is ruined by Kitty O'Shea; the Mahdi murders



Gordon; Dreyfus, innocent, is exiled on Devil's Island; the crime is denounced by Zola.

San Francisco's early dailies are discussed with comments on the men who made them. Attacked from the pulpit by Kalloch, Charles de Young answers with a bullet. Richard Realf, one-time protégé of Lady Byron, pursued by his nemesis to San Francisco, ends his life. Ambrose G. Bierce, through a life of turmoil, moves to his mysterious end in Mexico.

Mark Twain, Oscar Wilde, Henry Ward Beecher, tour the country. C. P. Huntington gives Beecher \$4,000 for a wedding fee. Rudyard Kipling, Henry Irving, Booth and Barrett are entertained at the old Bohemian Club. In a chapter devoted to opera, circus, stage-folk and the play, there is drama and pathos in the writer's recollections of Old-Time Shows." — G. E. M.

### *Essays, Pamphlets and Reprints*

INDIANS OF CALIFORNIA, PAST AND PRESENT. American Friends Service Committee. A pamphlet. 36 pp. *Illustrated, Reservation Map, Information Sources List.*

A definite effort to bring about a better understanding among the public of Indians as a whole, especially as federal jurisdiction is being removed. The Committee hopes this pamphlet may contribute to better understanding. — G.E.M.

## *Activities of the Society*

### MEETING OF JANUARY 14, 1958

The first program of this year was devoted to commemorating the capitulation of Cahuenga, January 13th, 1847, and we were fortunate to have as guest speaker Mr. William Woollett, president of the Campo de Cahuenga Memorial Association. The speaker had apparently gone to great length to cover the movements of General Fremont previous to the signing of the treaty and accordingly gave a very clear idea of what brought about the treaty and its full significance. Few realize that by this arrangement there came into the United States not only California but also land from which was made later the states of Arizona, New Mexico, Nevada and Utah, as well as parts of Colorado and Wyoming. This indicates the sweeping importance of the capitulation for the West.

At this meeting by the courtesy of Mr. Legory H. O'Loughlin, chairman of the Pacific Coast Region, the annual awards of the American Association for State and Local History, were made public — one of these awards went to Dr. Andrew Rolle, our Director.

During the refreshment hour Mrs. Woollett and Mrs. Jean Hall Giles served at the urns.

The large Register, which attendants sign, showed the following members and friends were present that night:

Mr. and Mrs. K. L. Carver  
Mr. and Mrs. George B. Varnum  
Dora M. Robbins  
H. W. Schramm  
Mrs. Jean Hall Giles  
Mr. and Mrs. Everett S. Hager  
Mr. and Mrs. Spencer M. Crump, Jr.  
Mrs. Gerard Krythe  
Margaret Purdum  
Frederick W. Nelson  
Elmer C. Weber  
Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill  
Mrs. Verna Wells  
Mrs. Ella Cole  
Ellen B. Walters  
Gordon Forbes  
Mr. and Mrs. S. Kaye  
Mr. and Mrs. Joseph M. Northrop  
Mr. and Mrs. Donald McLarnan  
Mr. and Mrs. Herbert E. Brown  
Mr. and Mrs. Norris Bostwick

Ralph O. Chick  
John W. A. Off, Jr.  
Mr. and Mrs. Peter B. Kuhl  
Belle F. Siegel  
Marie Alden Hopkins  
Ella Baxter  
Mr. and Mrs. Ferdinand Perret  
Cynthia Macnair  
Mr. and Mrs. C. C. Ganahl  
Sylvia Yellen  
Bernice Hutchison  
Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison  
Mr. and Mrs. Otto J. Zahn  
Zannie E. Davis  
Dudley C. Gordon  
Andrew F. Rolle  
Frances J. Rolle  
Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion  
C. A. Bilicke  
Mr. and Mrs. Everett G. Hager

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

### *Pasadena Historical Room*

The Pasadena Historical Society invited us to participate in the opening of the Pasadena Historical Room in the Main Library on Sunday, January 26, with Dedication at 3 P.M. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill, Miss Emma Harris Perry, Mr. Frederick W. Nelson, Mr. and Mrs. Joseph M. Northrop and daughter, Mr. Dudley Gordon (in costume) and Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion were present on this very interesting occasion.

### MEETING OF FEBRUARY 11, 1958

This meeting date falling so near the birthdays of both Lincoln and Washington prompted us to arrange an American History program with President Arlt delivering an address on "Baron von Steuben — The Prussian General Who Served George Washington in the Revolutionary War" and Vice-President Turner speaking upon "General Washington's Valley Forge Orderly Book." Both of these speakers thrilled the audience with their scholarly and gripping messages. The Register showed the following persons present:

Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill  
Elmer C. Weber  
Dr. and Mrs. Elmer R. Pascoe  
Dora M. Robbins  
Mr. and Mrs. George B. Varnum  
Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison  
Mr. Robert C. Tipton  
Mrs. Helen Walters  
Gordon Forbes  
Margaret M. Costello  
Mr. and Mrs. Leslie Colman  
Mrs. R. Blumenthel  
H. W. Schramm  
Mr. and Mrs. Joseph M. Northrop  
Mr. and Mrs. Norris Bostwick  
Robert G. Cowan

Dr. and Mrs. Robert L. Borland  
John W. A. Off, Jr.  
Alice Sturdy  
Mrs. Zella Shanahan  
Mrs. Frank H. Cowgill  
Mrs. Carmen MacFarland  
Mr. and Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman  
Mrs. Zella C. Graves  
Mrs. Jean Hall Giles  
Charles C. Colley  
Gertrude R. Allen  
Larry Northrop  
Bro. Phillip Snyderden  
Maymie R. Krythe  
Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion

Mrs. George B. Varnum and Mrs. Guy E. Marion gave the urn service during the refreshment period.

### MEETING OF MARCH 11, 1958

Our March meeting found us as guests at the Southwest Museum with Mr. Carl S. Dentzel, director of the Museum, speaking upon "Aboriginal American Art." His easy, eloquent discussion won the most genuine applause and the Indian exhibits were eagerly studied following his talk. A large attendance shows in the register as follows:

Gilbert S. Moore  
Lizzie May Brown  
Mrs. Frank B. Duncan

Mr. and Mrs. Russell E. Belous  
Charles Rozaire  
Mr. and Mrs. C. C. Ganahl



## *Activities of the Society*

Mr. and Mrs. Richard J. Martin	Herbert Morley
Bill Menton	Irving Bancroft
Thomas L. Newmark	Dr. and Mrs. M. R. Harrington
Mr. and Mrs. Everett G. Hager	Sid Platford
Mr. and Mrs. Harold J. Palethorpe	Donald S. South
Mr. and Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman	Mr. and Mrs. Fritz Nuernberger
Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison	Mrs. Guy B. Capps
Mr. and Mrs. E. F. Ducommun	Mr. and Mrs. Ray Phillips
Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill	Mrs. M. Gristock
Mr. and Mrs. George B. Varnum	Mr. and Mrs. Leslie E. Colman
Mrs. B. Freeman	Ella Longmaid Robinson
Mr. and Mrs. S. K. Gally	Miss Dora M. Robbins
Mr. and Mrs. George S. Moffatt	H. A. Schramm
Mr. and Mrs. Otto J. Zahn	Roy G. Howard
Mr. and Mrs. E. J. Yorba	Ruth and Chuck Powell
Mr. and Mrs. John A. Dunkel	Mr. and Mrs. Robert James Woods
Mrs. Ella Cole	Gertrude R. Allen
Mrs. Jean Hall Giles	Mr. and Mrs. George E. Fullerton
Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion	Mr. and Mrs. Ferdinand Perret
Mr. and Mrs. Carl S. Dentzel	Mr. and Mrs. J. Northrop
Mr. and Mrs. Carleton H. Ralston	Mr. and Mrs. K. L. Carver
Frederick W. Nelson	Mrs. Verna Wells
R. B. Luckey	Mr. and Mrs. Norris Bostwick
George T. H. Williams	Phillip Conneally, S.J.
William H. MacMillin	Mr. and Mrs. Dudley C. Gordon
Mrs. James I. Breslin	Luisa Espinel
Mrs. James I. Tucker	

Mrs. Carl S. Dentzel and Mrs. E. F. Ducommun presided at the urns during refreshments.

## New Members

The President and Board of Directors take this opportunity to introduce the new members who have joined the Society since December, and to extend to them a cordial welcome.

E. Marguerite Arlotto  
 Robert S. Bell  
 Brigham Young  
     University Library  
 Charles Brown  
 M. Fern Clawson  
 Robert G. Cowan  
 Helen C. Dean  
 Robert Dechert  
 James P. Devere  
 Louis Epstein  
 H. G. Fairman  
 Lion Feuchtwanger  
 Mr. and Mrs. Banning Garrett  
 J. M. Gerstley  
 Helen R. Goss  
 John J. Hankey  
 Mrs. Maurice Hirshfield  
 Luella Howard  
 Heard Houghton Izant  
 Mrs. Lida Houghton Izant

Robert W. King  
 Thomas Quayle Lempertz  
 Mrs. Sven Lokrantz  
 Dr. Don MacQueen  
 William W. Melnitz  
 Gilbert S. Moore  
 William H. McMillin  
 Ilene B. McNulty  
 Fritz Nuernberger  
 J. Thomas Owen  
 Mrs. Ernest Milton Pace  
 Mrs. Samuel K. Rindge  
 Andrew F. Rolle  
 John W. Snyder  
 H. H. Thompson  
 Mrs. Lester W. Tryce  
 Maurice Turner  
 Roy B. Weathered  
 Ann Stanford White  
 Miss Sylvia Yellen

### ERRATA

In the December issue of the Quarterly certain corrections and omissions have been reported under the "Roster of Members."

Edmund F. Ducommun should have been shown as a *Life Member* as well as Director.  
 K. L. Carver should have been shown as a *Sustaining Member* as well as Director.  
 Justin G. Turner should have been shown as a *Life Member* as well as Director.

#### *Under Annual members:*

Guy E. Marion should have been shown as Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion.

The following names were inadvertently omitted:

Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill  
 Mr. and Mrs. Ernest J. Yorba.  
 Miss Isaline M. Yule  
 Mr. and Mrs. Otto J. Zahn

If any other errors or omissions have been noted by any member, will they kindly notify the Secretary's office.

## Gifts to the Society

*In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.*

*The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.*

*Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.*

MARCO R. NEWMARK,

*Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests*

MRS. GERTRUDE ALLEN, Los Angeles — Two boxes of old glass negatives of early Los Angeles scenes, buildings, photographs, etc. Many interesting subjects but not identified. Also box of film negatives.

CALIFORNIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY: Several items as follows:

1. "*Lower Klamath Country*," by Frances Turner McBeth (Anchor Press, Berkeley, 1950) 76 pp., end paper maps. Bibliography. \$1.25.
2. "*San Francisco's First Successful Caesarean Section, Performed by Elias Samuel Cooper, Founder of California's First Medical School*," by Ludwig A. Emge, M.D. 20 pp., photographs, paper covers, reprinted from the *Western Journal of Surgery, Obstetrics and Gynecology*, 1938.
3. "*George Bancroft and His Services to California*," by Theodore H. Hittel, (*California Historical Society*, 1893.) 20 pp. with foreword.
4. "*Papers of the California Historical Society*," Vol. I, Part I, (*California Historical Society*, San Francisco, 1887.) 94 pp., list of members, also By-Laws, and list of correspondents. Paper covers.
5. "*Papers of the California Historical Society*," Vol. I, Part II, contains *History of the College of California*, by Samuel H. Willey, D.D., with alumni residents on the Pacific Coast indicating residence, occupation, college attended and year. Index of Parts I and II separately, paper covers.
6. "*Wonderful Narrative of Lieutenant Harrison*," a photographic reproduction of the original published by the author at Cincinnati, 1848. Made for Frederick W. Beinecke, Christmas, 1957. 30 pp. and paper covers.

GEORGE L. HARDING: "*Henry Raup Wagner, 1862-1957* (Lawton R. Kennedy, San Francisco, 1957) 18 pp. bound in strong covers, 2 photographs. Consists of three articles by Thomas W. Streeter, Charles L. Camp and Ruth Frey Axe, painting the life of this historian, bibliographer, cartographer and collector, and also touching upon his wife, Blanche Collet Wagner, 1873-1957.



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

MISS CLARA C. HATFIELD, Alhambra — A notice from the Los Angeles City Water Co. to a resident regarding the wastage of water "by your sprinkling on the sidewalk" dated Sept. 28, 1886, signed by C. M. Jenkins, Inspector. "If the same is not remedied in two days, your water supply will be shut off and a penalty of two dollars be charged before the water is again put on." Miss Hatfield sent it to Supervisor John Anson Ford who in turn sent it to our former President John E. Fishburn, Jr.

HUNTINGTON LIBRARY AND ART GALLERY — Two books for our library, (1) "*American Fiction 1851-1875*" by Lyle H. Wright and (2) "*The Place Called Sespe*" by Robert Glass Cleland.

HEARD H. IZANT (grandson of Frank B. Houghton), Whittier — The collection of clippings, old photographs, books, etc., some of which was compiled by the late Charles Prudhomme and given to Frank B. Houghton before Prudhomme died. Volume I of the Scrapbooks was withheld and is Mr. Izant's property held at his residence in Whittier for his son. With the gift, "It is my hope that this collection may be used by those gathering facts for books on California people, places and events of historical interest." It is Mr. Izant's wish that none of this material be given away or thrown away without his consent, unless he is no longer here to give it. Vol. I may be consulted at Whittier.

ROBERT W. KING, Los Angeles — Pictures of Lang Station on the Southern Pacific Railroad and the Registered Historical Landmark No. 590 placed by the California State Park Commission in cooperation with our Society June 15, 1957. They recall our Trek to Lang last summer.

LONG BEACH PUBLIC LIBRARY: "*Annual Report, 1956-1957, La Casa de Rancho Los Cerritos*," by Edwin Castagna, City Librarian (Long Beach, 1957) 9 pp., paper cover, mimeographed.

GUY E. MARION: "*Christmas in California*," by Eleanor M. Tucker (F. A. Pagenkopf, Sierra Madre, 1924) 28 pp. on heavy stock, illustrated with color prints. The first of the Eleanor M. Tucker Books for children.

LORRIN L. MORRISON: "*The History of America's Printing Industry*," published by the Sorg Paper Co. of Middleton, Ohio. One of a series of booklets entitled, "Since 1852," deals with the development in America, 1683-1957, of the printing industry.

FRANK ROLFE, Los Angeles — A Collection of 18 maps as follows:

1. Map showing school land owned by the State of California compiled by the State Conservation Commission, 1912.
2. Irrigation map of Central California to accompany report on the irrigation resources of Central California, prepared in cooperation with the Conservation Commission of California, 1912.
3. Railroad Commission Map of the State of California with index of cities, towns and railroad stations. Inset maps of San Francisco and Los Angeles Vicinities.
4. Map of the races of Europe and adjoining portions of Asia and Africa. National Geographic Magazine, 1919.
5. Map of the countries bordering the Mediterranean Sea, National Geographic Magazine.
6. Map of Europe showing countries as established by the Peace Conference at Paris, National Geographic Magazine, 1920.
7. The physical map of Europe, National Geographic, December, 1918.
8. Map of the new Balkan States and Central Europe, National Geographic Magazine.

## *Gifts to the Society*

9. Map of Europe and adjoining portions of Africa and Asia, National Geographic Society, 1915.
10. Map of Los Angeles Harbor and vicinity, Harbor Dept. of the City of Los Angeles, November, 1918, revised to March 31, 1921. (2 copies).
11. Map of Los Angeles Harbor and vicinity, Harbor Dept. of the City of Los Angeles, May, 1923, revised to October, 1923, March, 1924.
12. Analysis of United States Shipping Board Statistics of Intercoastal Commerce for the three months from July 1 to September 30, 1923, by Clarence H. Matson.
13. Bird's Eye View of Los Angeles Harbor showing present development and proposed improvements, Harbor Bond Campaign Committee of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce.
14. Map of Africa, National Geographic Magazine, 1909.
15. Gillespie's Guide to Street and House Number Directory, 1925. (2 copies). Map only.
16. Gillespie's Guide to Street and Car Directory, 1924. 1923. Map only.
17. Irrigation Map of Southern California to accompany report on the irrigation resources of Southern California, prepared in cooperation with the Conservation Commission of California, 1912.
18. The Earth Movements in the California Earthquake of 1906, by Hayford and Baldwin, being appendix number 3, report for 1907.

LEONORE ROWLAND. La Puente — Photograph of Enrique Avila, received from Mr. Elvis R. Foster of Walnut, California, on Oct. 27, 1949.

RUSSELL SIMMONS (of "Sunkist" at the request of Mrs. John C. Wolfskill) : *"Scurvy in the Gold Rush"* by Anthony J. Lorenz. (Yale University Press, 1957. Reprinted from *Journal of the History of Medicine and Allied Sciences*, Vol. 12, No. 4) — A valuable paper by an authority in this field, who has studied the subject widely and quotes from many other authorities. Compares the Gold Rush Migration to the Crusades of Europe in the Middle Ages.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA PRESS. *"Human Geography and Ecology in the Sinu Country of Colombia."* by R. LeRoy Gordon (Univ. of Calif. Press, Berkeley, 1957.) 177 pp., illustrated, notes, bibliography, maps. Deals with the Chocó Indians.

*"Historical Landmarks of the State of California, listed by Counties,"* by California State Park Commission, as of October, 1956. 39 pp., mimeographed, no covers.

*"A Map of the Marked Historical Sites of California."* by Automobile Club of Southern California, 1952. Contains note of explanation by Phil Townsend Hanna. Shows 496 of sites on map.

# *Our* Diamond Anniversary Year

The year 1958 marks the seventy-fifth anniversary of the founding of the *Historical Society of Southern California*. The Society is planning an active program for the remainder of the year and hopes that all members will participate in these events. Among the most outstanding of the coming events are the *Annual Trek* to a historic site, the *Birthday Celebration of the City of Los Angeles* and, for the November meeting, a *Diamond Anniversary* celebration, commemorating the founding of the Society.

Society President Gustave O. Arlt will again chairman the City's annual birthday fiesta and celebration at the Plaza on September 4. While this is a civic function, held under the auspices of the Los Angeles city government, Society members are always prominent in their attendance and assistance with this historic celebration.

November will mark the *Diamond Anniversary Month* of the founding of the *Historical Society of Southern California*. Program Chairman Frank B. Putnam is now making plans for an unusual and entertaining program that will appropriately mark this important milestone in the Society's history.

Throughout this *Diamond Anniversary* year there will be a continuing drive for new members of the Society. K. L. Carver, Membership Committee chairman, has added many new and active members to his committee in an effort to build the membership rolls up to at least 1,000. It has been suggested that if each member would recommend just one new member during the year that our goal of 1,000 could easily be surpassed.

Membership in the Society is a privilege that most history-minded people welcome. The QUARTERLY, in itself, is worth the Annual Membership fee of \$10.00, and that, added to the privilege of participation in Society events and attending its monthly meetings makes membership even more enhancing. Members who desire to sponsor a relative, friend or acquaintance need only to send



### *Our Diamond Anniversary Year*

that person's name and mailing address to Executive Secretary Guy E. Marion, 1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California, and an invitation to join will be sent promptly to the nominee. Recommendations need not be limited to one person at a time. Members may sponsor as many prospective members as they personally feel will be interested in objectives of the Society, its meeting, its activities and the QUARTERLY. According to the By-Laws each new member must be sponsored by two active Society members.

## IN MEMORIAM

The Society feels deeply the loss by death of Members Mrs. Marshall Stimson, the venerated Joseph Scott, Attorney Maynard McFie, and Judge Hartley Shaw.

Mrs. Stimson passed away on June 12, 1957. She was the wife of Attorney Marshall Stimson who died on December 27, 1951. The Stimsons were active members of the Society since he first joined in the early thirties. Both served on the Board of Directors and on many special committee assignments. Of notable service to the Society was Mr. Stimson's legal service (in association with Past Director Oscar Lawler) in carrying the matter of the funds of the Pioneer Society to the Supreme Court of the United States and winning a decision in favor of this Society. Generations of members of the Society yet to come will benefit from this unselfish service. Mrs. Stimson succeeded her husband on the Board of Directors and, in her own right, served well and faithfully until the time of her death.

Joseph Scott, "Mr. Los Angeles," passed away on March 24, 1958, at the age of ninety. Little more can be added to the eulogies that have been written about this noble and humble man. But be it said, in regard to the Society, that he contributed much to the history of Southern California and that, in the future, he will be eulogized efficiently in stories that shall be printed about him and his activities when the QUARTERLY records fully the period of history that his active life covered. Mr. Scott was an able attorney, a staunch churchman, a participant in many civic undertakings a past president of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce.

Attorney Maynard McFie, before his passing, saw fit to will certain valuable possessions to the Society for safe - keeping. He served on the Board of Directors for a short time and was an active member of the Society for thirty-five years, having joined in 1923. He was a Past President of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce. His death occurred on March 28, 1958.

Judge Hartley Shaw died on a trip to New Zealand on April 15, 1958. His membership dated from 1936 and through the years he had been a frequent attendant at Society meetings. Both he and Mrs. Shaw attended the old Los Angeles High School. He was Judge of the Superior Court of Los Angeles for thirty-three years.

# PUBLICATIONS

*of the*  
***Historical Society of***  
***Southern California***

1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California

*Telephone REpublic 4-2823*



1892 — Annual Containing the Sutro  
 Documents with translations - - each \$3.00

1931 — One Hundred Fiftieth Anni-  
 versary Special Publication  
 (Annual for 1931) - - - - - each \$5.00

All other numbers of Annual  
 Publications - - - - - each \$2.50

A limited number of sets of Annuals  
 (1892 - 1934, inclusive) are  
 available - - - - - per set \$75.00

These sets do not include An-  
 nuals for 1895, 1924 or 1933,  
 which are out of print.

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
 members - - - - - per run \$8.00

Individual single numbers to  
 members - - - - - each \$2.00

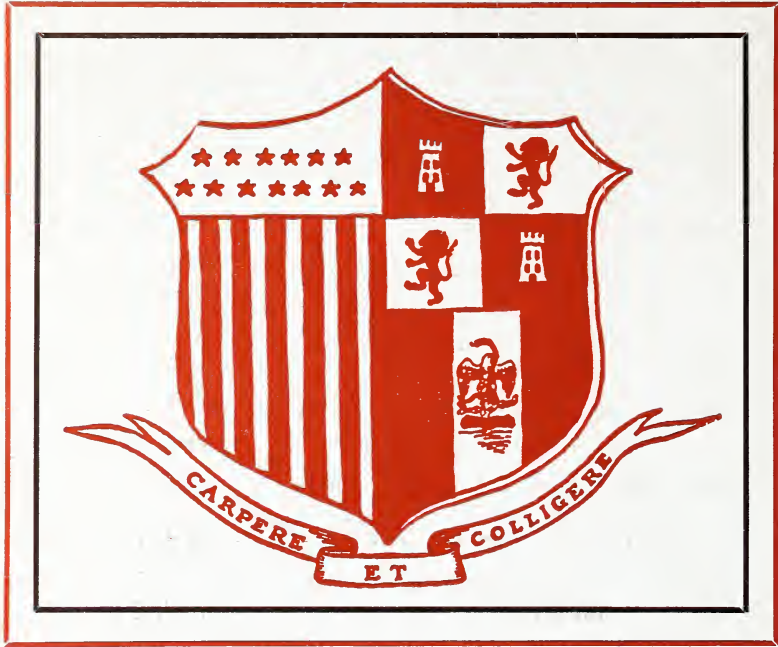
Individual double numbers to  
 members - - - - - each \$3.00

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
 non-members - - - - - per run \$10.00

Individual single numbers to  
 non-members - - - - - each \$3.00

Individual double numbers to  
 non-members - - - - - each \$4.00





June, 1958

Vol. XL — No. 2

1883 — Celebrating Our — 1958  
DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY YEAR

*The*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

# QUARTERLY



— Rockwell D. Hunt collection.

COMMODORE JOHN DRAKE SLOAT

(See "Fifteen Decisive Events of California History"—page 99)

**T**HE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for three-quarters of a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 the *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published each March, June, September and December.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to make the *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms are always welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

*The Society's Purposes and Objectives are:*

- To sponsor and encourage observances of historic dates and anniversaries;
- To preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest with particular stress on Southern California;
- To assist in the marking and restoration of landmarks which inspire interest and respect for events, persons and customs of the past;
- To promote activity in the conservation of public records, historical documents, newspapers, museum material and related Californiana;
- To preserve, as an aid to business and industry, business records, industrial and transportation history and the use of historic material in public relations;
- To encourage the increased use of history in the schools, to the end that there shall be developed a greater interest in, respect for, and loyalty to our American institutions;
- To publish material of permanent historic interest and significance;
- To assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities;
- To hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles (except during the summer months) at which persons of recognized authority in their respective subjects appear as guest speakers, followed by refreshments and a social hour;
- To gather at least once each year in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

*This Society is a public non-profit corporation. The principal sources of revenue for its operations and maintenance are from membership dues, contributions and bequests. It renders a needed public service and is worthy of your support.*

**MEMBERSHIP CLASSIFICATIONS:**

*(Dues include one subscription to the QUARTERLY)*

<i>Life Member</i> .....	\$200.00	<i>Sustaining Member</i> .....	\$ 25.00
<i>Patron Member</i> .....	100.00	<i>Active Member</i> .....	10.00

*Membership dues and contributions to the Society are deductible income tax items.*

*Articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the QUARTERLY, and general society correspondence should be addressed to the temporary headquarters:*

**THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA**

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary*

1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California

Telephone REpublic 4-2823



*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

**QUARTERLY**



— Courtesy Los Angeles County Museum.

EULALIA PEREZ DE GUILLEN DE MARINE

(See "*Searching for the Birth-Date of Eulalia Pérez  
de Guillén de Mariné*"—page 180)

*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

**QUARTERLY**

---

VOLUME XL

June, 1958

NUMBER 2

---

CONTENTS:

FIFTEEN DECISIVE EVENTS OF CALIFORNIA HISTORY—PART II	99
<i>By Rockwell D. Hunt</i>	
THE FOURTH ESTATE IN OLD TUOLUMNE . . . . .	120
<i>By Helen Rocca Goss</i>	
THE RESIDENT NEOPHYTES OF THE CALIFORNIA MISSIONS, (1769 - 1834) . . . . .	138
<i>By J. N. Bowman</i>	
MINING CAMPS OF THE SOLEDAD . . . . .	149
<i>By Arthur B. Perkins</i>	
CHARLES HENRY BRINLEY: <i>A Case Study in</i> <i>Rancho Supervision</i> . . . . .	174
<i>By John C. Hough</i>	
SEARCHING FOR THE BIRTH DATE OF EULALIA PEREZ DE GUILLEN DE MARINE . . . . .	180
<i>By Marie Northrop</i>	
BOOK REVIEWS . . . . .	185
ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY . . . . .	188
GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY . . . . .	194
NEW MEMBERS . . . . .	195
NOTES FROM THE SECRETARY . . . . .	196

---

The HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, 1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

---



# The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

## *Officers, Directors and Committees for 1958*

### OFFICERS:

GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *President*

JUSTIN G. TURNER, *First Vice-President*

FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Second Vice-President and Treasurer*

ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary Emeritus*

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary and Curator*

### DIRECTORS:

Gustave O. Arlt	Mrs. J. M. Northrop
JOSEPH J. LA BARBERA	Ana Begue de Packman
K. L. Carver	Frank B. Putnam
Dwight L. Clarke	W. W. Robinson
Edmond F. Ducommun	Andrew F. Rolle
Colin M. Gair	Miss Grace S. Stoermer
Lorrin L. Morrison	Justin G. Turner
Marco R. Newmark	Mrs. Thomas E. Workman

### STANDING COMMITTEES:

*Executive Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; Edmond F. Ducommun, Justin G. Turner, Frank B. Putnam, W. W. Robinson.

*Program Committee:* FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer, Andrew F. Rolle.

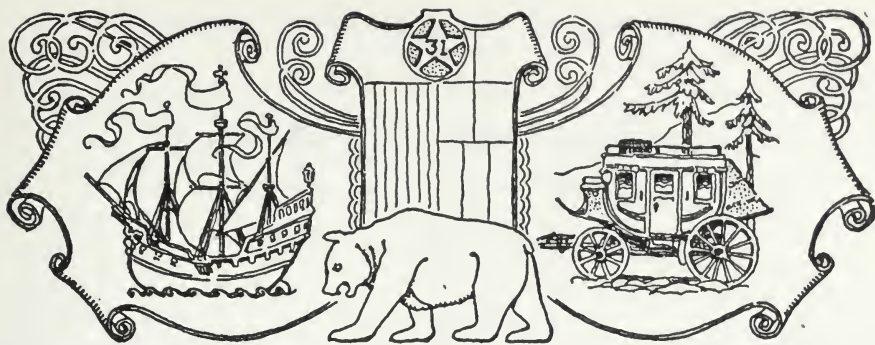
*Publication Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; W. W. Robinson, Justin G. Turner, K. L. Carver, Dwight L. Clarke, Edmond F. Ducommun, Lorrin L. Morrison, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Membership Committee:* K. L. CARVER, *Chairman*; Lorrin L. Morrison, Mrs. J. M. Northrop, Joseph J. La Barbera, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Harold Oswald, Frank B. Putnam, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman, George L. Swartz, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, George S. Moffatt, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Gifts Committee:* MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; GUY E. MARION, *Curator*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, H. H. West, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill.

*Landmarks Committee:* EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba, A. B. Perkins, Miss Ann Patton, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.

*Hostesses of the Social Hour:* MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN and MRS. BEATRICE SABICHI MITCHELL, *Co-chairmen*; Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Mrs. Ernest Yorba, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.



GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Pictorial Editor*

---

*The Historical Society of Southern California* QUARTERLY for June, 1958

---

# Fifteen Decisive Events *of* California History

*By*  
**Rockwell D. Hunt**




## Part II

---

**AUTHOR'S NOTE:** My attention has been called to two little slips in PART I of this work: On page 8, *Chapter Two*, the text should of course read, "Serra, a native of the village of Petra, on the island of Mallorca." At the top of page 13 the text should read, "They made their way through San Gorgonio Pass, and recently in San Carlos Pass a tablet was placed." — R. D. Hunt.

*Chapter Four*

## **The Overland Expedition of Jedediah Strong Smith to California, 1826**

HE FUR TRAPPERS OF THE THIRD AND FOURTH DECADES of the nineteenth century were the real forerunners of the American migration to California, indeed, of the great Westward Movement of American history. As true pioneers of the Far Western frontiersmen, they must be accorded a unique place in our annals, "pathfinders for the course of empire to the western sea." Of all the breed of hardy, heroic mountain men, fascinated by the danger, violence, and high adventure of daily life, away from kin, lonely, facing peril at every turn but heeding the siren call of the stream of mountain and meadow, stands boldly erect one young pathfinder of the pioneers, pre-eminent among his fellows, destined to win immortality for his part in the great drama of the opening of the West. This young man, like a robust, towering titan, piercing the sky, holds his place grandly alone, because of what he was and what he did for California and the great West. His name was Jedediah Strong Smith.

Consider well this young man. A native of Chenango County, New York, in 1799, of Scotch ancestry, and strict religious parents, he was the oldest of thirteen sons and daughters. While a mere child he saw something of the Canadian fur traders: when twenty years old he moved to St. Louis, chief center of the American fur trade. Then came the real beginning of his spectacular career. Glimpses of this young man are afforded by a personal letter by a descendant of the family:

He was said to be a powerful man physically. No weakling could have wielded his two-pound ax in fights with Indians, as he used it. He stood six feet two in his moccasins, straight as an arrow, with sandy hair and blue eyes. Generally when on the trail he was clad in buckskin . . . He carried at his belt two pistols, single shot, after the model of the time. His Hawkins rifle was always handy, but in the saddle he wore his quiver of arrows and bow.

This upstanding prince of the wilderness was deeply devoted to his Protestant Christian faith. Because he always carried with him a copy of the Bible, he was given the nickname, "Bible Toter." His religious faith sustained him in many an hour of dire extremity, when there seemed to be no other help. There can be no doubt he earnestly sought to lead the life of a brave Christian gentleman.



## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

The story of his unparalleled trek to California and beyond has been told again and again — it has become a classic in our Western lore. He had become a partner of William Ashley, and was eager to explore the unspoiled new country, “where the fur had not been mostly trapped off already.” It was in the late summer of 1823, under Major Andrew Henry, that the party set out on the alluring enterprise that resulted in making them far more than mere trappers and traders. From that beginning, “They were the empire builders of the West.”

Hearing of the attractions of the Great Valley of California, Smith resolved, three years later, to head boldly for the San Joaquin. From the rendezvous near Salt Lake City, therefore, in the late autumn, he set out, at the head of a band of fifteen young men. It was in late November, 1826, having met and surmounted many difficulties, that Smith and his men encamped near Mission San Gabriel — the first Americans actually to enter California by way of an overland route from the United States.

No need to recount here the problems he encountered in a foreign land, then a province of the Republic of Mexico. The very presence of the Americans was technically in direct violation of the old Spanish law — they had no special license from Mexico City. But Father José Sánchez, in charge of the mission, was attracted to Jedediah Smith and between them there sprang up a warm friendship. Harrison Rogers, clerk of the company, had these kind words for the old Franciscan missionary: “I ever shall hold him as a man of God, taking us when in distress, feeding and clothing us, and may God prosper him and all such men . . .”

But Smith did not fare so well at the hands of Governor Echeandía, at San Diego; for the governor was convinced that the trapper was illegally in California — he sensed the real significance of Smith’s expedition more clearly than the trapper himself. Only after certain Boston traders then in the port vouched for Smith’s papers and his character, did he grant him permission to leave the province.

The travels and activities of Smith during the following two or three years are, if possible, even more astounding than the trip to California. From the middle of January, 1827, the Smith story is thrilling in the extreme. His extensive trapping of the San Joaquin and its tributaries, his attempt to get across the high Sierras in mid-winter and return to his headquarters, his return to California involving almost inconceivable difficulty and frightful distress, then his venturing into new and strange territory in the far north, through Humboldt and Del Norte Counties, and even into Oregon

territory — this story of this amazing man is truly fantastic, far stranger than fiction. Here's a single illustration: one day six hours were required to get the horses down a certain point, "some of them falling about 50 feet perpendicular down a steep place into a creek; one broke his back . . ." Finally, Vancouver was reached, but only with a portion of Smith's men. Dr. John McLoughlin, chief factor of the Hudson's Bay Company, received them most kindly — there they spent the winter.

It is said that Smith resolved, after all these experiences, never to engage in fur trapping and trading again. But the lure of the wild proved too powerful for him: in 1831 he again joined a group of former associates with the express purpose of entering the Santa Fé trade. What proved to be Jedediah Smith's final journey was undertaken after passing several days without water for either men or horses, in an attempt to locate the Cimarron River. Having at length found the bed of the river, then it was that Smith was treacherously killed by a band of bloodthirsty Comanches, who had been in hiding about the water hole. Death took him May 27, 1831.

He had not been wholly absorbed in pursuing his own personal gain: he showed deep interest in informing the government at Washington of his extensive travels and observations. For example, an important letter dated at St. Louis, October 29, 1830, prepared by himself and partners (Jackson and Sublette) indicates that they deemed "it important to communicate to the government . . ." In the beginning of 1830, the letter continues, "it was determined to try wagons, and in the month of April last, . . . a caravan of ten wagons, drawn by five mules each, and two dearborns, drawn by one mule each, set out from St. Louis." After crossing the Kansas River and working up the Great Platte, they reached the Rocky Mountains, as far as they wished the wagons to go. "This was the first time," the letter continues, "that wagons ever went to the Rocky Mountains, and the ease and safety with which it was done proved the facility of communicating with the Pacific Ocean." It was such rare experience and remarkable prescience that made Jedediah Smith a pioneer before the pioneers, a conqueror before the conquest.

The centenary of the coming of Jedediah Smith to California was appropriately celebrated by the schools of the state, under Superintendent of Public Instruction Will C. Wood, who urged "Every citizen of California and particularly every teacher and pupil in the California schools should know the story of his coming . . ." Under his direction a pamphlet was prepared containing a reprint of Noel J. Breed's "Story of Jedediah Smith," for special use in all the schools. Breed points out that Smith's greatest distinction is "that

## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

he discovered the overland trail route to California and marked the trail that was so well known in 1848 . . ." The *Historical Society of Southern California* also took special notice of the Smith Centenary. Plans were initiated many months in advance of the actual occasion: numerous organizations, including the *Pioneer Society of Los Angeles County*, *Native Sons of the Golden West*, *Daughters of the American Revolution*, and *Federation of Women's Clubs*, gave active cooperation; many historical societies were invited to participate. An important permanent result of this celebration is seen in the *Historical Society of Southern California ANNUAL Publication* for 1926, which includes a carefully prepared bibliography by A. P. Nasatir. Preceding the official Centenary, a fifteen-ton granite boulder, brought from Cajon Pass, was fittingly unveiled on Lincoln's birthday, 1924, at Carthay Center, in the outskirts of Los Angeles, bearing the inscription:

DEDICATED TO JEDEDIAH STRONG SMITH  
PATHFINDER OF THE SIERRAS

Only recently an organization bearing the name of *Jedediah Smith Society* has been formed at Stockton, "to further extend the records of this great man." Its first fall Rendezvous was held at the College of the Pacific, October 12, 1957. On the 12th of November, 1955, the *Sacramento County Historical Society* unveiled a marker dedicated to Jedediah Strong Smith, located on Jedediah Smith Street on the campus of the Sacramento State College. The address of the occasion was delivered by Allan Ottley, secretary of the Society. The inscription on the marker reads:

Jedediah Strong Smith brave mountain man journeyed through this area with his trappers in the winter of 1827-1828 and crossed the American River near this point.

In celebrating the Centenary of Smith's first arrival in 1826, Southern California made merited acknowledgment, though belatedly, "to a great man who had a great vision and who accomplished a great task." It was pointed out that the Arrowhead Trail, the Union Pacific Railroad, and the Air Mail "all follow the same general route over which Smith proceeded from Salt Lake City to Southern California." His path was followed by the Mormon migration; countless thousands of automobiles now annually glide over the mountains and deserts he traversed with infinite labor.

But his influence reached far beyond the limits of Southern California — outreached the borders of all California, and extended even to the history of the nation. He was one of the most genuine, most heroic pioneers of the nineteenth century. His active career

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

was indeed short, but his fame is imperishable. Allan Ottley has summarized his specific contributions:

1. The first to make effective use of the famous South Pass.
2. The first to cross what is now Utah from north to south and west to east.
3. The first to make his way overland from the American frontier to the California coast.
4. The first to conquer the Sierra Nevada.
5. The first to explore the Pacific Coast by land from San Diego almost to British Columbia.

This brief summary reveals at once the heroic deeds of the man and the decisive character of his incredible achievements. Take him all in all, Jed. Smith, "Bible Toter," "Knight in Buckskin," Mountain Man *par excellence*, "Forerunner of the American Pioneers," stands unique in our annals, for what he did and what he was.

(See Selected Bibliography, page 118)



## **Mission of Archibald H. Gillespie; Fremont's Return to California, 1846**



JAMES K. POLK WAS ELECTED PRESIDENT of the United States in November, 1844, on a platform declaring for the annexation of Texas. When he entered upon his administration in March of the following year, his heart was set on the accomplishment of four major objectives during his administration: a substantial reduction of the tariff, the establishment of an independent treasury, the settlement of the long-standing Oregon question, and the acquisition of California — our chief concern here. While the last of these objectives was actually achieved, the course of events leading to the acquisition was devious and complicated, both nationally and locally.

California, a province of the Republic of Mexico, had come to be thought of as a capital prize for some other power, chief contestants being England, France, and the United States. Russia had been virtually eliminated by her withdrawal from Fort Ross. Without question the United States enjoyed special advantages, being in the same continent, with some hundreds of aggressive settlers, loyal to the *Stars and Stripes*, already on the ground. The culmination came in the year 1846, which Bernard de Voto has called "The Year of Decision."

Polk vigorously promoted his policy. His first hope was to purchase the province of California; but three alternative methods presented themselves: (1) a revolt of leading Californians against Mexican authority, aided by willing American settlers; (2) patient delay and watchful waiting, while more and more Americans were infiltrating the province; (3) forcible seizure in the event of war with Mexico, which was already imminent. It was well known that the tenure of Mexico was extremely weak.

John C. Frémont, whose personality and public career were among the most enigmatic in all our annals, was to become the central figure in the actual conquest of California. The first of his series of western expeditions, in 1842, brought him no further than the Rocky Mountains. The second, in 1843 and 1844, continued on the Oregon Trail to the Dalles, then south, fringing the east side of the Cascade Mountains and the Sierra Nevadas, then crossing the mountains over Carson Pass and into California proper. Sutter's

Fort was reached March 8, 1844. After resting and purchasing needed supplies at the Fort, the party made its way through the San Joaquin Valley, passed through Tehachapi Pass, then returned to the United States by the old Spanish Trail.

But it was Frémont's third expedition, beginning in the spring of 1845, that proved to be of vital concern in relation to the actual conquest. At the end of the year he entered California at the head of sixty well-armed, sturdy men — surveyors, guides, assistants — with a large band of horses, a well equipped exploring expedition. Pointing out that the men were "citizens and not soldiers," he was able to obtain permission to conduct explorations toward the Colorado River, on condition that he would keep back from the populated coast. When he failed to give heed to this condition, General José Castro decided he was acting in bad faith, therefore angrily issued peremptory orders to Frémont to leave the country. The haughty pathfinder characteristically "peremptorily refused compliance to an order insulting to my government and myself." Then followed the march to Hawk's (Gavilan) Peak, the hasty erection of fortifications, and the raising of the American flag, March 5, 1846.

A few days later, while Castro was making preparations to dislodge him, Frémont withdrew, before any actual attack was made, retired "slowly and growlingly" to the north, and after a brief stay at Sutter's Fort, proceeded on the way to Oregon, en route for the United States. No attempt at pursuit was made by the Mexican forces. On reaching the Klamath Falls region in southern Oregon, Frémont found his further progress hindered and delayed by hostile Indians. Then it was that an event of the highest importance to the history of California occurred, an event that has perhaps involved more discussion and aroused more controversy than any other single event in our history.

It was the "Gillespie Mission" and Frémont's decision following his receipt of the messages from Washington. As the sequel shows, much depended on that decision. Precisely what the secret message was has been discussed again and again; it caused no end of controversy and speculation. But the important thing is that it brought Frémont to a decision to come back at once into California instead of continuing on his return to the United States; and his reappearance in California resulted quickly in his becoming the central figure of the American conquest. From that time he is to be thought of as a soldier, not merely an explorer. Something out of the ordinary seemed imminent. When he made camp in the vicinity of the Marysville Buttes, the settlers flocked to see him, filled with curiosity and excitement, eager for a leader in their mounting de-

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

sire for American sway. Rumors, some of them entirely baseless in fact, spread with great rapidity. Frémont's very presence in the Sacramento Valley was a signal for some overt act of hostility, in spite of the fact that he was to hold himself in readiness at a convenient point in the event of a definite break between the United States and Mexico. He was convinced that war was highly probable, if not inevitable. And it must always be remembered that there was then no quick means of communication between Washington and California.

At this point it is appropriate to introduce another prominent leader, Thomas O. Larkin, who had come to California in 1832, and who in 1843 had been appointed by the President as United States Consul to California. Larkin kept himself thoroughly conversant with the political and social conditions in the province; some afterward even referred to him as "the pioneer of the acquisition," because of his watchfulness of the threatening movements of England and France. But his was a consistent policy of conciliation with the Hispanic residents in California. He clearly perceived the tenuous hold of the Mexican government on the northern province; also he knew that some of the most capable native leaders, including General M. G. Vallejo, had come to feel that a complete change of loyalty was in the offing, and that it would be better to cast in their lot with the United States than with any European power. In short, Larkin was devoted to the idea of a peaceful acquisition, involving no military operation and no bloodshed, and there can be no doubt that real progress was being made. Just how this plan would have succeeded, if Frémont had not returned with military aspect will of course never be known. As it was, the American conquest became a phase of the Mexican War. But Larkin should be given generous credit for his ideal of peaceful conciliation, though his role was far less spectacular than that of Frémont.

What has been called the first act of war leading to the actual conquest was the seizure in early June, 1846, of a large band of Mexican government horses, being driven from Sonoma to Santa Clara Valley by way of Sutter's Fort, by a small party of Americans, headed by Ezekiel Merritt, who found it easy to believe that the horses were to be used in an expedition against themselves. The horses were taken to Frémont's camp. Naturally the seizure of the horses had to be followed by something else. That was the Bear Flag episode, which opened in the early morning of June 14. The details need not be repeated here — the rather ludicrous arrest of General M. G. Vallejo, the impromptu organization effected under the leadership of William B. Ide, the creation of the Bear Flag Re-



public and raising of the flag, and organizing of three small companies under captains Henry L. Ford, Granville P. Swift, and Samuel J. Hensley. Frémont, as an officer of the United States Army, though not an active party in the Bear Flag movement itself, was kept in close touch with everything that was happening, and in general it may be said that the course of events had at least his tacit approval. Just what the Bear Flag Republic would have done, and how it would have eventuated, are matters of pure speculation — nobody knows. But in less than a single month the movement came to an end, to the great relief of all concerned. It is clear, however, that the capture of the horses and the Bear Flag incident had definitely nullified Thomas Larkin's plans for the acquisition of California by peaceful means and patient diplomacy.

It was the raising of the American Flag by Commodore John D. Sloat over the old Custom House at Monterey, as told in the following chapter, that put a quietus on the activities of the Bear men and that gave the signal for the actual conquest by the United States. Just what would have been the course of Sloat if Frémont had not returned and if there had been no Bear Flag, is another subject for speculation.

For the actual completion of the conquest, under the general command of Sloat's successor, Commodore Robert F. Stockton, Frémont was commissioned a major, in charge of the land forces, known as the California Battalion of Mounted Riflemen. The ease with which the first conquest was achieved is reflected in a statement made afterward by John Bidwell, an officer in the battalion: "We simply marched all over California, from Sonoma to San Diego, and raised the American flag without opposition or protest. We tried to find an enemy, but could not."

The reconquest of southern California was completed by the so-called battles of the San Gabriel River, and La Mesa, in early January, 1847; and hostilities were formally ended by the Capitulation of Cahuenga, on the 13th of January, when Andres Pico surrendered, not to Kearny, but to Frémont, who was on the way south from Monterey with a force of 400 men. Frémont apparently did not question his authority to negotiate terms of surrender, which were mild and considerate, and well calculated to enhance the prestige and popularity of the "Pathfinder." However, the practical result of peace having been achieved, the terms of capitulation were quietly acquiesced in. Walter Colton pronounced the terms of the "California Appomattox" to be "liberal in spirit, wise in their purpose, and just in their application." "With this treaty of Cahuenga hostilities ended," wrote Frémont years later, "and California was



### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

left in our possession, to be finally secured to us by the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo in 1848, thus becoming ours by purchase as well as by conquest and by treaty.”

Frémont sought to identify himself closely with the new state of California; and with the powerful backing of his father-in-law, United States Senator Thomas H. Benton of Missouri, and the universal popularity of his talented wife, Jessie Benton Frémont, he held a place of great prominence in the public life of the young state. He and William M. Gwin were selected as California's first United States senators. The climax of his political career was reached when in 1856 he won the first Republican nomination for the presidency of the nation, to be defeated by his Democratic rival, James Buchanan, even in his own state.

(See Selected Bibliography, page 118)

*Chapter Six*

**Raising the American Flag at Monterey  
on July 7, 1846, by  
Commodore John Drake Sloat**



WHEN COMMODORE SLOAT REACHED MONTEREY on the second day of July, 1846, he had no intention of repeating the mistake that had been made by Commodore Thomas ap Catesby Jones on the twentieth day of October, 1842. The premature seizure by Jones was a rather ludicrous performance. There was no hint of any opposition by the insignificant Mexican forces. When, a day or two later, the Commodore had convinced himself that his nation was not at war with Mexico, he ordered the American flag to be hauled down, the Mexican flag restored, and, with such grace as the awkward situation permitted, he apologized to the Mexican *comandante*, fired a salute in honor of his flag and sailed away.

But much had happened since 1842. The slight tenure by which Mexico held California was clearly perceived — some of the leading Californians were even ready to welcome a change of flags. Mexico's relations with the United States had become increasingly critical, largely because of the complex Texas question, complicated by British interests. It required but little prescience to discern the signs of the times — California had come to be looked upon as a capital prize, sure to fall, in the course of a short period of time, into the hands of some outside power — as told on a previous page.

After the withdrawal of the Russians from Fort Ross, about New Year's day, 1841, Russia ceased to be a real contender for the prize. The three great power interested were England, France, and the United States. Lord Aberdeen acknowledged that California's separation from Mexico was probably inevitable. The government was urged to increase the British naval strength in the Pacific waters. Packenham wrote to Lord Palmerton, recommending a plan looking toward the ultimate acquisition of California, "the magnificent Territory," by Great Britain. That Sir George Seymour, commander of the British squadron, like certain other British officials, personally desired to see steps taken to acquire California admits of no doubt. Packenham urged that the prize should not be permitted to "fall into the hands of any power but England." While the British government was averse to stirring up a revolution, it was not unwilling "to accept the fruits of that revolution if they should fortunately fall into British hands." We must conclude that while England was unwilling to pursue an aggressive policy, many

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

Englishmen did earnestly and quite naturally desire the acquisition.

As to France, Duflot de Mofrat, who visited the coast in 1841, noted the Frenchmen residing in California, referred to Ft. Ross, with its beautiful gardens, in its "superb position," laying emphasis on the French character of certain features of New Helvetia, and calling attention to the near identity of French and Spanish religion and temperament. During the years following 1840, France maintained in the Pacific eight armed vessels. However, the Monroe Doctrine, announced by the United States, interposed a formidable obstacle against French — and likewise, English — aggression. After all, was California worth a war? European powers were convinced that the Monroe Doctrine would be firmly maintained by the vigorous young American Republic.

Thought of the acquisition of California by the United States dates back at least to the time of President Andrew Jackson. Under President Tyler, acquisition by purchase was actively considered. Waddy Thompson, with his eye fixed on San Francisco Bay, "capacious enough to receive the navies of all the world," while favoring acquisition, dreaded most of all the possible acquisition by England. "It will be worth a war of twenty years," he declared, "to prevent England from acquiring it."

Thoughtful Americans came to believe that California would fall either to the United States or England. President Polk entered upon his administration in 1845 with the definite resolution of winning the prize. In the meantime, the favorable geographic conditions, the increasing numbers of energetic, loyal American settlers in California, and the growing force of the intangible "Manifest Destiny," all backed up by a firm national policy, gave the United States a highly favored position in the race for the capital prize.

Commodore Sloat made no haste about raising the American flag at Monterey. He held extended conferences with Larkin, received dispatches from the interior as to the posture of current events, learned of the arrest of General Vallejo at Sonoma, the formation of the Bear Flag Republic and the activities of Captain Frémont. He deliberated carefully, determined to take no false step. George Bancroft, Secretary of the Navy, had instructed Sloat to seize San Francisco and other harbors, in the event of war with Mexico. No doubt the solicitude concerning possible English designs then felt at Washington was shared by the Commodore. Many critics have charged him with vacillation and indecision because he did not immediately raise the flag. Others stood with his admiring biographer Major Edwin A. Sherman in thus staunchly defending him:



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

With one eye on the sea to watch for the arrival of the British fleet and the other on the land, he prepared his plans like a skilful general and acted with cool discretion and deliberation accordingly and in strict conformity with his orders.

There was no *hesitation* or *wavering* about performing his duty, whatever.

There is evidence that Sloat was dissatisfied and distressed when he learned that Frémont had acted on his own authority, he having "acted upon the faith" of Frémont's operations in the north.

There is no doubt that Sloat did have positive knowledge of hostilities on the Rio Grande, really a part of the war with Mexico. But he did not know of "any formal declaration of war" between the two nations, and the knowledge he did have had not come from his superiors at Washington. Determined to act in accordance with his instructions, after careful deliberation, in the light of ascertained information and conditions, he decided to proceed: then, at ten o'clock in the morning of July 7, 1846, 250 marines and seamen were landed under Captain Mervine, marched directly to the Custom House, where the Commodore's proclamation was read, the flag of the United States was raised, cheers were given by troops and spectators, and a salute of twenty-one guns was fired from each American vessel. Formal possession of the territory of California had thus been taken.

From the log book of midshipman Robert Carson Duvall we learn the details of the momentous event. The Commodore's instructions to the landing forces were explicit and thorough, and were in part as follows:

We are now about to land on the Territory of Mexico with whom the U. S. is at war; to strike their flag and hoist our own, in the place of it, is our duty. It is not only our duty to take California, but to preserve it afterwards as a part of the U. S. at all hazards. To accomplish this it is of first importance to cultivate the good opinion of the inhabitants whom we must reconcile. I scarcely consider it necessary for me to caution American seamen and marines against the detestable crime of plunder and maltreating unoffending inhabitants . . .

The Commodore's orders concluded with these earnest words: "Finally, let me entreat you one and all not to tarnish our brightest hopes of success, by any act that we shall be ashamed to acknowledge before God and our Country."

The decision had been made, the die cast. The American flag had been raised, this time not to be pulled down again, signaling as it did the actual conquest of California, which was thenceforth to be an integral portion of the United States, first by actual conquest, then by virtue of the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo.



— Rockwell D. Hunt collection.

COMMODORE ROBERT F. STOCKTON



THOMAS O. LARKIN.

— Rockwell D. Hunt collection.

## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

What might have happened if Sloat had failed to make the momentous decision, no man can know: the future of the Bear Flag Republic was highly precarious; the prospect for an independent American republic on the Pacific with promise of dignity and stability was most problematical; local bickerings and emotional outbursts, while foreign forces were interested on-lookers, militated against any early solution favorable either to the United States or to the local inhabitants. But Commodore Sloat's firm decision to raise the American flag and preserve California "afterward as a part of the United States at all hazards" afforded the Bear men opportunity speedily and happily to dissolve the hastily formed Bear Flag Republic, left no valid reason for the erection of a Pacific republic, and served final notice to European powers that the time had passed when any one of them could hope to acquire the capital prize — California.

The details of the actual conquest under Stockton, Frémont and Kearny need not be repeated here. The fact that, taken together, it was an act in the drama of the war between Mexico and the United States is well known. The actual hostilities, very slight in themselves, were ended more than a year before the final treaty was signed, by the terms of which California became as much a part of the United States territory as any other part.

When one considers the remarkable history of California in the stirring years immediately following, and its consequential relationship to the great Republic of which it had become a part, the decisive character of Sloat's act in raising the American flag at Monterey takes on added significance, and at the same time affords a valid reason for enrolling Commodore John Drake Sloat in California's stately Hall of Fame. The Secretary of the Navy, in his commendatory statement reported that he had "observed the line of conduct prescribed to him, with such intelligence and fidelity that no complaint has ever been made of any unauthorized aggression on his part." Following his return to the east from California he was given several special assignments, and during the Civil War his devotion and loyalty were clearly manifested. Near the close of his life he was commissioned a rear admiral. Death came to him November 28, 1867, at the age of eighty-six. Today, overlooking beautiful Monterey Bay, stands his heroic monument — a fitting memorial made possible by the dedicated efforts of his admirer, Major Edwin A. Sherman.

(See Selected Bibliography, page 119)



Chapter Seven

**Discovery of Gold at Coloma  
by James Wilson Marshall on  
January 24, 1848**



FEW EVENTS IN MODERN TIMES have more profoundly influenced the current of human history than the discovery of gold by James Wilson Marshall, on the South Fork of the American River in California, on the 24th day of January, 1848. Not that the presence of gold in California had been unknown previous to that date; not that Marshall could by any measure be called a great or distinguished man!

As an illustration of just how ignorant and uninformed an early historian may be, Alexander Forbes, a British official at Tepic, published his *History of California* in 1839 — the first book in English specifically devoted to California, in which he said: "No minerals of particular importance have yet been found in Upper California, nor any appearance of metals." There are, however, well authenticated earlier instances of the knowledge and discovery of gold, particularly that by Francisco Lopez, a native Californian, in 1842, in Santa Feliciana Cañon, not far from the present site of Newhall, in southern California. But all such discoveries proved to be like the discovery of America by the Northmen — premature, without significant results. They were like striking a match in the dark: the match went out — all was dark again. Not so, the lucky find of Jim Marshall! His discovery lighted a torch, which by swift chain reaction started a great conflagration that has never gone out! Not only must the great gold discovery of 1848 be accorded a high place in the list of fifteen decisive events of California; it towers above all the others in its far-flung significance for the state, and in its reverberation heard around the world. It is in this great event, not anything in the days of the Spanish *conquistadores*; not in the establishment of the Franciscan missions by the devoted *padres*; not in the care-free life of the Arcadian days of "the splendid idle forties" — outposts to be sure, on the frontiers of European civilization — that the true culmination of early California history is to be found.

The story is a fascinating one. Jim Marshall, a young soldier of fortune, was a native of New Jersey. After receiving a fair education and being equipped with his father's trade of coach and wagon maker, he said good-bye to his parents and set his face toward the

## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

great West; and after many vicissitudes he reached Oregon territory, in the year 1844. At Willamette he joined a band of adventurous young men who were headed for California. In July of 1845 he arrived at Sutter's Fort, near the juncture of the American and Sacramento Rivers. His association with Sutter as an employee was destined to yield sensational results.

Lumber in California was very scarce, and little of it to be had at any price. Just what that fact had to do with the discovery of gold becomes apparent in what follows immediately.

On his arrival at New Helvetia, Marshall had no difficulty in finding employment under Captain Sutter. Then he undertook farming and stock raising on his own, but soon joined the Bear Flag Party, and a little later served under Frémont in the California Battalion, in the actual conquest of the territory. But in about a year he returned to the Fort, "barefoot and in a very sorry plight." He found that almost all his livestock had either been stolen or had strayed away — he had received no compensation for his war service. He presented a forlorn appearance, and was indeed happy to hire out again to Captain Sutter.

Since the demand for lumber had greatly increased, Sutter sent out an exploring party under Marshall, to search for good timber in a location that would be accessible, with convenient water power — a favorable site for the building of a saw mill. Sutter was to furnish the needed capital, Marshall to run the mill for one-fourth of the product as compensation. Marshall succeeded in locating an eligible spot on the South Fork of the American River. This was Coloma — called *Culloomah* by the Indians — located about forty-five miles north of east of Sutter's Fort. There the Marshall party of about a dozen men proceeded to build the mill.

The saw mill was virtually completed by January, 1848, and some selected timber was made ready for processing. But Sutter's Mill with startling suddenness became famous for something far different from the production of lumber. The tail-race was found to be too shallow to convey the volume of water required for the power wheel: hence water from the river was turned into the race and allowed to run each night to deepen the bed and widen the margins of the ditch. We are fortunate in having Marshall's own account of what happened. Here are his own words, telling of the momentous event:

One morning in January — it was a clear, cold morning — as I was taking my usual walk along the race after shutting off the water, my eye was caught with the glimpse of something shining in the bottom of the ditch. There was about a foot of water running then. I reached my hand down and picked it up; it made my heart

thump, for I was certain it was gold. The piece was about half the size and of the shape of a pea. After taking it out I sat down and began to think right hard. I thought it was gold, and yet it did not seem to be of the right color; . . . Putting one of the pieces on a hard river stone, I took another and commenced hammering it. It was soft and didn't break; it therefore must be gold, but largely mixed with some other metal, and very likely silver; for pure gold, I thought, would certainly have a brighter color . . . While we were working in the race after this discovery we always kept a sharp lookout, and in the course of three or four days we had picked up about three ounces — our work still progressing as lively as ever, for none of us imagined at that time that the whole country was sowed with gold.

The exact date of Marshall's discovery has been a subject of much controversy. An interesting illustration of the unreliability of memory as historical evidence is seen in Marshall's own letter published in 1856, stating he had found gold at Coloma "about the 19th" of January — later giving that as the precise date. This was readily disproved, however, by certain diary entries, especially that of Henry W. Bigler, a laborer at the mill, dated for Monday, January 24, which reads: "This day some kind of mettles was found in the tailrace that looks like goald, first discovered by James Martial the Boss of the Mill."

In anticipation of the Centennial of the Gold Discovery, the *California Historical Society* QUARTERLY, edited by Gladys C. Wickson, presented valuable papers bearing on the subject, as follows: "Introduction," by Joseph R. Knowland; "Sutter's Sawmill," by Aubrey Neasham; "Archaeological Investigation of Sutter Sawmill," by Robert F. Heizer; and "Artifacts from Excavation of Sutter's Sawmill," by Franklin Fenenga. Taken together these embrace perhaps the most important points bearing upon a much disputed subject. Though some persons may still be skeptical as to the exact dates, it is now quite generally agreed that the date of Marshall's momentous discovery was January 24, 1848. Regarding the decisive character of the event and its historical importance — locally, nationally, and internationally — there is no room for doubt or question. It was a great focal point, a grand climax in California history. It ushered in the unprecedented, unforgettable days of '49, it hastened the admission of the free Minerva-State into the Union, it was a prelude to the memorable struggle for social order in the development of the "Empire State of the Pacific."

The whole world knows the story, as told by Walter Colton in his *Three Years in California*:

. . . the blacksmith dropped his hammer, the carpenter his plane, the mason his trowel, the farmer his sickle, the baker his loaf, the



## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

tapster his bottle. All were off for the mines, some on horses, some on boats, some on crutches, and one went in a litter.

The *Annals of San Francisco* tells the same story:

. . . the inhabitants began gradually, in bands and singly, to desert their previous occupations, and betake themselves to the American River and other auriferous parts of the great Sacramento valley. Labor, from the deficiency of homes, rose rapidly in value, and soon all business and work, except the most urgent, was forced to be stopped. Seamen deserted from their ships in the bay, and soldiers from the barracks. All over the country the excitement was the same. Neither threats, punishments, nor money could keep the men to their most solemn engagements. Gold was the irresistible magnet that drew human souls to the place where it lay, rudely snapping asunder the feebler ties of affection and duty.

Where did the 80,000 immigrants to the new land of El Dorado in 1849 come from? Everywhere! From the ends of the earth! But most numerous from the United States: the three main routes, each with its classic stories, were the "Great Trek" across the plains, the desert, and the mountain; then "Across the Isthmus," by ship to Panama and another to San Francisco; and "Round the Horn," most tedious and perilous of all. Once in California, they were eager to get to the diggin's. As one of them wrote, "All were looking forward to the glorious future with a faith which would have moved mountains, particularly if they were suspected of having gold concealed beneath." No longer was the center of gravity at Sutter's Fort, or Monterey, or even San Francisco — it was the mining camp, in the western slope of the Sierra Nevada Mountains, and that center was as shifting and ephemeral as the peregrinations of the gold hunter himself. But the character of the '49er has been immortalized by Joaquin Miller, "Poet of the Sierras," as he sang of

The days of old  
The days of gold,  
The days of '49.

Nowhere in so brief a space, can be found a more dramatic summation of the California Days of '49, which stemmed from Jim Marshall's discovery of gold at Coloma, than in Hubert Howe Bancroft's *History of California*:

The California year of 1849; what was it? An exclamation point in the history of civilization, a dash in the annals of time. This 12-month was not so much a year as an age, not so much an episode as an era . . . Other years have been repeated, and will be many times; this one, never. Throughout the records of the race,



## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

from first to last, there will never be reproduced on this planet the California flush times drama. It stands out in the experience of men, unique and individual, each swift day of it equal to many another year.

(See Selected Bibliography, page 119)

(To Be Continued)

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER FOUR

- Annual *Publications*, Historical Society of Southern California, 1926 (Vol. XIII), *Centennial of Jedediah Strong Smith*: Sources listed by A. P. Nasatir, Los Angeles
- Bancroft, Hubert Howe, *History of California* (Vol. II) San Francisco: The History Co.
- Cleland, Robert Glass, (1) "The First Expedition of Jedediah S. Smith to California," in Annual *Publications* of Historical Society of Southern California, 1914. Los Angeles
- (2) *A History of California: American Period*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1922
- Dale, Harrison Clifford, *The Ashley-Smith Explorations and the Discovery of a Central Route to the Pacific, 1822-1829*; Cleveland: Arthur H. Clark Co., 1918
- Eldredge, Zoeth Skinner, ed., *History of California* (Vol. II)
- Farnham, T. J., Explorations of Jedediah S. Smith, in his *Travels in the Great Western Prairies* (in Thwaite's *Early Western Travels*, Vol. 28) Cleveland: A. H. Clark Co., 1906
- Hanna, Phil Townsend, "California's Debt to Jedediah Strong Smith" (in *Touring Topics*, September, 1926). Los Angeles
- Hittell, Theodore H., *History of California* (Vol. II)
- Hunt, Rockwell D., *California and Californians — The American Period*; Chicago: The Lewis Publishing Co., 1926 (Chap. II)
- Neihardt, John G., *The Splendid Wayfaring . . .*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1924
- Sabin, E. L., *Kit Carson Days*; Chicago: A. C. McClurg & Co., 1914
- Sullivan, Maurice S., *The Travels of Jedediah Smith — A Documentary Outline Including the Journal of the Great American Pathfinder*; Santa Ana, California: The Fine Arts Press, 1934

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER FIVE

- California Historical Society *Quarterly*, Vols. I-IV (1921-1925) San Francisco (See Contents)
- Bancroft, Hubert Howe, *History of California*, Vol. V
- Century Illustrated Magazine*, Vols. XLI-XLII (1890-1891). (Series of articles by eminent writers)
- Dellenbaugh, Frederic, *Frémont and '49 . . .*; New York and London: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1914
- DeVoto, Bernard, *The Year of Decision, 1846*; Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1943 (See Index)
- Eyre, Alice, *The Famous Frémonts and Their America*; Santa Ana: The Fine Arts Press, 1948
- Frémont, John Charles, and Jessie Benton Frémont, *Memoirs of My Life . . .* Vol. I (all printed): Chicago and New York: Belford Clark & Co., 1887
- Hittell, John S., *A History of the City of San Francisco, and Incidentally of the State of California*; San Francisco, 1878
- Jones, William Carey, "The First Phase of the Conquest of California." California Historical Society, *Papers of*, Vol. I; San Francisco, 1887
- Nevins, Allan, *Frémont, the West's Greatest Adventurer*, 2 Vols.; New York: Harper and Sons, 1928

## Fifteen Decisive Events of California History

- Phillips, Catherine Coffin, *Jessie Benton Frémont, A Woman Who Made History*; San Francisco: Printed by John Henry Nash, 1935
- Royce, Josiah, *California, from the Conquest in 1846 to the Second Vigilance Committee: A Study of American Character*; Boston and New York: Houghton, Mifflin & Co., 1888
- Stone, Irving, *Immortal Wife: The Biographical Novel of Jessie Benton Frémont*; New York: Doubleday, Doran & Co., 1945

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER SIX

- Bancroft, Hubert Howe, *History of California*, Vol. V
- Benton, Thomas H., *Thirty Years View* . . . 2 Vols.; New York: D. Appleton & Co., 1856
- Century Illustrated Magazine*, Vol. XLI (1891) (Articles by eminent writers)
- Cleland, Robert Glass, "The Early Sentiment for the Annexation of California"; *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, Vol. VIII (1915)
- Eldredge, Zoeth Skinner, ed., *History of California*, Vol. III (Chaps. II-III)
- Frémont, John C., and Jessie Benton Frémont, *Memoirs of My Life* . . .; Vol. I (all printed); Chicago and New York: Belford, Clark & Co., 1887
- Hittell, Theodore H., *History of California*, Vol. II (Book VII)
- Hunt, Rockwell D., *California, an American Commonwealth* (Chaps. IX-X)
- Nevins, Allan, *Frémont, the World's Greatest Adventurer*, 2 Vols.; New York: Harper and Sons, 1928
- Royce, Josiah, *California, from the Conquest in 1846* . . .
- Sherman, Edwin A., *The Life of the Late Rear Admiral John Drake Sloat of the U. S. Navy*; Oakland: Carruth and Carruth, 1902

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER SEVEN

- Allen, W. M., and R. B. Avery, *California Gold Book: First Nugget — Its Discovery and Discoverers* . . .; San Francisco and Chicago: Donohue and Henneberry, 1893
- Bekeart, Philip Baldwin, "James Wilson Marshall Discovers Gold, Sutters' Mill, Coloma . . .," *Society of California Pioneers Quarterly*, Vol. I, No. 3: San Francisco, 1924
- California Historical Society *Quarterly*, Vol. XXVI, No. 2 (June, 1947), "California Gold Discovery," with Introduction by Joseph R. Knowland
- Caughey, John Walton, (1) *Gold is the Cornerstone*; Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press, 1948
- (2) Ed., "Rushing for Gold" (Centennial of California Gold Rush), *Pacific Historical Review*, Vol. XVIII, No. 1 (February, 1949)
- Cleland, Robert Glass, *From Wilderness to Empire* . . ., (Chap. 15)
- Coy, Owen Cochran, *Gold Days*; Los Angeles: Powell Publishing Co., 1929
- Hunt, Rockwell D., *California, an American Commonwealth* (Chaps. XIV-XVI)
- Jackson, Joseph Henry, *Anybody's Gold: The Story of California's Mining Towns*; New York: D. Appleton-Century Co., 1941
- Paul, Rodman W., *California Gold: The Beginnings of Mining in the Far West*; Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1947

# The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne

By Helen Rocca Goss



ANY ONE WHO HAS ATTEMPTED TO RECONSTRUCT the life of a town or particular section of the country knows the importance of reading the day by day or week by week accounts of the place as revealed in contemporary newspapers. All too often, though, such records have been partially or completely destroyed by fires or through the ravages of time. And that, of course, was especially true in mining camps, since fires were necessarily destructive among cheap wooden buildings set close together. Nevertheless, in spite of these hazards, complete collections do still exist of some of the mining town newspapers which began publication in the early 1850's, and they present a colorful picture of the life of the period to those willing to read them carefully.

One such newspaper is the weekly *Sonora Union Democrat*, founded in July, 1854. Several years ago through a combination of two sources, I was able to read all of the issues of the paper during its first twenty-two years of existence.<sup>1</sup> My primary purpose was to seek out those items relating to my father, Andrew Rocca, who had been prominent in gold mining and in ditching in the Southern Mines from 1854 to 1875. The experience was a rewarding one, because I found not only many items about my father but much information about the general life in what the pioneers fondly called "Old Tuolumne." This article is an attempt to summarize the highlights of my findings.

One must confess, first of all, that in the earliest period — up to about 1860 — newspaper items are so brief and devoid of any extraneous facts as scarcely to arouse the reader's interest. Furthermore, they are generally concerned with death or violence. To make the newspaper in the 1850's it seems to have been almost necessary to be killed or so severely injured that you doubtless wished it had been fatal! Then came the Civil War years, when Tuolumne County newspapers were, as one writer puts it, "almost wholly given up to the discussion of political subjects, war news, and to vilifying those individuals with whom they were in disagreement."<sup>2</sup> But finally there came the period after the war when

### *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

the communities of Tuolumne County were obviously struggling desperately and often self-consciously to grow up, become more civilized, law-abiding and civic-minded. In that era — the late sixties and seventies — much valuable information does appear in the newspapers about the life of the times.

The practice of presenting more news items of human interest did not come all at once following the end of the bitter political quarrels of the war years. Rather it was a gradual change, so subtle as to be hardly noticeable at first, but at times in the 1870's the editors approach expansiveness. The difference seems to express the change from a pioneer community, where the dangers of life were so great that men's minds were largely concentrated on fundamentals — mining for gold and trying to keep from being killed while doing it — to a slightly more normal and relaxed way of life in which humor, social and civic affairs, began to play a part. This is not to suggest that accidents, shootings, stabbings and similar acts of violence were not still frequent, but other items began competing with them. And since violence became less to be expected, when it did take place, more of the details were mentioned.

Even the advertisements are a fascinating and amusing source of information about the type of community for which the seductive phrases have been concocted. For example, there are the advertisements appearing again and again for "Ye Old Mustang Liniment, Prepared and bottled under ye immediate supervision of Professor Thomas B. Cross, for ye last 30 years." According to one such advertisement:

This celebrated Liniment has no equal in ye world and has produced more cures of Rheumatism, Neuralgia, Sprains, Scalds, Burns, Salt Rheum, Sore Nipples, Bites, Bruises, etc., on the human frame and Sprains, Strains, Galls, Stiff Joints, Inflammation, etc., on beasts than all other liniments put together.

According to another:

There is no Sore it will not Heal, no Lameness it will not Cure, No Ache, No Pain, that afflicts the Human Body, or the body of a horse or other domestic animal, that does not yield to its magic Touch.

The social and intellectual life of Tuolumne County centered, of course, in Sonora, the county seat, a town which in its earliest days had been "one of the widest open of them all in a wide-open era."<sup>3</sup> By the middle fifties, however, the better citizens had begun to build their county seat on more solid foundations, and even in the early fifties Sonora had a surprising number of evidences of culture and intellectual curiosity for a mining camp in that period.



Interest in books was sufficient to support at least three book stores, there was an excellent music store, and *Harper's Magazine* had a wide circulation throughout the entire county. In 1857, two cultural institutions were founded — a combined museum and library, and the Sonora Literary and Scientific Institute.<sup>4</sup> Saint James' Episcopal Church, one of the oldest churches of that denomination in California and still a conspicuous landmark at the top of the town's main street, held its first service in October, 1859.<sup>5</sup> The Sonora *Herald*, published from July, 1850, to June, 1859, was one of the earliest newspapers to be published anywhere in the mines.<sup>6</sup> And according to frequent items and advertisements in the *Union Democrat* in the 1870's, apparently even one of the saloon keepers, John K. Reitz, attempted to dispense culture. Here is one of Reitz's advertisements, appearing in the *Union Democrat* for October 9, 1875:

HARMONIC SALOON AND SHOOTING GALLERY  
opposite Wilzinski's, Sonora  
J. K. Reitz, proprietor  
The very best of Wines, Liquors and Cigars  
Call and see for yourselves  
John K. Reitz will Furnish Brass and String Music  
for balls, parties, picnics and parades  
Lessons given on the piano, organ and melodeon  
Pianos tuned on liberal terms

It should not be supposed, however, that life was all culture in the Tuolumne County of the 1860's and 1870's, and careful study of the newspapers of the day shows clearly that it was often harsh and dangerous. Certainly, of all the county news the *Union Democrat* had to report in that era, those items endangering life and property are by far the most numerous, those occurring most frequently being either mine accidents or accidents involving horses, such as runaways, recalcitrant saddle animals, vicious kickers, etc. Fires, theft and robbery, and shooting affairs are, however, almost equally prominent. And it is clear, too, that children found growing up in the mining towns a rather hazardous business.

The mine accidents ranged from those where the miner's own foolhardiness or indiscretion was certainly largely to blame, to freak accidents that could not have been foreseen, and on to those usually much more disastrous ones where defective equipment and negligence were clearly at fault. Thus, there was the case of a man named Child, "accidentally killed in the Burns mine, at First Garrote," when he was on the 130 foot level while a carelessly packed bucket of lagging was descending. One of the laggings was pulled from the bucket "by a splinter or a knob catching on the side of the

### *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

shaft, and . . . the piece fell and hit Mr. Child on the head, killing him almost instantly.”<sup>7</sup> Again, there was the “serious accident” in the App Mine at Quartz Mountain which resulted in injury to Richard Hodge, who kept right on tamping a charge after he had hit an obstruction. There was an explosion, “throwing him up some ten feet,” tearing and burning his left hand so badly that some fingers had to be amputated, while his “left leg was generally shattered between the knee and ankle.”<sup>8</sup>

The “sad and fatal accident” to Martin Barry at the White Rock mining claim at Brown’s Flat demonstrates the mechanical failure, or worn-out equipment, accident. Barry’s skull was crushed when he was working eight or ten feet “below the surface of a creek,” filling buckets for hoisting, and a worn guy rope broke and the mast fell.<sup>9</sup> The following is an even better illustration of an accident resulting from faulty equipment and negligence:

Fearful accident. — A terrible and fatal accident occurred in the Consolidated Amador Mine at Sutter Creek on Saturday. The last cage was being hoisted at 6 o’clock with five men on, when the bolts holding the reel broke, detaching the drum and letting the cage and wire rope drop into the mine a distance of 1,700 feet, killing all in it . . . The accident is attributed to want of proper attention being given to the condition of bolts holding the reel in position.<sup>10</sup>

There were numerous articles headed “Man Caved on and Killed” — some such accidents no doubt being inevitable from the very nature of a miner’s work, others which certainly could have been prevented by more attention to adequate timbering. And there was also the accident not directly connected with mining but closely allied to it. “The Portuguese who had his back broken by the gate of a reservoir falling on him ten days ago, at Columbia, is still alive,” said an item in the *Union Democrat* for October 17, 1868.

But perilous as the miner’s life was, that of the teamster, the stage driver and others handling horses seems to have been only slightly less uncertain. Newspaper items about horses being responsible for “a badly broken leg,” or “a fractured ankle,” or “a compound fracture of the upper arm,” and of teamsters being thrown from their seats and crushed under the wagon wheels appear in monotonous succession. My father himself figures in one such accident, the *Union Democrat* of September 12, 1874, reporting that “Andrew Rocca was thrown from his wagon . . . last Tuesday morning, and severely though not dangerously injured, the wheel of the wagon passing over him and the horse striking him with a hoof on the temple and ear.”

Sometimes those encounters with headstrong animals resulted

only in confusion and the *Democrat* would write up the account in hilarious mood. Once, for example, when two wagon loads of flour were tipped over, the newspaper said that "Nothing more serious was accomplished by the accident than the indiscriminate distribution of embryo dough in the dust and undergrowth," and on another occasion it wrote of a runaway team which "took fright at something or other and started away from McCormick's store at the upper end of town, dashing through Washington Street like a pair of carnival racers down the Roman Corso. They were stopped in front of the City Hotel without accomplishing any material damage."<sup>11</sup>

Stage accidents were fairly frequent, too, though often every one escaped unscathed or only slightly bruised. The *Union Democrat* of July 12, 1873, reported such an accident and its miraculous ending when the horses drawing a Yosemite Valley stage became frightened by a newspaper blowing about in the road. The leaders backed so suddenly and sharply that they forced the wheelers to do so, too, and soon all of them backed over the bank on a steep grade. The driver — Rice Markley, a well-known stage-driver of the day — and several of the passengers jumped to safety, but the others were thrown into the top of the stage, which fortunately broke off from the body, since the main part of the coach went on for another hundred yards and then was completely demolished. There were ten persons on the stage, and the results were summarized as "four ladies bruised, three slightly and one more severely, no bones broken and no doctor required," the driver being highly praised for his "coolness and skill."<sup>12</sup>

My father was not so fortunate when he came near losing his life in a stage accident on the steep and dangerous Priest Grade in 1869. Coming down the sharp incline, the horses became frightened by a fluttering piece of paper in the road, began to run at full speed and soon were completely out of control. As the stage started to overturn, Andrew Rocca jumped, hoping that he would make a safe landing as he had done on a previous occasion; but in almost the same instant another passenger, a large Negro on top of the stage, decided to jump, too. He landed squarely in the middle of Rocca's back, and the latter suffered not only a severe back injury but his legs were torn apart as well. In later life he used to tell his children how they had rushed him back up the grade to Priest's Hotel and laid him on a bed with little hope that he would ever leave it alive; how he bled so profusely that in a very short time blood had saturated the mattress and soaked through it; how he



### *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

gradually did recover enough to go to San Francisco for several months of treatments.<sup>13</sup>

The physicians of the county were constantly called upon to attend someone injured in a mine or runaway accident, but that the doctors themselves led rugged and dangerous lives is indicated by an article entitled "Wonderful Escape from Death" in the *Union Democrat* for January 21, 1871, a long tale about Dr. R. M. Lampson of Chinese Camp. One dark, rainy night Lampson was called upon to visit a sick person at William Martin's place "about ten miles beyond the Rock River ranch." He and Martin set out in a buggy drawn by a pair of horses. When about a mile from their destination, they realized they were off the road and turned around. They had gone but a short distance when one of the horses "fell in a gully in the road," was unable to get up, and finally the other horse fell down on top of him. Both animals then slid, carrying the buggy and its occupants, over "a perpendicular bluff . . . about 40 feet high." The two men were described as "bewildered" by this adventure, and "upon recovering from shock Martin found the doctor, horses and buggy promiscuously piled in a heap." He assisted the doctor, who was severely bruised, to get out from under the horses, and cut the animals loose. The two men then set out on foot for Martin's home. They succeeded in getting back up over the cliff and on the road again, but in the darkness "both walked off the bluff and fell again a distance of more than 30 feet." That time, both were "insensible." Sometime later, Martin, "coming partially to his senses, wandered about and fortunately reached home, where he began to remember what had happened." A party set out for Lampson and found him still unconscious. He was carried to Martin's house and a Dr. Walker was summoned next. Martin had his left collar bone dislocated in addition to bruises, but the doctor's injuries consisted only of "bruises and the effect of laying quite a time insensible in the rain." The original patient for whom Lampson was called seems to have been completely forgotten in the excitement. Dr. Lampson apparently had the robust constitution necessary for a mining town doctor, since the article ended by saying that neither he nor Martin was seriously hurt, that in a few days they would "be in as good condition as ever," and that: "The ways of Providence are strange."

Occasionally, even the dead were deprived of the right to be borne to their last resting place in that slow and measured tread associated with funerals. Under the heading of "A Frightful Occurrence," the *Union Democrat* of January 1, 1870, related that during the formation of the funeral procession for Mrs. James Connelly in



Sonora, the horses attached to the hearse "began kicking furiously at the top of Pearl Street, then ran at a frightful pace down Washington Street." The driver lost control of the team and jumped from his seat, the horses "tore up three trees, and pulled out the post of a portico." One of the trees came down between the horses, throwing them down and upsetting the hearse, "fortunately without injury to the coffin." A man and woman on the sidewalk in front of a store were saved from injury by the trees. "For a time," said the *Democrat*, "great consternation pervaded the large number of people attending the funeral. It was frightful and startling to know for a moment that a corpse was being run away with. It was miraculous that no one was injured seriously."

The mining camp children had some advantage over modern-day youngsters in that they did not have to worry about being run down by automobiles or about having planes or missiles crash down out of the sky. But the numerous runaway teams were a constant menace to their lives. Once when a child in Columbia had been killed by a freight team, the *Union Democrat* commented ungrammatically that the incident should serve as "a warning to parents to learn their children to keep away from wagons."<sup>14</sup> And the child who grew up in the mining towns, where men were so feverishly digging for gold, had to be on his guard against such things as "mined out vacant lots" and "glory holes," which became traps when heavy rains filled them with water. This is what happened to one six-year old boy in Columbia:

. . . A large lot, which has been mined out, on Main Street . . . is now full of water. On this pond is a small boat, the boy had got into the boat and was rocking himself from side to side when he fell out. Some boys were looking on and saw the drowning boy come up to the surface two or three times; he had sunk for the last time before they gave the alarm. He was fished out with a butcher's hook as speedily as possible but when found life was extinct.<sup>15</sup>

Fires were numerous, destructive when they did come and frequently incendiarism was suspected or charged. And the sufferings of an impoverished family with no insurance were apparently quite as usual as the fires themselves. Under the heading "The Hide Gone with the Tallow," the *Union Democrat* of May 15, 1869, said: "The barn and outhouses on the Pettigrew place at Brown's Flat, have gone to look for the store. They were burned down, on the night of Friday of 7th inst. Supposed to be the work of an incendiary." Incendiarism was charged again in October, 1874, when the home of a man named Ashe was burned down in Sonora. Ashe rebuilt at once, and the new house burned down the following Feb-

### *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

ruary, again under suspicious circumstances, only a "few pieces of furniture" being saved.<sup>16</sup> Items like this one appear frequently:

Fire. — The house of Mrs. Martin near Chinese Camp was consumed by fire on Sunday morning about ten o'clock . . . She was able to save nothing except a sewing machine. The loss falls heavy on the family with nothing left but what was on their backs.<sup>17</sup>

In the late sixties and early seventies, Sonora was plagued by a rash of robberies and burglaries. Many of them were cases of petty thievery only, but others were what the newspapers called "villainous outrages" — such as the attack made on a local merchant "by two ruffians with masked faces."<sup>18</sup> In reporting this and an earlier robbery of the same store, the *Democrat* expressed great skepticism about the law being of any assistance in handling these cases:

It is reported that the guilty parties are known, that sufficient proof can be had to convict in the courts, but that something else must and will be done.

And again on March 25, 1876, the editor wrote:

Burglars are prowling about town and it behooves everybody to load their shot-guns, six-shooters and other small arms. It is altogether too expensive, this trial by jury for house breaking.

Taking the law into one's own hands for another type of stealing — sluice-robbing — was considered justifiable, too, without even an apology. "On Tuesday morning about 3 o'clock," said the *Union Democrat* of June 17, 1871, "a Portuguese who has a claim near Schuler's former brewery discovered a man at work in his sluices. He fired at him through the window of his cabin killing him instantly. The thief proved to be a Chinaman surrounded with evidences of his guilt." Although the sluice-robber in this case happened to be Chinese, the miner who fired the shot did not know that at the time, and the same action would certainly have been taken and applauded had the thief been of the white race.

How constantly a man had to be on guard against his fellow men in those days is well illustrated by an experience my father himself had in the early seventies, a story which made a deep impression on me when I heard it for the first time as a small child. One bitterly cold night, when a heavy blanket of snow shrouded everything in a glistening, death-like stillness, Andrew Rocca was riding home alone on the road from Sonora to Big Oak Flat. Coming around a bend, he was surprised to see a man lying in the snow by the side of the road, a coat or cape thrown over him in such a way that only a part of his head was visible. He lay on his left side with his right arm covered as if it might conceal a weapon. Rocca

reined in his horse and called to the man several times, but there was no response and no movement. His suspicions thoroughly aroused now, he drew his gun and holding it steadily on the man, moved closer, very guardedly, continuing to shout: "Who are you? What is wrong? If you need help, say so, but if you move, I'll shoot," etc. Still no reply and no sign whatever of life. Then, Andrew Rocca rode slowly by, still aiming his pistol at the silent, recumbent form, convinced that the man was either dead or lying in wait for someone, perhaps for Rocca himself, perhaps for another man. That the man had been waiting in ambush, Andrew Rocca later established to his own satisfaction by careful inquiry. Others who passed along the road after he did that night saw no one, and no dead or suffering man was discovered in the neighborhood.

Killing a man who picked a quarrel while he was intoxicated seldom led to more than a cursory examination and quick dismissal of the case by the grand jury. This is illustrated by the Richards-Grundy case, reported in the *Union Democrat* of September 13, 1873. Richards, badly intoxicated, had provoked a fight with Grundy, who then knifed Richards severely. The doctor pronounced the case hopeless, inasmuch as Richards "was cut across the left side, so that the intestines protruded." Richards died the following day, Grundy was brought before the grand jury and the charge against him was dismissed. These "protruding intestine" cases, it might be said in passing, seem to have had a peculiar fascination for the various editors of the *Union Democrat*!

That murder of the Chinese was frequent and usually went entirely unpunished, is evident from the following articles:

Chinaman Murdered. — On Sunday the 27th inst., the dead body of a Chinaman was found about 30 yards from the road near West's house on the road from Chinese Camp to Jacksonville. The body was still warm and evidently had been dragged from the road by the person who had murdered and robbed him. A pistol ball had traversed the head just behind the temples, and from footprints it is supposed the murderer was an Indian. The Chinese evinced great apathy on the subject and huddled the body into a grave with all the property belonging to him, such as blankets, boots, and a purse of gold dust found in his cabin.<sup>19</sup>

Killed and Flung in the Bushes. — The body of a Chinaman was found on Sunday a short distance from Chinese Camp on the Jacksonville Road. A deep gash was cut on one side of the neck severing the arteries and a mark cut entirely around the neck. The wrists looked as if they had been tied. He was murdered and the body carried to the place where it was found. Little trouble was taken to ascertain particulars as he was a bumner Chinaman.<sup>20</sup>

That the general attitude of Tuolumne citizens toward the



### *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

Chinese was no better and no worse than that in the neighboring counties is suggested by two items from the *Mariposa Gazette* in the late sixties. The first, appearing on October 9, 1868, described a raid by three men "supposed to be Mexicans" on "a celestial camp" near the town of Mariposa. When the Chinese resisted, one of them was shot in the head, the robbers then snatching what they could and escaping. Someone was dispatched to notify the officers, and their rather half-hearted show of interest is then related as follows:

Sheriff Crippen, Constable West and others, immediately started in pursuit of the thieves, but learning no tidings of them, returned to town in the evening. We have learned nothing in regard to the present condition of the wounded Chinaman or the amount stolen.

The *Gazette* itself showed evidence of being disturbed when, on January 1, 1869, it reported two instances of robbing the Chinese and of their being left with no means of redressing their grievances. In one case, a lone Chinese was robbed of \$25.00, in the other a sum of \$300.00 was taken from two Chinese. One can detect the small voice of conscience in the editor's comment:

Unfortunately, for the Chinamen, in both instances, the crime was committed by the "superior race" — white men, consequently John is left without a remedy, either to recover his money or to assist in bringing the criminals to punishment. This is rather hard on the Chinamen, and we candidly confess that the law of evidence, in criminal cases at least, should be so modified as to open the door to the testimony of Chinamen in cases where there is no other evidence. There certainly ought to be some way adopted to protect them in the right and to redress their wrongs and injuries.

My father, too, testified to the fact that although the Chinese were generally quiet and well-behaved, asking little more than to be allowed to work without molestation on claims already abandoned by white men, they were frequently ill-treated. As Roberta Holmes says, there was considerable prejudice against foreigners of any kind in the mines in the earlier days and in some instances laws against their mining in certain camps. But whereas the agitation against other foreigners subsided and had practically disappeared by 1860, that against the Chinese grew worse, "although there were a few Americans who were brave enough to take their part."<sup>21</sup> One of the closest brushes with death Andrew Rocca had in the Southern Mines came when he attempted to retaliate for mistreatment of his Chinese leaseholders.

When he gained a controlling interest in the Golden Rock Water Company, Andrew Rocca acquired a large amount of land, the placer claims on which had been worked to a point where they



no longer paid well. In the customary manner of the time, he leased these claims, mostly to Chinese, but to a few white men as well. One day he returned to camp to find that a number of the Chinese leaseholders had been beaten and robbed. He set out in hot pursuit, caught up with the guilty men and exchanged a number of shots with them. He hit one of the men, whereupon another came out of hiding and fired at Rocca at close range. All that kept him from being severely wounded if not killed was a small sapling which happened to be directly in front of him and in which the bullet lodged. "That was one of the luckiest moments of my life," he used to say.<sup>22</sup>

There are, of course, numerous items about stage robberies in the newspapers of the era. Since whole books have been written on that subject, suffice it to say here that many of the famous ones took place on the stages between Stockton and Sonora, and the newspaper accounts of the attempted or successful hold-ups follow the usual pattern: "The stage from Murphy's to Stockton was stopped by two highwaymen on Tuesday and the Wells, Fargo & Company's Express box was robbed of about \$2,400 in gold dust";<sup>23</sup> or, "The mail stage from here to Milton was robbed Tuesday . . . near the top of Reynold's Ferry hill by three masked men, two armed with pistols, one with a Henry rifle."<sup>24</sup> On that occasion, one of the eight passengers on the stage offered his money, but the robbers would take nothing less than the express box, which contained \$6,000, most of it "in gold bars and retorted gold."

Sometimes the robbers were outwitted by fast-thinking stage drivers, who, however, risked their lives and those of the passengers by resisting the highwaymen. Such an unsuccessful attempt was made in November, 1876, to rob "the Milton stage between Brown's Flat and Columbia." The driver was none other than John Shine, the man who, as Joseph Henry Jackson wrote, "had the dubious honor of being the first driver to be held up by California's greatest bandit, Black Bart."<sup>25</sup> Shine saw that the highwaymen were nervous "when a pistol accidentally discharged," so he "lashed the horses and dashed away." Both barrels of a shotgun were fired at the retreating stage, the shots "tearing the ribs and braces of the coach."<sup>26</sup> A month later, Shine was rewarded for "his masterly retreat from the highwaymen of Brown's Flat" when Wells, Fargo & Company "presented him with a handsome gold watch."<sup>27</sup> The Milton stage seems to have been a favorite with the robbers, and in reporting the numerous hold-ups on that line the *Union Democrat* sometimes spoke of the robbery taking place "at the usual place" on the road.

## *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

Through the years, the *Democrat* waged various campaigns for those civic improvements it considered needed in that day, for more orderly behavior, for temperance, church-attendance, etc. One of its campaigns was for improving and repairing the local cemetery, and it sponsored a concert to raise funds for that purpose. On February 26, 1870, the editor wrote:

Nothing reflects more credit upon any community than a well kept and improved cemetery. All of us should keep in view the uncertainty of life, the possibility of soon being added to those who sleep their last sleep and ask, if it is not a duty to beautify and adorn the homes of the dead, and if the consolation thus derived is not far more valuable than money.

A few months later the editor was urging more general church attendance, and in mid-July took some satisfaction in the results of its efforts. It is doubtful, however, whether the minister mentioned in the following article was equally pleased with the frank appraisal of his sermon:

Our admonitions and reproofs on the subject of church attendance had the effect, last Sunday, notwithstanding the intense heat, to start a number of the guilty delinquents. The Episcopal Church during morning service was well filled . . . The morning sermon by the Reverend Mr. Smith, based on a story called the "Prodigal Son," was as dry as the husks with which the young man tried to delude his stomach. The singing was excellent as usual.<sup>28</sup>

Frequent references appear to "falling dead of intemperance," and to "death from drinking," and on those occasions the editor generally pointed a moral, as in this comment in the issue of May 22, 1875:

. . . In this case four young children are deprived of a mother's care by a morbid appetite for intoxicating drinks. If such an example will have no influence on others who are following the same road, they are beyond redemption and it will be a question of time only before their taking off will be similar to that of this poor unfortunate victim of intemperance.

That did not, though, deter the *Union Democrat* from going into ecstasies over the various saloons established in Sonora during the 1870's, or from giving the owners free advertising, urging the public to patronize them. An article of May 20, 1871, described the Union Saloon, just fitted out "in a magnificent manner." The article then said: "For elegance and beauty no saloon in the mountains can excel it, everything exhibits most excellent taste and those who have imbibed the fluids and smoked the cigars here dispensed, universally pronounce them the best . . ." Perhaps the most striking example of inconsistency is the appearance of these

two articles in the same issue of the newspaper — June 11, 1870 — not, it is true, as close together as they appear here, but not far removed either:

Lecture. — The lecture given by S. M. Hewlett on Wednesday evening . . . was an intellectual treatment of the subject: "Muzzle that Dog," and the dog to be muzzled was intemperance. The speaker handled his subject in a masterly manner and at times was eloquent in depicting the evils of intemperance.

New Saloon. — Mr. James McGowan has refitted and refurnished in a sumptuous manner, the saloon formerly kept by Mr. C. H. Alberding in Columbia, where he is ready to furnish cool and refreshing beverages of all kinds. Jim has been a traveller and has had an immense experience in facing the numerous bars of this county, consequently his judgment has matured as to the quality of the drinks that should be dispensed by him. His liquors and cigars are all of a fine quality, and those who favor him with a call will be so well satisfied that they will surely call again. Try him.

And here is the story of the local boy gone on to greater influence and success in a wider field of usefulness:

Another Gorgeous Saloon. — John C. Smith, the best bar keeper Sonora ever had, with a partner named Townsend, has built and fitted up a saloon at Merced that is represented as a palatial establishment by the papers published at that point. The bar-room is finished in California laurel, highly polished and magnificently furnished with mirrors, glass and silver ware, oil paintings and statuary. The billiard parlors, wine rooms and every appointment is on a tasteful, grand and expensive scale. It was thrown open to the public on Saturday last and is represented to have no superior in the state. The proprietors call it the "cosmopolitan" and it bids fair to become as famous as its predecessor in Yosemite Valley.

There were two subjects in which the editors of the *Union Democrat* never lost interest — encouraging matrimony and trying to rid the public streets of stray animals. How faithful they were in their attempts to increase the number of marriages and leave no future old maids in Tuolumne County is evident in dozens of items like these:

A large crop of girls are coming up in Tuolumne County. They are greatly in excess of the boys. They are bright, quick and keen. In a few years they will be marketable. But where are the consumers?<sup>29</sup>

The County Clerk issued three marriage licenses during the month of September. Very little fire for all the smoke that is being made . . .<sup>30</sup>

Year after year, too, the newspapers gave the figures for the school census, frequently noting and deploring the excess of girls over boys. Some of the bachelors evidently became a bit weary of



### *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

the campaign and banded together in self-protection in a club called the Satyr Club, an organization at which the *Democrat* scoffed.<sup>31</sup>

Goading the city officials on the subject of stray animals, however, was even dearer to the heart of the *Democrat* than marrying off the Tuolumne belles. Here are two typical excerpts from articles on that subject:

Animals at Large. — It is not pleasant to be compelled to arise from a comfortable couch at the dead hours of the night to pelt cows. It is not conducive to a high toned or moral standard of expression to arise, in the morning . . . and upon greeting the rising sun, observe that our fences have been destroyed and the perfumed precincts of our front garden invaded by a dissipated cow that had been on a spree all night . . . It is about time that the Pound Man or the City Marshal girded up his loins and started in to corral the stock.<sup>32</sup>

Once more, with all due respect to the Honorable Board of City Trustees, we would call attention to a crying evil and well denounced nuisance. The City Ordinances are explicit in regard to animals running at large in the public streets and our citizens are in many instances exasperated to observe that they are not enforced.

For months past we have hammered away at this cow-bell, hog-range, donkey-singing nuisance, and we propose to continue the crusade, hopeless though it be until the City Marshal or the City Trustees make a move towards its suppression.<sup>33</sup>

Considerable interest in photography was aroused in the late sixties by the local representative of that art, Dan Sewell, assisted by the *Democrat's* enthusiastic support. Of Sewell the editor wrote:

Dan Sewell the picture maker, having spent much time and trouble at San Francisco, to procure all the necessities and properties pertaining to his art, is now prepared to take any kind of a picture that can be taken in California by the Daguerrean process. Some of his rustic scenes are very fine, which enables him to locate his subject down in the valley or on a mountain top. His pictures really make a person think they have been where they are confident they never were. Dan gives good satisfaction and is a good artist.<sup>34</sup>

In his own advertisements, Sewell claimed this of his pictures: "Old people made *Young*, and young people *Good Looking*."

The intellectual life of the community in these years seems to have consisted mainly of a few lectures, concerts and theatrical events, both amateur and professional. In the early days, the mining camp theatres had been able to present such distinguished performers as the Booths, Caroline and William Chapman, Lola Montez, Lotta Crabtree and many others whose talents gave them a high ranking in their profession. By the late sixties, however, the



professional theatrical productions in Tuolumne County were apparently largely limited to such stock companies as the Wilton Troupe, old Sonora favorites returning again and again to present such plays as *Madeline, or the Foundling of Paris*; *Miralda, or the Cigar Girl of Cuba*; *Ten Nights in a Bar Room*; and *The Soldier of '98, or the Irish Diamond*. There were amateur theatricals, too, and of one such performance the *Democrat* of March 13, 1875, remarked: "Though not up in stage matters as professionals, they were appreciated far more than the traveling bands that visit the town."

As for the musical status of Sonora, the editor of the *Union Democrat* wrote on September 20, 1873:

Ours is decidedly a musical town, music by day, music by night, music all the time. If the cultivation of one of the fine arts is an indication of civilization, and we believe it is, ours must be a highly civilized community. Few of our youthful belles but are cultivating this fine art. It is one of the best accomplishments that a young lady, or gent for that matter, can possess . . . Let it be universally cultivated. Let its strains flow until the hills and valleys of Tuolumne are filled with its enchantment.

Concerts were presented from time to time by those studying music, and there are frequent references to "the brass band discoursing some excellent music" — even at a funeral on one occasion!

Among the celebrations, those for the Fourth of July seem to have overshadowed all others, especially the centennial celebration in 1876, following an unsuccessful one the previous year. The *Union Democrat* had scolded the citizenry soundly for lack of patriotism in 1875, and those rebukes must have been taken to heart, since the celebration the next year was pronounced "the finest that the town ever had." It would, I believe, have been regarded as elaborate even by current standards — in fact, there were features, such as "the Squash Bug Dragoons," — which suggest Hollywood's fine Italian hand. The Squash Bug Dragoons were "a complete miniature army fully officered, equipped and attended by the usual train of army wagons," the soldiers being boys "prettily dressed in appropriate costume and carrying guns with which they drilled whenever the column halted."<sup>35</sup>

Plans for the big celebration were made early that year, and on the night of the third there were special displays, one of which was quaintly though rather well described in this item from the *Democrat*:

A Beautiful Illumination. — One of the handsomest illuminations that rendered the evening of the third so beautiful was that of a tall poplar near the shop of Mr. Reuter at the upper end of Washington

### *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

Street. Lanterns were hung from the branches and reminded one of the pretty story of the golden apples that depended from the branches of the tree that stood in the gardens of the Hesperides. Dozens of lanterns glimmered from amidst the foliage and the novel illuminations excited the admiration of all who beheld it.<sup>36</sup>

There was a torchlight procession that night with the band and marching citizens — “a display that Sonora has not witnessed for the past 14 years, an outpouring of the people that reminded old residents of those times for the return of which so many years so earnestly.” By morning, the entire town was “a perfect mass of evergreen arches, bright colored flags and handsome transparencies” and the celebration itself was complete with parades, elaborate floats, musical and literary exercises, fireworks, riding exhibitions and a “calico ball” in the evening. The gem of the afternoon “procession,” according to the newspaper, was “a representation of General Washington and his wife by Master C. C. Dorsey and Miss Mabel Yancey who called forth murmurs of applause at the inimitable manner in which they preserved the identity of the personages they were representing. Just in front of this carriage walked a line of little girls two abreast bearing garlands and a prettier scene has never been presented in this city.”<sup>37</sup> That year the *Democrat* was well satisfied and reported that: “General good order and good feeling prevailed during the day and we can say with pride that the occasion passed away without a single disturbance, untoward act or even an accident.”<sup>38</sup>

One completely unexpected reward from reading the old newspapers came in the form of an amusing political story in connection with the presidential election of 1876. On November 4th that year, the *Union Democrat* wrote:

The Western Union Telegraph Company offers to allow us the privilege of the election news dispatches as they come over the wires for \$30.00, the news to be given for that amount until the final result is known. It would be a good idea for the two clubs, at their meetings to-night, to arrange the matter so that by paying \$15.00 each they can obtain for the public benefit, the results as they come in.

When Western Union made that offer, it could not have foreseen what difficulties its bargain would present, since that was, of course, the year of the famous Tilden-Hayes controversy when the election was contested, an Electoral Commission was appointed to settle the question, and the official outcome was not known until early March, 1877, just one day before Hayes took the oath of office. On November 11, 1876, the *Union Democrat* was scathing in its denunciation of the telegraph:

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Of all unreliable mediums for the dissemination of news the telegraph is the most unreliable, even more so than the daily political newspaper. A thousand reasons were advanced in this isolated section explanatory of the conflicting reports in regard to the election, principal among which was the close vote and the assertion that the gamblers controlled the wires in certain states and were using them for purposes of speculation . . .

In the course of time, no doubt, the *Democrat* must have been convinced that the Western Union Company could hardly be blamed for not being able to say at once who was elected President that year. But presumably, too, the company had to keep on giving Sonora service on the subject for some four months in order to fulfill its contract.

And so, as the year 1876 draws to a close, we leave the residents of Sonora still waiting for news of who was to be their next President, the "ladies" applying their "Hagan's Magnolia Balm for a pure, blooming complexion," the "gents" getting their solace from that "enemy of disease and foe of pain, which has stood the test for 40 years, Mexican Mustang Liniment."

### NOTES

1. The newspaper collection in the Bancroft Library at the University of California in Berkeley, and the files of the *Union Democrat* office in Sonora. My father was an original subscriber to the newspaper and kept up his subscription continuously until his death in November, 1921 — a period of more than sixty-seven years.
2. Edna Bryan Buckbee, *The Saga of Old Tuolumne* (New York, 1935), p. 263.
3. Joseph Henry Jackson, *Anybody's Gold* (New York, 1941), p. 322.
4. Buckbee, *op. cit.*, pp. 201-202, 230.
5. *Ibid.*, p. 233, Jackson, *op. cit.*, p. 318.
6. Buckbee, *op. cit.*, p. 66, says the *Herald* was the first newspaper ever published in the mines of California; Jackson, *op. cit.*, p. 319, says it was one of the earliest newspapers of the Southern Mines.
7. Sonora *Union Democrat*, Mar. 27, 1869.
8. *Ibid.*, Mar. 29, 1873.
9. *Ibid.*, Mar. 28, 1874.
10. *Ibid.*, June 6, 1874.
11. *Ibid.*, Oct. 9, 1875; Mar. 4, 1876.
12. On July 17, 1874, when the celebration of the completion of the Big Oak Flat Road to Yosemite Valley took place, it was Rice Markley who drove the first stage, carrying the Sonora band, in the long caravan which assembled at Gentry's. Andrew Rocca, who had advanced a considerable sum of money to complete the rock work on the famous "Zigzag," was given the honor of sitting beside Markley for the first stage trip into the valley on that road. See Irene D. Paden and Margaret E. Schlichtmann, *The Big Oak Flat Road* (San Francisco, 1955), pp. 250-252.
13. For the facts stated in this paragraph I have checked my own memories with those of several members of the family — my sisters, Idalene B. McCollum of Healdsburg and Florence G. McFarling of Ukiah; my brothers, Andrew Rocca, Jr. of South San Francisco and Bernard T. Rocca of Berkeley.
14. Sonora *Union Democrat*, July 12, 1873.
15. *Ibid.*, May 8, 1869.
16. *Ibid.*, Feb. 13, 1875.
17. *Ibid.*, May 1, 1875.



## *The Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne*

18. *Ibid.*, May 28, 1870.
19. *Ibid.*, Apr. 2, 1870.
20. *Ibid.*, June 26, 1875.
21. Roberta Evelyn Holmes, *The Southern Mines of California, Early Development of the Sonora Mining Region* (San Francisco, 1930), pp 13-19.
22. Letter from Bernard T. Rocca, Feb. 16, 1947; Letter from Andrew Rocca, Jr., Mar. 3, 1947.
23. *Sonora Union Democrat*, Apr. 9, 1870.
24. *Ibid.*, Mar. 27, 1875.
25. Jackson, *op. cit.*, p. 319.
26. *Sonora Union Democrat*, Nov 18, 1876.
27. *Ibid.*, Dec. 16, 1876.
28. *Ibid.*, July 16, 1870.
29. *Ibid.*, June 25, 1870.
30. *Ibid.*, Oct. 4, 1873.
31. *Ibid.*, Oct. 23, 1875.
32. *Ibid.*, Nov. 25, 1876.
33. *Ibid.*, Dec. 2, 1876.
34. *Ibid.*, June 12, 1869.
35. *Ibid.*, July 8, 1876.
36. *Ibid.*
37. *Ibid.*
38. *Ibid.*

# The Resident Neophytes (*Existentes*) of the California Missions 1769-1834

By J. N. Bowman

**T**HE CALIFORNIA MISSIONS, founded between 1769 and 1823 from San Diego to Sonoma, were established as a colonization movement against possible foreign aggression from the point of view of the government and for the conversion of the Indians from the point of view of the *padres*. The plan was that when the Indians were sufficiently civilized the missions were to become *pueblos* for the neophytes; to realize this plan the missions were secularized in 1834 to 1837 and the missions became the parish centers for the new *pueblos*. In most cases the neophytes failed to perform their expected parts but many of the new *pueblos* did actually become *pueblos* through the settlement of the whites.

During the 66 years of their existence the *padres* and the government worked closely together in the colonizing-civilizing venture. A part of this cooperation was the *padres*' annual reports to their superiors in Mexico and to the government in Monterey on the conditions of the missions — the number of baptisms, marriages, deaths, the *existentes*, building operations, stock and agriculture statistics and other items of interest which indicate the status and progress of the establishments. For the first few years such reports, if made, were in the form of letters, but on May 12, 1772, each mission was directed to make annual reports; the first report as reported by Palóu\* was for 1773, and thereafter they continue to 1832 for most of the missions and to 1834 for a few. From 1769 to 1773 the number of neophytes must be estimated from the baptismal and death records.

The records from 1773 to 1832 are not now complete — many

---

\* Bolton, H. E., *Palóu's Historical Memoirs of New California*, Berkeley, 1930, III, 213.

## *The Resident Neophytes of the California Missions*

have been lost and the records of baptisms, marriages and deaths for San Luis Rey have been lost since 1847.

The formal reports including the number of resident neophytes were of three kinds. First were the Annual Reports of each mission giving the data as to the baptisms, marriages, deaths, residents, stock and agriculture, building operations and other items of interest. Second were the Biennial Reports or *noticias* concerning the Indian population only with comparative figures for each of the two years concerned. Third were the *estados* or status reports of the annual totals of each mission, made to the civil authorities in Monterey as well as to the Franciscan headquarters in Mexico City. The reports were evidently compiled from the annual reports. The first two of the above reports went to the presidente of the California missions and to the San Fernando *colegio* in Mexico, the *estados* went to the governor in Monterey with other copies to interested parties.

The *estados* and other reports and other data of the government in the archives were burned in the 1906 San Francisco fire; the president's copies found their way to the present Santa Barbara Mission archives; and the San Fernando *colegio* copies are now in the *Archivo Nacional* and in the *Museo* in Mexico City. The extant copies are now located in various places: In the Santa Barbara archives are the annual reports of the various missions covering an overall period from 1776 to 1832 but many years are missing; also the biennial reports cover the years 1793-94 to 1827-28 with three years missing; the *estados* run from 1784 to 1832, again with many years missing; there is a total of over 800 reports. Copies of a few *estados* and a few annual reports are also found in the Vallejo documents, the Bandini documents, the Estudillo documents, the San Antonio documents, the documents *para la historia de California*, and in the Hayes Mission Book — all in the Bancroft Library. Also some are in the University of Santa Clara, in the archives of Mission San Gabriel (*patentes* book), and in the Taylor collection of San Carlos documents now in the chancery of the archbishopric of San Francisco. Recently Father Maynard Geiger, archivist of the Santa Barbara archives, secured a photostat copy of the mission statistics in the *archivo nacional* in Mexico, and earlier Prof. S. A. Mosk, department of Economics, University of California, made copies of the mission statistics for various years from 1773 to 1796 and a few in 1823, also located in the *archivo nacional*.

In the 1870's Bancroft tabulated the mission statistics for the Indians, stock and agriculture from the records in the Spanish Archives in the Surveyor General's office in San Francisco. He used



the original MSS volumes and not the abstracts and copies made at the same time for Bancroft's own use. Since the records were not complete for all the years, interpolations were made with the statement that "the missing numbers have been carefully supplied," and in the photostat copies it is added that "Until 1786 exact data are almost entirely wanting, after that date until 1798 partially, but the want has been made good in such a way that there has been no *overstating* of yearly totals; the final grand totals of persons baptized are correct. In like manner figures have been supplied, in some cases after the year 1830." But the method of the interpolation has not been given. The work was very carefully done as found by checking with extant copies of the reports yet with a number of differences; but the supplied figures, however, must be discarded under the circumstances, especially for the early years before any Indians had been baptized.

Many lists of the individual mission records are also to be found in the reports of the explorers such as La Perouse, Mofras, Wilkes, Langsdorff, Duhout-Cilly and others and in the literature such as Forbes, Hall and others.\* But their method of compilation and their differences from the extant records raise serious questions as to their validity. However, Father Z. Engelhardt, late archivist of the Santa Barbara archives, in his many histories of the California Missions, gives statistical tables compiled from the records in his custody. His figures show only very slight deviation from the present extant records in the archives.

The figures in the accompanying table are for the resident Indians (*existentes*) on December 31 of each year so far as the records make this possible; they indicate the Indian population on that date. The figures are conservative; some baptized infants lived with their parents in the "wild" or infants and mature persons may have lived in the Indian *rancherías*, or persons may have been in transit from one mission to another. The residents include the neophytes of other missions sojourning at the missions in question and exclude the missions' own neophytes at or on their way to other establishments. It is not likely that the *padres* made an actual head count of the Indians, but made their figures from the baptismal and death books as is evident from the study of the figures for a number of years for several of the missions. However made, the figures may be taken as very relatively correct.

A study of the existing records of these figures compiled by

\* Humboldt, A., *New Spain*, London, 1814, IV, 301, gives figures for Indians at the California missions. They all agree with the *estados* in the Santa Barbara archives except for San Luis Obispo where Humboldt gives 432 instead of 532 — a misreading, miscopying or misprinting.

## *The Resident Neophytes of the California Missions*

Bancroft and by Engelhardt indicate no exact conformity. The differences may be due to misreading, miscopying or to the adding method; in some instances the data are for other dates than the standard December 31 of each year for the Indian *existentes*, and also for the *jurisdicciones* rather than for the missions alone, especially for the 1830's. The careful compilations of both Bancroft and Engelhardt quite conclusively indicate differences between them or both from the figures in the extant records in the Santa Barbara archives; usually the differences are small so that the total annual figures for each mission are quite close, excepting in Bancroft's case for the years for which figures were "supplied." The careful work of Engelhardt and the close agreement of his figures with the extant copies makes it possible to accept his data for some blank years in the records, on the basis of his use of data now lost. Engelhardt makes no attempt at interpolation; Bancroft's "supplied" figures must be rejected.

The discrepancies in the extant records may be attributed to misreading, miscopying or to both; but the fact must be recognized that there is no complete uniformity in the data. How careful the *padres* were in compiling their statistics, the copying process has resulted in differences in some cases quite marked. The procedure used by the *padres* in making their several copies has not been learned; it is not known which set of records was the "ribbon" copy and which were the "carbon."

The most complete set of the extant records are the *estados* and the annuals in the Santa Barbara archives and they may be accepted as the existing basic records for the years they contain; for a few years the biennial figures may be used for the years absent from the other records. The Geiger, Engelhardt and Mosk copies also may be used to fill in blank years. The figures in the San Gabriel book of *patentes*, the San Antonio records, the copies in the University of Santa Clara may well be accepted as well as those found in the collection of documents in the Bancroft Library.

For those missions and years for which no data are now available interpolations have been made in the following manner: from the books of baptisms of all 20 missions for which the records exist — San Luis Rey books have been lost since 1847 — the total number of baptisms of the year concerned was secured and from this total was deducted the number of whites (*razones*); the same process was followed with the books of deaths. The resulting figures gave plus or minus figures to be used with the figures of the preceding year in order to secure the total number of Indians in that year. These figures are conservative for the reasons already men-

tioned. Whatever value the figures may have, they are at least ascertained on a factual basis. This method also indicates the earliest Indian baptisms in the missions and so eliminates the Bancroft figures "provided" for missions and years before any Indians had been baptized. There are, however, two exceptions to the use of this method. The San Diego books were burned by the Indian uprising in November, 1775, and on opening a new set of books the number of neophytes was listed as recalled by the *padres* but without giving numbers or dates; the new series begins with item 432 on November 5, 1775. In opening the new books, Serra wrote that from 1770 to this date 470 Indians had been baptized of whom 364 had been baptized after December 31, 1774. This number, 470, may have been a misunderstanding, a miscopying or more probably the number which the *padres* hoped to recall; if this number is the correct one the book of baptisms was never corrected. In the light of these facts 431 must be accepted instead of 470. Palóu stated that no Indian baptisms had taken place up to January 24, 1770, and that before March 12, 1771, some had been baptized, and there is indication that between mid-1771 and mid-1772 39 had been baptized.\* For 1773 Palóu gives the number in the first scheduled report. The date of the first Indian baptism is unknown. For estimating the probable number of residents before 1773, the method used by the *padres* in a number of missions may be used: adding to or subtracting from the number of the preceding year the difference between the number of baptisms and deaths in the year in question. This method was used in San Diego reports for eight of the 14 years between 1773 and 1786. By using this method and working backwards the number for 1771 and 1772 have been determined. The second exception is that of San Luis Rey for 1805 and for 1834. For the former year nothing can be found as to rate of change between 1804 and 1806 among nearby missions and even among all 19 existing at that date; so in the absence of any basic data on which to work, the figure for 1805 is taken as half of the difference between the adjoining years. For 1834 the suggested figure is determined by the average rate of change of all the missions from 1825 to 1834.

Bancroft's study is the only one known which gives yearly totals for all the individual missions with a separate sheet of grand totals for all the missions by year. Unfortunately there are some discrepancies between the totals of the grand-total sheet and the

---

\* Book of Baptisms, Mission San Diego. Geiger, Father Maynard, *Palóu's Life of Junipero Serra*, Washington, 1955, 78, 160, 162, 429. Bolton, *Palóu*, *op. cit.*, II, 271. Engelhardt, Z., *Mission San Diego*, San Francisco, 1920, 32, 39, 89.



## *The Resident Neophytes of the California Missions*

adding-machine tape of each mission for each year. For 29 of the 66 years of totals there are differences between the grand-total sheet and the adding-machine tape figures ranging from one to 850 with an average of 142. For this reason the adding-machine totals rather than those of the grand-total sheet are given in the accompanying table for comparative study. The peak period, 1821, has not been disturbed but the peak periods of the individual missions differ in four cases: for San Carlos a difference of one year, for San Rafael three years, for San Luis Rey eight years and for San Luis Obispo 13 years.

Figures are available or estimated for 979 years between 1770 and 1834 and for these the *estados* provided 740 figures, the annual reports 59, the biennial reports 40, Geiger and Mosk 25, Vallejo documents 12, Engelhardt 9 and the Bancroft California Archives documents the same number, Palóu and the San Gabriel book of *patentes* 5 each, the *archivo de arcobispado* 4, the *archivo de Santa Barbara* 3, the San Antonio documents 1, and for 67 years the figures were estimated by the method described above.

The note references in the table are as follows: for the *estados* no note numbers are shown after 1784; in all other cases the note numbers refer to the Notes; also for convenient reference all interpolations figures are placed in parentheses. For convenient comparative reference the Bancroft grand-total figures are also given but where there were discrepancies in his totals the adding-machine tape figures have been used.

As stated above there is a wide difference between some of the figures in this table and the Bancroft totals; the peak period for the missions as a whole is the same but there is disagreement for the peak periods for four of the missions. The value of this table is in the checking of the Bancroft tables with the existing and extant records especially those in the Santa Barbara archives. The study indicates that exactness and uniformity of the various copies of the reports do not exist now nor in the years in which they were made. There is, however, a very great agreement so that the general total figures may be accepted as very close to the actual number as reported in the differing reports and as actually existing in each mission.

The *existentes* on December 31 of each year as reported in the records are not to be confused with the number of Indian baptisms.

The first Indian baptism in California was on July 22, 1769, when Padre Crespi on the Portolá expedition in search of Monterey Bay baptized a dying Indian girl whom he named Margarita, in the northwest corner of present San Diego County. The first Indian



baptized in a mission was on December 26, 1770, at Monterey. When the first Indian was baptized in San Diego is not known due to the burning of the records in 1775. The present San Diego books give a list of the early neophytes, without dates or numbers, as recalled by the *padres* when the new books were opened.

The table indicates a gradual decrease in the number of neophytes from 1821 onwards, and for each mission a decided drop from 1824 onwards with seven showing a slight increase in 1834 and four with slight increases also in the late 1820's and early 1830's. The trend from 1824 onwards was evidently due to local conditions, so the rather rapid decrease in the early 1830's cannot be attributed to the secularization decree of 1833 which went into effect during the following years to 1837.

TABLE SHOWING NUMBER OF RESIDENT NEOPHYTES (*Existentes*) AT EACH CALIFORNIA MISSION BY YEARS,  
TOTALS BY YEARS, TOGETHER WITH BANCROFT'S GRAND TOTALS (*Continued*)

Year	San Diego	San Carlos	San Antonio	San Gabriel	San Luis Obispo	San Juan Capistrano	San Francisco	Santa Clara	Ventura	Santa Barbara	Purísima Concepción	Santa Cruz	Soledad	San Jose	San Juan Bautista	San Miguel	San Fernando	San Luis Ray	Santa Inés	San Rafael	Sonoma	Totals	Year	Bancroft Tape Tot.	Sheet
1806	1486	550	1217	1052	830	1062	886	1406	1159	1603	1166	466	679	662	1068	949	955	961	575			18727	1806	18728	18725
1807	1511	562	1140	1097	795	1109	828	1401	1205	1539	1124	474	651	637	1072	970	986	1025	587			18713	1807	18921	18921
1808	1586	550	1108	1059	762	1096	906	1410	1290	1477	1084	485	525	544	950	963	976	1110	587			18598	1808	18622	18622
1809	1560	533	1114	1174	739	1114	1010	1398	1288	1413	1031	442	595	571	902	962	965	1121	603			18535	1809	18514	18524
1810	1611	511	1122	1199	711	1138	1057	1332	1295	1355	1020	507	598	545	700	971	953	1517	628			18970	1810	18830	18770
1811	1583	485	1103	1550	678	1209	1214	1371	1260	1325	978	462	575	961	666	964	1081	1601	611			19677	1811	19427	19627
1812	1616	455	1093	1550	677	1361	1224	1348	1211	1304	999	437	549	1172	638	968	1056	1733	611			20002	1812	20092	20002
1813	1537	448	1074	1678	663	1249	1205	1347	1169	1269	1010	398	547	1151	633	1048	1043	1815	607			19891	1813	19886	19886
1814	1428	432	1044	1679	638	1244	1180	1306	1297	1300	982	388	531	1149	607	1076	1053	1846	588			19678	1814	19664	19664
1815	1386	423	1008	1667	610	1198	1113	1306	1186	1240	1019	368	500	1298	580	1050	1016	1866	636			19467	1815	19467	19467
1816	1357	405	985	1650	592	1142	1091	1336	1328	1259	1018	358	500	1508	575	1052	1025	1913	768			19862	1816	19862	19862
1817	1430	402	962	1701	570	1138	1060	1336	1277	1226	958	408	527	1576	608	1025	1045	2269	720	(31) <sup>2</sup>		20269	1817	20427	20447
1818	1558	390	922	1644	546	1128	1100	1321	1209	1199	937	410	519	1675	582	995	1024	2246	681	386 <sup>6</sup>		20472	1818	20431	20431
1819	1425	397	902	1596	531	1078	1163	1313	1172	1159	888	381	417	1670	660	996	1024	2585	647	509 <sup>6</sup>		20513	1819	20548	20548
1820	1567	381	878	1636	504	1064	1252	1359	1127	1132	840	461	436	1754	843	973	1028	2603	635	590 <sup>6</sup>		21063	1820	21060	20413
1821	1622	374	875	1626	491	1050	1106	1388	1092	1039	808	579	450	1754	1098	956	1018	2631	604	696 <sup>6</sup>		21197	1821	21092	21092
1822	1697	341	834	1593	467	1052	958	1394	973	1010	764	499	532	1620	1222	926	1001	2663	582	830 <sup>6</sup>		20958	1822	20961	20861
1823	1758	317	817	1643	462	1062	208	1395	935	962	722	474	506	1746	1248	918	961	2721	564	895 <sup>6</sup>	482 <sup>13</sup>	20596	1823	20910	20910
1824	1829 <sup>6</sup>	306 <sup>6</sup>	806 <sup>6</sup>	1644 <sup>6</sup>	424 <sup>6</sup>	1060 <sup>6</sup>	265 <sup>6</sup>	1450 <sup>6</sup>	908 <sup>6</sup>	923 <sup>6</sup>	662 <sup>6</sup>	461 <sup>6</sup>	512 <sup>6</sup>	1806 <sup>6</sup>	1221 <sup>6</sup>	904 <sup>6</sup>	957 <sup>6</sup>	2767 <sup>6</sup>	516 <sup>6</sup>	939 <sup>6</sup>	692 <sup>6</sup>	21042	1824	21066	21066
1825	1728 <sup>17</sup>	295 <sup>17</sup>	801 <sup>17</sup>	1594 <sup>17</sup>	395 <sup>17</sup>	1041 <sup>17</sup>	238 <sup>17</sup>	1403 <sup>17</sup>	865 <sup>17</sup>	885 <sup>17</sup>	532 <sup>17</sup>	429 <sup>17</sup>	454 <sup>17</sup>	1796 <sup>17</sup>	1166 <sup>17</sup>	867 <sup>17</sup>	924 <sup>17</sup>	2756 <sup>17</sup>	500 <sup>17</sup>	1008 <sup>6</sup>	634 <sup>6</sup>	20311	1825	20377	20367
1826	1679	277	751	1565	361	1043	232	1428	852	867	521	428	409	1783	1146	852	911	2761	487	1051	641	20045	1826	20583	19783
1827	1630	275	744	1438	344	956	241	1462	833	847	471	410	373	1800	1108	834	900	2685	477	1050	667	19545	1827	19772	19572
1828	1576	234	710	1386	328	947	236	1369	789	762	445	364	333	1766	986	747	832	2736	455	1026	704	18729	1828	18860	18760
1829	1554	233	704	1383	310	934	229	1269	765	757	406	333	327	1641	969	728	831	2744	428	1008	772	18325	1829	18908	18308
1830	1554 <sup>6</sup>	229 <sup>6</sup>	681 <sup>6</sup>	1371 <sup>6</sup>	283 <sup>6</sup>	926 <sup>6</sup>	219 <sup>6</sup>	1226 <sup>6</sup>	726 <sup>6</sup>	711 <sup>6</sup>	381 <sup>6</sup>	320 <sup>6</sup>	342 <sup>6</sup>	1745 <sup>6</sup>	964 <sup>6</sup>	684 <sup>6</sup>	827 <sup>6</sup>	1396 <sup>6</sup>	408 <sup>6</sup>	970 <sup>6</sup>	760 <sup>6</sup>	16723	1830	18106	18106
1831	1536	209	661	1398	265	939	210	1184	703	679	404	298	336	1886	928	679	811	2819	388	1073	939	18345	1831	18288	18288
1832	1455 <sup>17</sup>	185 <sup>17</sup>	640 <sup>17</sup>	1320 <sup>17</sup>	231 <sup>17</sup>	900 <sup>17</sup>	204 <sup>17</sup>	1125 <sup>17</sup>	668 <sup>17</sup>	628 <sup>17</sup>	372 <sup>17</sup>	284 <sup>17</sup>	339 <sup>17</sup>	1713 <sup>17</sup>	916 <sup>17</sup>	658 <sup>17</sup>	782 <sup>17</sup>	2788 <sup>17</sup>	360 <sup>17</sup>	300 <sup>17</sup>	996 <sup>17</sup>	18684	1832	16877	16878
1833	1004 <sup>20</sup>	(183) <sup>2</sup>	602 <sup>20</sup>	1301 <sup>1</sup>	205 <sup>20</sup>	872 <sup>20</sup>	(138) <sup>2</sup>	(1096) <sup>2</sup>	645 <sup>20</sup>	590 <sup>20</sup>	345 <sup>20</sup>	(236) <sup>2</sup>	348 <sup>20</sup>	1456 <sup>15</sup>	(888) <sup>2</sup>	598 <sup>20</sup>	775 <sup>20</sup>	2822 <sup>20</sup>	346 <sup>20</sup>	(285) <sup>2</sup>	781 <sup>22</sup>	15445	1833	15555	15555
1834	1382 <sup>24</sup>	(188) <sup>2</sup>	557 <sup>15</sup>	1323 <sup>11</sup>	253 <sup>14</sup>	851 <sup>23</sup>	(136) <sup>2</sup>	(1108) <sup>2</sup>	626 <sup>21</sup>	556 <sup>2</sup>	407 <sup>23</sup>	(252) <sup>2</sup>	350 <sup>10a</sup>	(1795) <sup>2</sup>	(875) <sup>2</sup>	(608) <sup>2</sup>	(781) <sup>2</sup>	(2848) <sup>2</sup>	(321) <sup>2</sup>	181 <sup>15</sup>	(913) <sup>2</sup>	16321	1834	15217	15150

12. Col. A. S. P., *Missions*, I, 24, in Bancroft Library.13. *Estados* in Mission Santa Barbara archives.14. Prof. S. A. Monk, University of California, made copies of the California mission statistics for a number of years, as found in the *Archives Nationales*.15. Col. A. S. P., *op. cit.*, X, 14; V, 53, *es pueblo*, and 56 gives the number as 569 as of November 12; VII, 48.16. Engelhardt, Z., *Mission San Antonio*, Santa Barbara, 1929, 93.17. Biennial reports, *Mission Santa Barbara* archives.18. Engelhardt, Z., *Mission San Luis Obispo*, Santa Barbara, 1939, 157.18a. Same, *Mission Soledad*, Santa Barbara, 1929, 81.19. Same, *Mission San Juan Bautista*, Santa Barbara, 1931, 127.

20. Vallejo documents, XXXI, 57, in Bancroft Library.

21. Book of *paseantes* in Chancery of the Los Angeles Archbishopric.22. Book of Baptisms, *Mission Sonoma*, in Bancroft Library.23. Engelhardt, Z., *Mission San Juan Capistrano*, Los Angeles, 1922, 175.24. Same, *Mission San Diego*, San Francisco, 1920, 301.25. Same, *Mission Purísima Concepción*, Santa Barbara, 1932, 58.

baptized in a mission was on December 26, 1770, at Monterey. When the first Indian was baptized in San Diego is not known due to the burning of the records in 1775. The present San Diego books give a list of the early neophytes, without dates or numbers, as recalled by the *padres* when the new books were opened.

The table indicates a gradual decrease in the number of neophytes from 1821 onwards, and for each mission a decided drop from 1824 onwards with seven showing a slight increase in 1834 and four with slight increases also in the late 1820's and early 1830's. The trend from 1824 onwards was evidently due to local conditions, so the rather rapid decrease in the early 1830's cannot be attributed to the secularization decree of 1833 which went into effect during the following years to 1837.



TABLE SHOWING NUMBER OF RESIDENT NEOPHYTES (*Existentes*) AT EACH CALIFORNIA MISSION BY YEARS,  
TOTALS BY YEARS, TOGETHER WITH BANCROFT'S GRAND TOTALS

Year	San Diego	San Carlos	San Antonio	San Gabriel	San Luis Obispo	San Juan Capistrano	San Francisco	Santa Clara	Ventura	Santa Barbara	Purisima Concepcion	Santa Cruz	Soledad	San Jose	San Juan Bautista	San Miguel	San Fernando	San Luis Rey	Santa Ines	San Rafael	Sonoma	Totals	Year	Bancroft Tape Tot. Sheet	
1769	(0)																					0	1769	23	23
1770	(0)	(2) <sup>1</sup>																				2	1770	97	97
1771	(13) <sup>2</sup>	(21) <sup>2</sup>	(7) <sup>2</sup>	(1) <sup>2</sup>																		42	1771	248	320
1772	(45) <sup>2</sup>	(28) <sup>2</sup>	(19) <sup>2</sup>	(50) <sup>2</sup>																		142	1772	496	648
1773	76 <sup>4</sup>	154 <sup>4</sup>	150 <sup>4</sup>	71 <sup>4</sup>	11 <sup>4</sup>																	462	1773	702	823
1774	97 <sup>5</sup>	244 <sup>5</sup>	178 <sup>5</sup>	140 <sup>5</sup>	103 <sup>5</sup>																	762	1774	753	850
1775	250 <sup>6</sup>	250 <sup>6</sup>	348 <sup>6</sup>	164 <sup>6</sup>	179 <sup>6</sup>																	1191	1775	921	1062
1776	440 <sup>7</sup>	(327) <sup>2</sup>	313 <sup>8</sup>	(192) <sup>2</sup>	(192) <sup>2</sup>	(4) <sup>2</sup>	(0) <sup>9</sup>															1468	1776	1680	1680
1777	591 <sup>7</sup>	(440) <sup>2</sup>	324 <sup>10</sup>	(232) <sup>2</sup>	(284) <sup>2</sup>	(41) <sup>2</sup>	(32) <sup>2</sup>	(41) <sup>2</sup>														1985	1777	1984	1984
1778	632 <sup>5</sup>	(472) <sup>2</sup>	346 <sup>5</sup>	(315) <sup>2</sup>	288 <sup>5</sup>	(157) <sup>2</sup>	73 <sup>5</sup>	91 <sup>5</sup>														2374	1778	2153	2152
1779	656 <sup>5</sup>	(457) <sup>2</sup>	415 <sup>5</sup>	409 <sup>5</sup>	(381) <sup>2</sup>	231 <sup>5</sup>	(126) <sup>2</sup>	111 <sup>5</sup>														2786	1779	2521	2521
1780	671 <sup>6</sup>	(446) <sup>2</sup>	532 <sup>10</sup>	452 <sup>11</sup>	343 <sup>5</sup>	(266) <sup>2</sup>	(176) <sup>2</sup>	(189) <sup>2</sup>														3075	1780	3027	3027
1781	681 <sup>5</sup>	(412) <sup>2</sup>	540 <sup>10</sup>	570 <sup>11</sup>	446 <sup>5</sup>	431 <sup>5</sup>	(204) <sup>2</sup>	(243) <sup>2</sup>														3527	1781	3224	3222
1782	753 <sup>5</sup>	(432) <sup>2</sup>	(565) <sup>2</sup>	594 <sup>5</sup>	(514) <sup>2</sup>	352 <sup>5</sup>	188 <sup>5</sup>	(301) <sup>2</sup>	(3) <sup>2</sup>													3702	1782	3641	3641
1783	740 <sup>5</sup>	614 <sup>5</sup>	582 <sup>12</sup>	638 <sup>12</sup>	492 <sup>12</sup>	383 <sup>12</sup>	215 <sup>5</sup>	338 <sup>12</sup>	22 <sup>12</sup>													4024	1783	4009	4009
1784	786 <sup>13</sup>	645 <sup>13</sup>	773 <sup>13</sup>	749 <sup>13</sup>	481 <sup>13</sup>	431 <sup>13</sup>	260 <sup>13</sup>	466 <sup>13</sup>	64 <sup>13</sup>													4655	1784	4602	4602
1785	838	711	850	843	492	544	250	475	120													5123	1785	5202	5103
1786	890	694	886	855	524	544	354	557	144	3												5451	1786	5447	5447
1787	914	707	979	942	531	595	426	647	266	182	(0)											6189	1787	6118	6168
1788	923	720	1028	1000	578	662	426	672	339	307	95											6750	1788	6734	6734
1789	940 <sup>5</sup>	732 <sup>5</sup>	1064 <sup>5</sup>	1044 <sup>5</sup>	582 <sup>5</sup>	771 <sup>5</sup>	429 <sup>5</sup>	787 <sup>5</sup>	380 <sup>5</sup>	425 <sup>14</sup>	151 <sup>5</sup>											7306	1789	7220	7170
1790	933	712	1092	1078	599	765	525	910	419	407	278											7718	1790	7428	7428
1791	883	770	1083	1204	682	766	590	957	462	499	434	86	9									8425	1791	8734	8724
1792	862	800	1074	1219	736	822	622	1001	608	504	510	155	118									9031	1792	9457	9457
1793	864	835	1142	1225	751	969	711	1062	508	541	546	233	213									9605	1793	9254	9494
1794	879	860	1149	1260	803	976	913	1418	549	549	656	332	193									10537	1794	10564	10564
1795	881	876	1150	1290	810	983	872	1541	537	569	743	507	240									11025	1795	10997	10997
1796	908	835	1168	1331	814	994	790	1424	725	646	760	523	289									11207	1796	11209	11209
1797	1405	832	1176	1316	799	1107	710	1360	736	782	842	491	322	33								12080	1797	12083	12083
1798	1526	738	1124	1311	790	1107	645	1382	766	796	920	504	345	154								12922	1798	12886	13036
1799	1540	720	1097	1254	786	1060	603	1343	747	792	937	478	444	189								13090	1799	13068	13069
1800	1511	747	1114	1136	724	1046	635	1318	722	864	961	472	512	277								13658	1800	13522	13522
1801	1538	705	1097	1129	697	1022	778	1322	771	1022	956	442	565	460								14860	1801	14456	14656
1802	1559	688	1052	1047	699	1013	814	1291	938	1093	1028	437	563	622								15462	1802	15298	15298
1803	1587	591	1158	1123	919	1027	1051	1271	1078	1792	1436	437	627	729								18186	1803	18082	18082
1804	1589	591	1203	1294	832	1024	1103	1240	1107	1783	1520	461	687	779								19099	1804	19070	19070
1805	(1592) <sup>2</sup>	587 <sup>6</sup>	1296 <sup>14</sup>	1314 <sup>11</sup>	961 <sup>12</sup>	(1100) <sup>2</sup>	(1139) <sup>2</sup>	(1469) <sup>2</sup>	(1131) <sup>2</sup>	1756 <sup>7</sup>	1383 <sup>17</sup>	(481) <sup>2</sup>	688 <sup>18a</sup>	(809) <sup>2</sup>	1112 <sup>19</sup>	(930) <sup>2</sup>	(1110) <sup>2</sup>	(798) <sup>2</sup>	(295) <sup>2</sup>			19951	1805	20355	20355

1. Bolton, *Polsu*, op. cit., II, 296, gives December 26, 1770, as the date of the first mission Indian baptism at San Carlos. Book of Baptisms of San Carlos in Chancery of Fresno-Monterey Bishopric.2. No figures available. Figures are estimated: Plus or minus differences between total number of baptisms in the year in question less the number of *razones* (whites) and the total number of deaths for the same year less the number of *razones* of this year, giving a plus or minus number relative to the preceding year.

3. Mgr. J. H. Cullerton, Chancellor of Fresno-Monterey Bishopric, reports the records as giving one Indian baptized and one Indian died in this year.

4. Bolton, *Polsu*, op. cit., III, 239.5. Father Geiger, archivist of Mission Santa Barbara, secured recent photostat copies of the mission records of statistics of California in the *Archivo Nacional*, Mexico.

6. Annual reports in Mission Santa Barbara archives.

7. *Archivo de Santo Borbo*, X, 490; V, 239, 241, in Bancroft Library.

8. San Antonio documents, 7, in Bancroft Library.

9. Book of Baptisms, Mission Dolores.

10. *Archivo de Arcobispado* (Taylor documents), V, 376, in Chancery of San Francisco Archbishopric.

11. Book of patents, Mission San Gabriel.

[Tabulation and Notes continued on Refold]

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

## 25) AT EACH CALIFORNIA MISSION BY YEARS, CROFT'S GRAND TOTALS

San Jose	San Juan Bautista	San Miguel	San Fernando	San Luis Rey	Santa Ines	San Rafael	Sonoma	Totals	Year	Bancroft Tape Tot. Sheet
								0	1769	23 23
								2	1770	97 97
								42	1771	248 320
								142	1772	496 648
								462	1773	702 823
								762	1774	753 850
								1191	1775	921 1062
								1468	1776	1680 1680
								1985	1777	1984 1984
								2374	1778	2153 2152
								2786	1779	2521 2521
								3075	1780	3027 3027
								3527	1781	3224 3222
								3702	1782	3641 3641
								4024	1783	4009 4009
								4655	1784	4602 4602
								5123	1785	5202 5103
								5451	1786	5447 5447
								6189	1787	6118 6168
								6750	1788	6734 6734
								7305	1789	7220 7170
								7718	1790	7428 7428
								8425	1791	8734 8724
								9031	1792	9457 9457
								9605	1793	9254 9494
								10537	1794	10564 10564
								11025	1795	10997 10997
								11207	1796	11209 11209
33	86	27	56					12080	1797	12083 12083
154	296	169	135	214				12922	1798	12886 13036
189	347	277	191	279				13090	1799	13068 13069
277	625	366	301	337				13668	1800	13522 13522
460	766	557	501	532				14860	1801	14456 14656
622	958	614	614	432				15462	1802	15298 15298
729	1017	908	820	615				18186	1803	18082 18082
779	1112	928	985	636	225			19099	1804	19070 19070
809) <sup>2</sup>	1112 <sup>19</sup>	(930) <sup>2</sup>	(1110) <sup>2</sup>	(798) <sup>2</sup>	(295) <sup>2</sup>			19951	1805	20355 20355

5. Father Geiger, archivist of Mission Santa Barbara, secured recently photostat copies of the mission records of statistics of California in the *Archivo Nacional*, Mexico.
6. Annual reports in Mission Santa Barbara archives.
7. *Archivo de Santa Barbara*, X, 496; V, 239, 241, in Bancroft Library.
8. San Antonio documents, 7, in Bancroft Library.
9. Book of Baptisms, Mission Dolores.
10. *Archivo de Arcobispado* (Taylor documents), V, 376, in Chancery of San Francisco Archbishopric.
11. Book of *patentes*, Mission San Gabriel.

[Tabulation and Notes continued on Refold]

# Mining Camps *of the* Soledad

By Arthur B. Perkins

## PART I



PLACE NAMES OF A PAST CENTURY are misleading, as of today. The eastern, or headwater, end of the Santa Clara Valley, in Los Angeles County, may be referred to, in contemporary writing, as "Rancho San Francisco," "Rancho San Francisquito" or "San Francisquito," applicable alike to the Rancho, the Canyon, through which twisted tortuously the "Road to the Tulares" and the northern Mines, or the area. Or it may have been called "Soledad" which could also refer to (1) a reference point on the boundary line of Rancho San Francisco, or (2) the Canyon of the Soledad, or (3) the forgotten Mining Camp of the same name.<sup>1</sup>

Herein as used, "Soledad" refers to, and blankets, the Township of Soledad, northwesterly boundary of Los Angeles County. It was first described as "All that part of Los Angeles County lying North of the Summit Ridge of the Sierra Madre or Main Coast Range" in 1870.<sup>2</sup> It was formally established in 1878 as "All that part of Los Angeles County, lying North of the Township line, between Townships 3 and 4 North."<sup>3</sup>

The isolation of that Township at that time was almost unbelievable. There was a barrier between San Fernando, referring to the Mission, the City or the Valley, and Newhall, business center of the Township since its inception. The only Pass, today called the "Santa Clara Divide," was supremely difficult, almost inaccessible. The old Trail, known as Grapevine Canyon, rose hundreds of feet within a quarter mile, plus surmounting a precipitous rock ledge about four feet high.<sup>4</sup> Vehicles bumped over or down this ledge. If the wheels failed to break, or the running gear didn't snap, one continued. Originally, hand ropes and manpower stationed on the crest of the Pass were a "must."<sup>5</sup> By the late Fifties, a windlass was at the summit to help.<sup>6</sup> The worst physical handicaps

were encountered on the south slope, "slope" being a polite term. Traffic of that day was not squeamish about road conditions. There were no very good roads anywhere. This Divide, or Pass, barrier effectively blocked normal intercourse between the few peoples of the Los Angeles Basin and those of Soledad.<sup>7</sup>

There were but two other ways out of the Soledad country in the Fifties. One was the mentioned Road of the Tulares. That was tough travelling through the San Francisquito Canyon, narrow, steep winding, rocky. One was El Camino Real, the original road, since 1798 connecting Missions San Fernando and San Buenaventura. In dry weather, this was not a bad road, barring sand, chuck holes, the Pass and other minor difficulties. In wet weather, the Santa Clara River was practically unfordable. Also, after fifty miles, there was the Ocean. If you wanted to get much farther, you could take ship — when one arrived. The other was the "Road to the Tulares" and the Northern Mines. That was tough travelling through the narrow, steep, winding, rocky San Francisquito Canyon.<sup>8</sup>

The isolation of the Soledad, reducing outside contacts to a minimum, lasted until 1863, when E. F. Beale completed his Big Cut through the Divide and opened his Toll Road, which saved to Los Angeles the staging and, more important, the freighting, the major contributions to the economic resources of that day.<sup>9</sup>

Due to all these factors, the Soledad was almost an unknown country, to be populated and developed by a handful of folks little dependent upon the settlement at Los Angeles. It was not a small Township "about 1,200,000 acres, or, say something more than one third the area of the County . . . watered by the Santa Clara River, which here takes its rise."<sup>10</sup>

The Mission System, of which Rancho San Francisco had been part, generally speaking, gobbled all irrigable and arable Valley Land. That was logical. First comers naturally take the best of anything. The local Indians did not count. Incidentally, the System established monopolies of land ownership, for later the tremendous land grants passed to new individual owners as units. Therefore mountainous, hilly or canyon lands only were available to the Californians, the real developers of the country, dependent on the products of their labor. Without adequate farming lands, settlers were, perforce, stockmen, raising cattle, sheep and horses. Herders, moving slowly over the hills after their charges are natural prospectors. Unusual pebbles went into their pockets, serving later as conversation pieces. Vaqueros best knew their domain and what was to be found naturally within it.



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

### PLACERITAS, 1842

Even so, Francisco Lopez, Domingo Bermudez and Manuel Cota may have been startled March 9th, 1842, when they found grains of gold on the roots of plants which they pulled. It may have been roots of wild onions, but there were so many different plants used medicinally and for food by local Californians. That was one discovery, perpetuated in legal records, in California's Archives, acceptable as evidence in today courts of law, and leaving open no questions of personalities, individuals or dates.

Lopez and his friends immediately petitioned the Governor, at Santa Barbara, for mining title.<sup>11</sup> No record has been found indicating any kind of title granted the gold discoverers. The site was within the generally recognized boundaries of Rancho San Francisco, Del Valle's property. The *Ayuntamiento*, or City Council, of the Pueblo of Los Angeles formalized the gold discovery by commissioning Ygnacio Del Valle as an "*encargado Justicia*, Rancho del Mision San Fernando" with authority to collect charges for such service as use of the rancho firewood, water and grazing, May 3rd, 1842.<sup>12</sup> Thenceforward, the canyon of the discovery was known as "Placeritas," and it became the first of the mining camps of the Soledad.

Placer gold is recoverable by "panning," i.e. with the *batea*, horn or pan. Water is the primary essential. Experienced Sonoran miners had a "dry pan" technique, winnowing the sands by blowing. It would seem a bad idea for amateurs. Coughing at the wrong time could have been an expensive luxury. Two dollars a day in dust was considered a good day's return to the miner in the Placeritas field.

There may have been one "rocker" or "cradle" used in Placeritas. Mr. Andrew Anderson, in 1860, wrote,

I was one of the first fourteen that went to the mines, and the only American there. I made the first gold washing machine at that time . . . the first in California. The natives appeared to be much surprised at its adaptation for gold washing and said there was never any made, of any kind, in the country.

It was not a rocker, but a kind of cylinder-shaped machine . . . about 3 feet in diameter and 3 feet in height, with a gate an inch from the bottom. A shaft was in the center with arms, and on the arm at the bottom, there were crow teeth,  $\frac{5}{8}$  inches apart, and  $\frac{1}{4}$  inch from the bottom . . . It was the best machine for gathering gold that I have ever seen. I worked it 14 days . . . and got two pounds of fine gold worth, at that time, \$14.00 per ounce.

We were driven out by the Tulare Indians . . . All my statements are known to be correct by the old settlers of California, to wit, Johnson, a blacksmith who made the iron work . . . John Rowland,

J. Workman, John Temple, Abel Stearns, Alexander Bell, Louis Robidoux, John Forster and a Mr. Saxton . . .<sup>13</sup>

In June, 1842, del Valle reported to Prefect Arguello "that only a few miners were not making a dollar a day . . . the placers were of great extent . . . many small nuggets had been found . . . no taxes should yet be imposed . . . there had been a hundred miners, now only fifty, as the water was short, but the miners would return with the rains."<sup>14</sup>

The first gold that came from Placeritas, was sent by Lopez and his companions to Governor Alvarado. After assurance that it was really gold, Alvarado had it made into earrings for his wife.<sup>15</sup>

Placering extended about two leagues down the canyon. Don Antonio Coronel has stated that he, with the assistance of three Indian laborers, placered some \$600 worth of dust within two months, in 1842. By the end of 1843, an estimated 2,000 ounces of dust had been shipped, largely through the accounts of Don Abel Stearns.<sup>16</sup> Mojave Indians, raiding down the Santa Clara, are reported to have driven the miners from the canyon, abruptly terminating California's earliest placering operations.

As a gold camp, few California visitors failed to make a visit to Placeritas. Such included Dufлот de Mofras, who credited a French citizen, one Charles Baric, with the discovery.<sup>17</sup> G. M. Waseurtz, of Sandels, made two pencil sketches of the placers in 1842, one portraying Antonio Mendoza and his gold pan, whom Waseurtz credits with the discovery.<sup>18</sup> Edward Visscher, the artist, mentioned Placeritas gold discovery and mining camp, writing in 1842, but he did not come out from Los Angeles to see it.<sup>19</sup> John Bidwell visited Placeritas in 1845.<sup>20</sup> He reported about thirty men then working, "mostly N. Mexicans" (probably Sonorans), making about 25 cents a day. In 1849, William Lewis Manly, himself a miner, does not mention the camp, although he spent several days within a short distance of it.<sup>21</sup> It was not reflected in the "Census of 1850," nor in the Pacific Railroad Report of 1852.<sup>22</sup> In 1848, the Journal of Lt. Hollingsworth recorded a brief stop at Andres Pico's home at San Fernando Mission, a prelude to eight days of grief getting carts and goods over the Pass, but makes no mention of Placeritas. Of course, placer camps short of water supply, excepting in the rainy season, are slightly erratic in continuity. The miners leave, along with the rainy season. They fully intend to return with the rains, but so many contingencies intervene. This leads to a certain lack of stability civic wise.

There was undoubtedly a desultory placering carried on each year by the Californians. The big buildup of the local placer camps

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

may have started in 1855. There were two reasons why. The year of 1854 had been a year of drought. The cattlemen—and who were not—were in a bad way. There was some cash return in mining. Possibly more important, at this time the Kern County mining excitement was on. Miners from the north, with no luck in the Kern mines, drifted down to Los Angeles rather than face the long walk back to the north. They worked in the local placers long enough to accumulate a small grub stake.

By 1860, Placeritas had become a small but active camp. As a Los Angeles *Star* editorial said in 1859, “Miners are now at work in the San Fernando hills rolling out the gold. In the hills beyond, discoveries have been made which prove the whole district to be one grand gold placer.”<sup>23</sup> Charles Raggio and Baptiste Suracco, as partners, had opened a small general supply store there.<sup>24</sup>

The first attempts to hydraulic the placers may have been in the early Sixties, for the Federal sectioning survey, done by Norway, about 1865, recorded “calls,” or tie-ins to several building flumes, and implied an active camp.<sup>25</sup> Hydraulic mining failed. The water supply was inadequate.

Paulsen’s *Directory* of 1875 listed Sanford Lyon, as a stockman, John Howe, as a farmer, and about six Californians from Placeritas,<sup>26</sup> indicating that the camp was occupied. The following year saw much more mining activity, as the Chinese work force, having completed the railroad, dispersed and scattered all over the local mining area.

In 1888, a Los Angeles group paid \$15,000 for Placeritas acreage, sunk a thirty foot well, developed steam power, and attempted another hydraulic operation with the usual results, Gold present and recoverable, but water supply inadequate.<sup>27</sup> The California State Mineralogist’s Reports indicate some consistent activity up to the turn of the century, when the tributary canyons, Orofino and Quigley were active.

In the early Twenties, several stone cabins, dating from mining days, still stood on the Walker Ranch, at the head of the canyon. They were finally razed and their materials used in new ranch buildings.

The canyon, from Highway 6 to its crest, was thoroughly placered as the turned and re-turned gravel banks, along the creek sides, and the “gopher holes” on the hill side, testify. From time to time, some optimists try to substitute mechanical devices for water. The operations always end in the same way, abandonment. During the depression of 1930, successful panning was done, but the daily return was quite low.



Placeritas was formally introduced to a new generation in 1930, when *Ramona Parlor No. 109*, *Native Sons of the Golden West*, the *La Mesa Club* and the *Kiwanis Club of Newhall-Saugus* collaborated in setting a bronze plaque to the memory of Francisco Lopez at the supposed original discovery site. Somehow Bermudez and Cota were forgotten. Since that year, a surprising amount of publicity has been given the silent canyon, now beginning to fill up with homes. In 1956, the State of California dedicated a Historic Memorial Park, covering several acres of the old placer field, now functioning under the Parks and Recreation Department of Los Angeles County.

### SAN FELICIANA, 1843

Francisco Lopez has been accredited by some with the discovery of California's second gold camp, the placers of San Feliciana, 10 or 12 miles northerly from Placeritas, just inside the Los Angeles County boundaries. This was in 1843.<sup>28</sup>

In 1846, the camp was sufficiently active for *Ayuntamiento*, or City Council, of the Pueblo to appoint a Commission to gather information pertinent to setting up regulations for government. Francisco Garcia was appointed sub-prefect for the camp.<sup>29</sup> Without confirmation, there has been a story to the effect that José Salazar, who married Antonio del Valle's widow and was later Alcalde of the Pueblo, made a \$42,000 seasonal clean up in the discovery year. In 1854, Garcia was reported to have made a seasonal recovery of gold dust worth \$65,000.<sup>30</sup> Not much later, a \$1900 gold nugget was found at the junction of Palomas and Sheep Creek Canyons. It may have been found by José Espinosa, for J. M. Guinn records an affidavit of purchase by Sanford Lyon, of such a nugget, for \$1928. This would be the largest recorded nugget of the Soledad.<sup>31</sup>

No record of Indian trouble, as experienced in Placeritas, has been found. Historically, San Feliciana was apparently mined chiefly by neighboring Ventura County residents and the dust probably went into Ventura County trade channels. San Feliciana was located "33 miles up the north bank of the Santa Clara River to Piru creek — up the east bank 8 miles to mouth of San Feliciana, up 4 miles to camp, a large red hill, little water, and chiefly Mexicans."<sup>32</sup>

In today's language, take the road on top of San Felicia Dam to Dominguez' ranch, thence up the Lechler ranch road to the forks. Start walking up the left fork (unless a road has been built



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

lately), four miles to the red hill, and you have arrived. Old mine workings are scattered over the surrounding hills. As of the early twenties, there were several stone cabins in very bad repair. About Piru, there used to be many stories in circulation of individual mining successes up the canyon, but they cannot be documented.

According to State Mineralogist Reports, the San Feliciana placer diggings were "situated at an elevation of 2100 feet, between Castaca diggings and Piru Creek, 12 miles northwest of Newhall, on the Southern Pacific Railroad, the area of gravel being about 8 x 4 miles, with average depth of 15 feet."<sup>33</sup>

Placering activity very shortly drifted down the canyon on the Los Angeles County side to the Las Palomas Mining District, possibly better known as the "Castaca" placer. Those diggings were "four miles north of Castaca (Castaic) station, on the branch railroad to Santa Barbara, T 5 N, R 16 W, S. B. M. . . . the gravels averaged 90 feet . . . worked for thirty years, . . . off and on . . . At the junction of Palomas Canyon and Sheep Creek was found one piece of gold worth \$1900 . . . each rainy season Palomas Canyon is worked by Mexicans."<sup>34</sup>

At one time, a ditch was suggested from Elizabeth Canyon to Elizabeth Lake for adequate water supply. Along those lines, nothing ever seems to have been done. The local water supply seems to have been filed upon by one W. M. Jenkins who settled in the Castaic around 1862, and was thereafter very active in mining ventures.

About 1889 "extensive deposits of auriferous gravel . . . working with help of Chinese . . . using a small hydraulic collecting water from a one and a fourth miner's inch spring . . . supplies a 2" nozzle two and a half hours a day . . . the gold is sheet gold more like tide-scouring than rolling stream action . . . accounts of yields are conflicting . . . if water could be brought from Piru Creek . . . the gravel would pay" wrote E. B. Preston, who also mentioned the workings in Charles Canyon and LaDura Canyon.

### SAN FRANCISQUITO

In 1851, in accordance with the brand new Statutes of the brand new State of California, the Court of Sessions of Los Angeles decreed:

The following to be public highways: Tulare road to the Mines, by the Tulares, and to Santa Barbara by Cahuenga or Verdugo to San Fernando; from San Fernando to the Rancho of San Francisco; from San Francisco to the Canada of Alamos (San Francisquito); from Canada of Alamos to Rabbit Lake (Elizabeth Lake); from Rabbit Lake to Tejon, etc.<sup>36</sup>

In 1853, Lieut. Williamson's Railroad Survey was working in the San Francisquito, following the traditional road, used by any or all if and providing that they could get their loads over the San Fernando Pass. Logically, this was the first of the local canyons to be settled, prospected and mined.

By 1860, there were enough Democratic partisans in the canyon to warrant organization, which was accomplished in a meeting held at Fountain's home.<sup>37</sup> Fountain was then operating Lyon's Station (scheduled and known as "Fountain's Station" at that date). The San Francisco to Los Angeles Telegraph line was being built.<sup>38</sup> Signs of progress, but there was still plenty of trouble with the Indians from the Mojave "250 of whom were reported passing Elizabeth Lake."<sup>39</sup>

Who first guessed, or proved, that the San Francisquito Canyon gravels carried gold, is not known. Enrichment ran about all of the way down the canyon. That brought more people, and by 1862 enough traffic had developed to warrant County expenditures of \$1,571 on the road.<sup>40</sup> That was a lot of road money to be spent. There were only about 12,000 "white" people in the County.

As is equally true of all of the Soledad mining camps, no production records exist. The Wells Fargo Express Company, whose records are the source of statistical gold production in the camps of the north, were not represented in the early days of the Soledad. There probably was not a store in the Pueblo, that did not welcome gold dust over the counter. Why not? There was sometimes more profit in the dust than in the rest of the transaction. Apropos of placer production records, Harris Newmark says:

Although cattle raising was the mainstay of Southern California and gold mining never played a very important part here, Wells Fargo & Co., during the Spring, frequently shipped thousands of dollars worth of gold at a time, gathered from Santa Anita, San Gabriel and San Fernando placers, while probably an equal amount was forwarded through other channels.<sup>42</sup>

We quote an old resident, Mr. Luis Raggio, who says:

I was born November 13th, 1884, on the old Raggio Rancho in San Francisquito, and was baptized at the Church of Our Lady, Queen of the Angeles, at Los Angeles Plaza in 1885, when I was six months old. My Father, Charles Raggio, had come to the mines about 1860, when he and Baptiste Suracco had a store at Placeritas, but when that Camp sort of faded, he went over to San Francisquito, which was showing more activity.

In 1876, Father was feeding about 50 Chinamen, who were working the tailings back of the miners up where Power Plant No. 2 now stands. That whole flat was very rich. The dust was not as fine



— Arthur B. Perkins collection.

### THE TOWN OF MENTRYVILLE (POPULARLY KNOWN AS PICO)

*This photograph, taken possibly in 1881, shows the shops of the town on the left and camp on the right. Although the town was named Mentryville officially it was always known as Pico. General Andrés Pico, for whom Pico Canyon was named, was owner of one of the first mining claims in the Canyon.*





— Arthur B. Perkins collection.

### OLD NEWHALL

*This photograph is one of the earliest views of Newhall — probably taken in 1882. Shown on the left is Powell's Palace Saloon; in the center, the Campton Store, which was the center of Soledad Township business for more than fifty years and, on the right, is the Derrick Saloon, that all but obstructs the view of the community school house in the distance.*





— Arthur B. Perkins collection.

### NEWHALL TEN YEARS LATER

*This photograph, taken in 1892, shows the main square in Newhall when traffic was heavy during wheat harvest time. The wagons are laden with wheat from Newhall Ranch and are on their way to warehouse, from which this picture was probably taken. The school house, in the center background, stands out above the stores and saloons.*



— Arthur B. Perkins collection.

### PARDEE'S LIVERY BARN

*This barn, built in 1887, was patronized by nearly everyone in Newhall. It stood until 1920, when it was wrecked for salvage.*

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

as some of the other placers. The Camp's two richest fields were at the Power Plant site, and at Drinkwater Canyon, a half mile further down the Canyon.

In 1880, Father got the Patent to his Ranch. He died in 1888. Mother was left a widow with seven children to support. When I was a boy, I had a rocker of my own, and used to dry wash and make 50 cents to 75 cents a day working it, to help out. We children used to pack gallon bottles of wine over to the other camps and sell the wine for 50 cents a gallon. In 1897, we used to go over to Haskell Canyon selling. Dry Canyon, Haskell Canyon and Ratsburg were really just one continuous field.

There was a little bowl in Dry Canyon. They called it the Gold Bowl. The dirt was packed down to water on burros, a half sack to the load. The last successful work there was done by Ysadore Garcia about 1934. There was hydraulicking at the Highchew rancho, at Drinkwater Canyon, and at Wild Cat Canyon, where Allen G. Beebe was operating. He lived in an adobe on our rancho.

Father was a buyer of honey, beans, wool and gold dust, shipping the dust to San Francisco, and the other purchases to merchants in Los Angeles. I remember his buying 1,000 sacks of beans over near Santa Paula, delivered at our rancho for 3 cents a pound. He sold the beans to old man Haas, in Los Angeles, for 10 cents FOB the rancho.

Father was afraid of banks and used to hide his gold dust and money. We never found it, nor knew where it was hidden until long after his death, when an adobe brick in one of the buildings broke, and exposed a can with nearly a thousand dollars worth of gold in it. Later, much more dust and gold was found, but not by any of the family, who never profited from it. After the Dam went out, there were some gold coins exposed on top of the ground. The family salvage was small. In the mining days, W. W. Jenkins filed on our water supply and piped it down the canyon to the Castaic placers.<sup>43</sup>

The Dam to which Mr. Raggio referred, was the San Francisquito Dam, of the City of Los Angeles, which failed March 12th, 1928, with resultant loss of hundreds of lives and much property. Where the Raggio ranch had once stood, a hundred feet of water flooded, leaving nothing that had been in its path.

San Francisquito was seasonally quite active in the Eighteen Seventies and Eighties, less so in the Nineties. Its last activity followed the Dam's collapse, at which time new and wider channels were cut to bedrock. These new exposures were thoroughly worked by a new generation of miners in 1928. Locally, there was much talk of some excellent recoveries, but as the dust was not marketed locally, no estimates of recovery can be made.



## DEAD RIVER

Sooner or later, questions arise on this story of placers. Obviously, there must be a source of enrichment for these many placers, mentioned and yet to be mentioned. There must be a basic connection between the camps. There was:

"A Dead River" is a channel, formerly occupied by a running stream, filled with earth, or rocky matter. A dry river bed is not a Dead River. Dead Rivers in California are on the western slopes of the Sierra Nevada; they are all auriferous and therefore have been sought for and examined. They are not less interesting to the miners than to the geologists and not less important to the statesman than to the antiquarian.<sup>44</sup>

So wrote Mr. John S. Hittell. Locally, "the richest part of the gravel is not exclusively on bed rock, but in gravel marked by iron oxide (red dirt). These are sometimes above bed rock, sometimes above one another. Hence, conflicting reports on results."<sup>45</sup>

As regards the gold and the source, "the gold is generally fine, but occasionally coarse gold is found in the terraces which mark the successive flood plains of an ancient river which flowed south from Mojave Desert."<sup>46</sup>

To be really technical:

Gold was brought into California with the intrusion through the Mesozoic sediments of the mass of igneous granitic rock which form the core of the lofty Sierras . . . lifting the overlaying sediments . . . metamorphosed the cretaceous sediments on the flanks of the uplift . . . and in joints and fissures of granitic and metamorphic rocks, gold bearing quartz was deposited . . .

Then followed a long period of erosion, in Cretaceous and Tertiary times, in which the high mountain masses were planed down . . . gold became concentrated and deposited with gravels along stream beds, in valleys and canyons forming the numerous placer deposits.

Volcanic eruptions took place in late Tertiary . . . much surface became covered . . . old placers buried under this mass of volcanic rock and mud . . . new river channels and valleys, canyons . . . new placer deposits formed by the extensive erosion.<sup>47</sup>

There were four accepted methods of recovering gold from the placers.<sup>48</sup> Oldest of these methods was recovery by wet or dry "washing." "Dry" washers, or "cradles" or "rockers" were designed to recover by precipitating the gold by agitation. In "panning," with horn, pan or *batea* (in Mexico), only a small amount of water was necessary. Mexican miners have a way of panning without water. As they have to separate the material by blowing, there are two handicaps, it is very hard on one's lungs, and it requires considerable patience to get results.



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

Where plenty of water was available, the gravels were "hydraulicked," forced into "long toms," or "plates" or "riffles," designed to catch the gold. If the placer gravels were thick, or excessively rich on the bed rock, "drifting" or tunneling into the Dead River channels was resorted to. If some water was available, and the gold bearing gravels rose in enriched terraces or layers, "booming" was used. This was simply storing a small water flow and releasing the storage as a flood into the banks or gravels. In Soledad placers, all of these methods were used.

The Reberg mine, in Arrastra Canyon, "drifted" in terrace deposits, meaning that although they may have been deposited at different geologic eras, the layers were just as workable as in a many-layered cake. San Francisquito was worked by hydraulicking, to the limit of the water supply. At Castaic, W. W. Jenkins had but  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miner's inches of water available. This water could be stored and used in "booming." At Bouquet, nothing worked. The gold was too fine. The water supply was inadequate. Ratsburg, a camp of the Nineties, at the junction of the Bouquet and San Francisquito Canyon roads, is today marked by pock marked hills, left by shallow "drifting." Some of that old field is now covered by "tract houses" of Santa Clarita.

Gold pans and dry washers were used in every placer camp. They were the poor man's mining equipment. Properly handled, they earned a small living for operators working on "tailings" or rejected gravels. At San Francisquito in 1878, there were some fifty Chinese panning back of the tailings. Chinese were particularly adept in this type of salvage recovery, being satisfied with small returns and possessing an Oriental patience far surpassing that of their Occidental mining rivals.

In the Ventura County Pioneer Museum, there was a letter of Thomas R. Bard to his mother, written in 1868, and of at least background interest to the topic. He writes:

Ojai, Sept. 20, 1868

My dear Mother:—

Yesterday I returned from my trip through some of our Rancho (in the Bouquet Canyon) after a week's absence, and expect to be off again in a few days, having been obliged to return on account of laming one of my horses.

S. went with me and came back exhausted. We have to camp out, do our own cooking, etc., which to him is novel and not exactly suited to his tastes.

My trip extended up to a mining district called the Soledad, where there is considerable excitement about some new discoveries and in consequence of the success which has attended the working of some ores from mines in course of development.

Leaving S. in camp, I went off for a day and a night to examine a lead of manganese ore, in which I discovered a good percentage of gold and silver, and from the summit of a high mountain, I saw part of the Mojave Desert and looked down upon Lake Elizabeth. In this mountainous district which borders the desert, hardly any vegetation is seen except stunted cedars and the American maguey plants: there is very little water and in some of the places, we had to depend upon the limited supply that we found in the bottom of deep shafts now deserted . . .

The rock is very rich, but the veins are narrow in this district but it is possible there will be an improvement in this respect as they are developed. We feel an interest in the success of this district for it borders one of our properties, and would afford a good market for all the produce that might be produced on the farms which we will offer for sale then.

Every week, almost, somebody brings me gold bearing quartz from the country north of us, an unfrequented part, to induce me to go there to see it, and to organize a mining district with the object of getting me to induce capitalists to take hold of it. The rock looks well but I have no desire to spend time in the pursuit of a shadow.

The Piute Indians in the spring of the year, when some vegetation is found on the Desert, come over to this country to steal horses and cattle. Only last spring they killed several men in the locality where we were . . .<sup>49</sup>

About 1875, Henry T. Gage (later to be Governor of California) purchased the Bard ranch in the Bouquet, and to aid in the building of a dam for water storage, is supposed to have put the first road in the Bouquet.<sup>50</sup> Actually, the lower end of that canyon was generally known as Deadman. The Gage project was a failure.

In 1885, T. A. Delano put sluices in above the Deadman/Bouquet junction, shovelling into them at the contact with the gravel banks. It was not profitable.<sup>51</sup> Close to Bouquet was the more successful field at Dry Canyon. There was also mining at Coarse Gold, by the late Bill Nichols, and Henry Thomas Canyon was mined in 1905 by John Hoyt and I. C. Gordon.<sup>52</sup>

In 1876, when the Chinese working force was released on completion of the railroad, some of them joined in working a location a couple of miles southerly from Newhall, variously known as China Gulch, or Chinese Camp, just east of Highway 6 or north east of Lyon Station, which was at the present junction of San Fernando Road (to Newhall) and State Highway 6.<sup>53</sup> The lay off occurred just before the rainy season was due. Some of them mined on the mesa between Whitney and Quigley Canyons, and were still there in the Eighties. In the later Eighties, the Chinese seem to have been replaced by Chileans.<sup>54</sup> The old flume ditches were still plainly outlined in the Twenties.

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

1890 seems to be the date of "Ratsburg." At the junction of Bouquet and San Francisquito Canyon roads, close scrutiny of the hills will show a number of "gopher holes," relics of "drifting" of placer miners for a decade. The camp's name seems most appropriate. All the miner needed in this "wet weather" camp was a shovel, a pan, much patience and \$1.00 to pay John Arnett, then Superintendent of Newhall Rancho, his weekly rent. If the week's recovery had been too bad, it was customary to "hole up" in the back of the dig until the rent collector was well out of sight.<sup>55</sup>

Progenitors of several of the Valley's present families, first were attracted by Ratsburg.

In 1889 "1½ miles south west of Newhall . . . Mr. Brophy is mining for coal . . . started incline shaft dipping 25° N . . . strike runs east and west . . . stratum 32 inches thick." That mining reference was to the old Brophy Tunnel, over by the Colored Sands, near the easterly line of the present Lassalle ranch.<sup>56</sup>

In 1894 placers were reported operating "along Soledad Canyon, northeast of Newhall, as well as between Lang and Ravenna."<sup>57</sup>

In 1890, Mr. John C. Haskell acquired his land in what is now known as "Haskell Canyon." The canyon cut the Dead River gravels, which Haskell worked very profitably for a long period of years. He had several sons, each of whom worked the rainy season in the placers. There was a financial depression, back around 1929, some may recall. At that time, sons of John Haskell, plus their sons, were back digging in the old gravels. The bedrock was about 23 feet down.<sup>58</sup> Haskell Canyon takes off Bouquet, in a northerly direction, and is the first canyon on the left, after the junction of Bouquet and Dry Canyon roads.

Placer operations in San Francisquito Canyon, after the Dam went out, have been mentioned. Then, and during all of the depression period, scarcely any of the Soledad placer diggings were free from dry washers, panning or miners. Daily recoveries were low, \$2.00 or so. That was just \$2.00 more than otherwise available.

There were diggings in Coarse Gold Canyon, Henry Thomas Canyon, Orofino Canyon, in fact, one can encounter placering activities in most unexpected locations in this modern age.

The year 1933 dates the outstandingly successful local placering operation, off Bouquet Canyon, on the off side of the hill from the Haskell placers. William J. Clark (still here but now heading the most successful alfalfa operation in the Valley) formed the Soledad Placer Corp., acquiring acreage in Bouquet Canyon on the Dead River. Inadequate water has always handicapped local placers, plus "flour" gold, impossible of profitable recovery, and too much



"black sand" (metallic sands of nearly the same weight as gold) impeding light flake gold recovery.

The Soledad Placer Company originally installed six conventional sluices, or long boxes, two feet in width, with riffles and cocoa matting lining, to catch and recover the gold. The black sands blocked recovery. Mr. Clarke finally developed this successful technique for profitable recoveries of the gold. The recovery plant was fed from a 110 foot "drag line," bringing the gold carrying clays (red dirt), to a "grizzly" (crushing jaws), dumping the result into a 28 foot "trommel" set with baffles. Rotation of the trommel, agitation and dropping of the contents, helped by addition of larger rocks added, made the trommel a small scale "ball mill" (type of mining mill for crushing of ores), sending most of the contents through a  $\frac{1}{4}$  inch mesh screen. Then came the crowning and highly original method of recovery. Mr. Clarke had made six cast iron bowls of 36-inch diameter. These were riffled (grooved) on the interior, and set up to revolve mechanically at 50 R.P.M. (precisely the theory of a milk separator). The centrifugal motion, forced the gold dust into the riffles, from whence it was recovered at frequent intervals.

The operation was successful and profitable. Over \$50,000 in dust was recovered in 1934.<sup>59</sup> Unfortunately the tailings (waste) muddied the Santa Clara stream, puny at best, and farming interests objected. The plant was therefore closed. Clarke secured water from the Los Angeles City Aqueduct, conveying to his mining set up through fire hoses. It was thus possible to move the recovery unit whenever the set up showed signs of exhausting the gold deposit. This was the last successful placering in the Soledad. Gold dredging is prohibited by law, fortunately for the Valley agriculturists, excepting under expensive operating conditions.

#### SOLEDAD

To this point, in a sense, the reader has been prospecting the Dead River of the Soledad. The placer gravels all came from that source. Some were bedded and consolidated in the red dirt of oxidation, and probably indicated the original river bed. The pay gravels of the lower altitudes had probably been washed out and down, when, at some past date, the Canyons eroded, cutting their way through the bed of the Dead River, and scattered enrichment from the mountains all of the way down to the valley.

Soledad was a quartz, or lode, mining camp. In other words, the ore was consolidated in the vein, awaiting some type of power



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

to knock it loose. The lode mining districts began at Soledad camp and went up to the top of the Soledad Pass in the mining districts of Cedar (later to absorb Soledad district), El Paso and Gleason.

The original public roads of Los Angeles County, as established by the Court of Sessions in 1851, were, practically speaking, merely the only relatively usable routes then known. At least, there was a known destination at the end of the marked trail. Beyond that, little could be said in their favor. California's entry into the Union, the richness of its natural resources, and political considerations combined, created a new National problem, faster and better transportation ties between the Atlantic and Pacific coasts. In 1853, the Nation's War Department was fully aware of the desirability, and ultimate necessity, for a western railroad facility. Lieut. R. S. Williamson was detailed by the Department to command an exploration and surveying party to "ascertain the most practicable and economical route for a railroad from the Mississippi River to the Pacific Ocean." Williamson's particular section being only "west of the lower Colorado . . . and connecting that portion of California with the Pacific Ocean."<sup>60</sup>

The reconnaissance started at Tejon, thence up the Grapevine Canyon (of the San Joaquin valley), to the east mouth of San Francisquito Canyon. The party camped by the road to the Tulares. The next day's survey proved San Francisquito Canyon be to a writhing, narrow defile, through granitic rock, with very steep grades, a maximum of 457 feet in one mile. Any railroad grade could be established only by expensive side cuttings in the canyon walls.<sup>61</sup> The only good thing ever said about that Road was that "cattle buyers from the Mines came over the Tehachapi Mountains bringing sacks of gold . . . golden twenties and fifty dollar slugs became more plentiful than silver pesos had been in the days of the Padres."<sup>62</sup>

The survey findings were so unsatisfactory that Williamson, following a suggestion, climbed a nearby mountain top. From that summit he was agreeably surprised to see a comparatively low, broad Pass to the South. This "New Pass" survey showed a maximum grade of 218 feet for only a half mile. The expedition's wagons were driven down the New Pass without difficulty, except where the trees impeded progress.<sup>63</sup> The Manly party had come down this Pass in 1849, though without wagons, in their escape from perils of the deserts.

It is amazing how many mining camps stem from federal geologic surveys. Williamson's geologist, Mr. Blake, charted copper float where, twenty-five years later, would be the mining act-

ivity at Barrel Springs. Blake also called attention to an exposed vein of copper ore, later to be the discovery lode of Soledad Mining District. Blake's Report notes that "a little digging had been done on the vein, probably by Mexican herders, but that the vein was too narrow."<sup>64</sup>

Compared to San Francisquito Canyon, Soledad was an easy Railroad route. In fact, within very few years, much of the through traffic (if you can call a couple of stages a week, an occasional freighting team and semi-occasional traveler "traffic") was diverted to "Williamson's Pass."

Stock grazing, to mining, to homesteading are normal steps to civilization. Near the head of the pass, the Soledad Canyon widened out somewhat, and through the *ciénaga* flowed the Soledad Creek. Naturally, a few folks built their adobe or log cabin homes creekside. Quite logically the settlement was known as Soledad, and Williamson's name was quickly forgotten. Right away, embarrassment arose. In Monterey County was the old Mission town of Soledad, whose mail then also came through Los Angeles. This led to mix-ups in mail deliveries, so the little group of folks in the Soledad, also called their settlement "Ravenna." When the Railroad finally came, the station was listed on the timetables as "Ravenna (Soledad City)."

Fifty years ago, the old Postoffice desk of the long defunct Ravenna postoffice was junked. Beneath it was found a little leather backed notebook, which examination showed to be part of the 1862 diary of one George J. Clark. Who was he? Captain George Johnstone Clark was for many years a prominent citizen of Los Angeles. He served two terms as Postmaster of Los Angeles, 1866 to 1873. For years he served as a notary conveyancer, school trustee. He came to California in 1850, to Los Angeles (and Soledad) in 1862.<sup>65</sup> He was active in the promotion of the Soledad copper mines, and, with James Hayward, the "Eureka" gold mine at Acton. He was an ardent and vocal Republican until his death in 1890.

Clark's partner in this Boom (and Bust) Saga of Soledad, was no less a personality than Ben C. Truman. Truman had served as private secretary to President Johnson. He came west in 1866 as a special agent of the Postoffice Department, re-organizing mail services shattered by the Civil War. Truman controlled the Los Angeles *Star* from 1873 to 1877. He married Miss Augusta Mallard, a Los Angeles girl, had a notable career as a publicist, wrote "Semi-Tropical California," and he was generally a spark plug in the County of Los Angeles.<sup>66</sup>

Quoting, "In 1860, attention was turned to the Soledad Canyon

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

by the discovery of copper . . . a great excitement followed and nearly \$300,000 was immediately sunk in development. Some of the most beautiful specimens of native copper ever seen were found, many of which were in the form of leaves, exquisitely frosted with silver. The ore when found was incomparably rich and most of it contained 85% to 90% of metal. It was found only in chambers, however, there being no defined walls.

"On abandonment of the copper enterprise . . . one San Francisco firm lost \$93,000. A large number of Mexicans and others were thrown out of employment. Some of the former wandered around the sand hills a few miles northwest of the abandoned tunnels . . . in 1862 made several discoveries of gold bearing quartz . . . some Mexicans got to work . . . put up 10 *arrastras* . . . and for nearly a year quietly took out rock . . . from \$35.00 to \$40.00 per ton."<sup>67</sup>

Clark's diary entry of August 23rd, 1862, describes Soledad as "Quite a pretty flat with about ten houses built of logs on the bank of a creek."<sup>68</sup> At the time, mining activity seems to have been centering about Galveston Hill. In October, Clark, and local associates, some of whom were George Yarborough, Christopher Leaming, N. B. Johnson the District Recorder, the Abidio Brothers and Sanford Lyon, all of whom bob up consistently in the next two decades of local history, laid out Ravenna City.<sup>69</sup> By 1863, the Soledad Mining District, and the adjacent Gleason and El Paso Districts, were running wild, as indicated in the columns of the Los Angeles newspapers. In January, "Articles of Incorporation of the Los Angeles Copper, Gold and Silver Mining Co.," were filed in San Francisco, for the working of several leads in the Soledad Mining District in Los Angeles County. Capital of \$546,600 is divided into 5,466 shares."<sup>70</sup>

In February "Mr. J. M. Spence, Supt. . . . and Mr. Richard Ryland, one of the Trustees of the above named Company, arrived here by steamer yesterday, bringing with them outfit, tools, etc. . . . opening following leads of the Los Angeles Consolidated Copper, Gold and Silver Mining Co., . . . the Miller (copper), Eureka, South Extension (gold) . . . first named is 5 feet in width, assays . . . averaged 16% to 65% . . . roundabout road . . . 60 miles to Los Angeles . . . millions in wealth . . . recently opened trail . . . only 30 miles . . . good wagon road by San Fernando mountain . . ."<sup>71</sup>

The next week, the *Tri Weekly News* noted "during the last six months, a constant chain of travel, freight teams, machinery between Russ District . . . Owens River and intermediate mining



districts . . . Soledad . . . Los Angeles Copper, Gold and Silver Mining Company will ship ore to San Francisco."<sup>72</sup>

In March, the same source records "everything encouraging at Soledad . . . Copper Hill Mining Company, sinking a shaft on the Mary Delphia Lode, depth of 40 feet . . . flattering indications . . . Soledad Company have sunk a shaft on the Maris . . . 45 feet . . . struck grey sulphurets copper ore . . . assays rich . . . Santa Clara Company working on Eureka (gold) lode . . . ore assaying \$150 to \$200 . . . work on *arrastras* waiting for mill from San Francisco."<sup>73</sup>

"Soledad Hill Copper Mining Co.," . . . Capital \$64,000 to develop (Don Abel) Stearns claims. Soledad ores carrying high percentage of silver.

By April, "Mr. A. Woodside leaves San Francisco the 12th with 20 miners to run tunnel through Galveston Hill for the Occidental Copper Mining Company . . . also sink a shaft on the Maris for the Soledad Gold, Silver and Copper Mining Company . . . also for the development of one of the Copper Hill company claims . . . Galveston tunnel about 1200 feet . . . cut from both sides to cut six well defined lodes 400 feet in."<sup>74</sup>

"Surprise . . . arriving Ravenna City . . . so much life . . . had pictured habitations only wild beasts of prey . . . tunnel on hill . . . 590 feet from base . . . heavy growth fuel cotton wood, sycamore, grease wood, willow, sage, oak . . . forest of majestic pine and cedar."

Soledad was buying in Los Angeles. The merchants in the city suggested "tunneling under the San Fernando Hills at lower level" or the mining camp trade will "go to San Buena Ventura."<sup>75</sup> This latter suggestion touched off a year or so of editorial, Vox Populi, and general suggestions, criticisms and personalities concerning routes and methods of reaching the booming mining camp. So many miners were now in the Canyon, that stages alternated between the San Francisquito road, still first choice for Ft. Tejon and the Kern County mines, and Soledad Canyon, easiest and fastest for the Cerro Gordo mines.

By June, there are "new discoveries . . . at La Gloria, or the Hill copper promontory" . . . "discovery of immense copper ledge near Barrel Springs, 25 miles east of Ravenna City . . . in Soledad Mining District" . . . "among mines . . . Emma Antoinette Copper, Gold and Silver Mining Company . . . Occidental Copper Mining Company . . . La Gloria Copper, Gold and Silver Mining Company . . . progress of tunnel on Galveston Hill, Soledad Pass Mining Co., in 80 feet . . . Maris shaft down 95 feet . . .



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

Los Angeles Consolidated in 70 feet . . . tunnel on Lady Washington . . . Yarrowbrough tunnel in 600 feet . . .”<sup>76</sup>

Sparrow & Mars, San Francisco mining exchange brokers, opened a branch office under the management of Max Strobel, to deal in mining stocks of the El Paso and Soledad Mining Districts.<sup>77</sup>

Los Angeles County sent a Committee over the Huse Trail. They reported the trail overrated for wagon road purposes. The tunneling project under San Fernando Hill seemed a better out.

Stages to Soledad started. “Small & Company’s Express . . . will leave . . . Lafayette Hotel . . . on arrival of each steamer from San Francisco for the Soledad Copper Mines . . . parties wishing to visit . . . cheap and easy . . . conveyance. Small & Co., add a spring wagon to their staging for a fast trip.”<sup>78</sup>

George J. Clark advertises: “Laborers wanted at the Soledad Mines.”<sup>79</sup>

Where was the payroll coming from? It wasn’t coming out of the ground. It could be difficult to figure that problem, unless one includes Gov. Downey’s statement concerning early banking in the pueblo. Downey induced Colonel Alvinza Hayward, the San Francisco mining tycoon, to stake James Hayward, the son, into a Los Angeles banking partnership with Downey, the capital investment being \$100,000. Said Downey: “We had flattering prospects and did admirably, but young Hayward entered into mining business and invested his entire capital trying to develop the Soledad gold mines.”<sup>80</sup>

Soledad was still booming, shipping in “complete equipment for the Emma Antoinette and La Gloria . . . Mr. Moerenhaut accompanied materials . . . Incorporation Laura Johnson Mining Company, Soledad, \$280,000 Capital . . . 2800 shares.”<sup>81</sup>

Phineas Banning succumbed and bought into the District mines. Leon P. Garcia sold his mining claims to Emil Goux for \$5,000. The El Paso District ore from the Twin Sisters mine assayed 29½% copper. Ore from the Condor ran 51% copper, from the Cornelia, 23% copper, from the Astor, 19%. Those claims were owned by the McFadden Company. The ores were displayed at Leon’s Grocery on Main Street in Los Angeles.<sup>82</sup>

There were still hopes. “The Consolidated Gold, Silver and Copper Co., have struck lead on the Maris ledge, under Mr. Cornell.”<sup>83</sup>

G. Cornell was exhibiting Soledad ores and has “goods on way for stores at Soledad, where miners are flocking in at Ravenna City.” And a “four foot lode struck on the Jesus-Maria . . . strike

by a Mr. Turner . . . ore changed to silver studded with copper.<sup>184 85</sup>

Was Soledad winding up the year in great shape? Hardly, after all of the foregoing — The ore pinched out. Technically, in mining parlance, that means "there ain't no more."

Soledad was left to the care of a few Mexican miners and prospectors who poked around the dumps and abandoned mine workings for "high grade" specimens, and drifted over the nearby hills, just prospecting. Most of the American miners went to more active, not to say more promising, mining districts. George J. Clark went down to Los Angeles, bought a news stand, opened an office as notary and conveyancer. His wife joined him. They built their Fort Street home. E. F. Beale personally ended the wordy conflicts of tunnel vs. high road over the mountains, by completing and opening Beale's Cut which impartially served both the San Francisco and the Soledad Canyon routes.

There was deep silence in the Soledad Canyon but then, believe it or not, rumors sifted about that some of those Mexican miners, marooned at Soledad, had been doing very nicely, thank you, working the Soledad ores in their *arrastras*, a primitive Mexican mining mill.

An *arrastra* is nothing but a big tough boulder, dragged round and round in a stone lined trench, by means of a long pole, surmounted by a mule, or, maybe, a water wheel for motive power. Ores in the trench are pulverized by brute force and awkwardness. The crushed ores are then panned, or riffled over canvass or wood strips, for metal recovery. The whole contraption is called an *arrastra*. The device dates from pre-historic times.

It wasn't copper those Mexican miners were recovering. This time it was gold. The merry-go-round goes round and round — all over again.

Somebody spread the news, it may have been the ubiquitous Major Ben C. Truman, who, as a practicing publicist knew simply everybody; it may have been George J. Clark, who in 1866 had been appointed postmaster of Los Angeles. After all, Clark was a consistent contributor to such publications as the *Alta*, San Francisco's leading newspaper; or maybe it was a combination of Truman and Clark, however it happened, the Alvinza Hayward mining interests, of San Francisco, were definitely intrigued. A fresh stream of payroll cash started dribbling in to the moribund camp.

In May, the *Star* had quite an article on "The Soledad Mines . . . once the scene of active operation in copper mining . . . is again attracting attention . . . to silver and gold mining. Searles

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

& Yates were constructing *arrastras* . . . Polk & Kabler were running the mill of Mr. McMurtry . . . handsome returns. Scott & Edgerton were running four horse *arrastras* . . . the ore not inferior to Clear Creek.”<sup>86</sup>

*Arrastras* were powered with horses, mules, donkeys, water or just what ever was handiest. “Four horse *arrastras*,” was probably four units, each operated by a horse. Clear Creek was at that date an active mining camp near Caliente, in Kern County.

Something must have been happening in Soledad . . . “Ygnacio Valle sells 30 feet in a Soledad mine for \$250.00 . . . the lodes are large and well defined . . . first quartz mill in county on the McMurtry mine.”<sup>87</sup>

“Capt. Clark reports work progressing. The McMurtry mine in same range soon to have mill . . . 200 men working in the district . . . Polk & Kabler are waiting for their 10 stamp mill . . . Searles & Yates are digging ditch for carrying water to their mill . . . town has three stores and a blacksmith shop . . . E. J. Bettes brought down for Newmark & Company \$400 in gold dust, six days clean-up of two *arrastras*.”<sup>88</sup>

“Capt. George J. Clark reports 300 men working at Soledad Mines, and 14 *arrastras* running . . . Clark and George Gleason are working on the Eureka . . . the Polk & Kabler Mill to be dropping 10 stamps by October 1st . . . another mill projected for Searles, Yates & Henderson . . . and . . . Searles & Yates are now running a good hotel.”<sup>89</sup>

Too much traffic, too much activity, there is an obvious “necessity of re-opening the San Francisquito Canyon road” and mentions “the road up Tejunga to the Sisters of Charity rancho, take left fork and come out at Polk & Kabler’s mill . . . a direct road to Clear Creek and Havilah, shortening the distance to Soledad twenty to twenty five miles . . . Henderson & Searles have completed the road from Soledad to timber.”<sup>90</sup> “Joe Meller has store at Soledad.”

October arrives. “Polk & Kabler now have two water run *arrastras* . . . a ten stamp mill . . . about twenty horse power *arrastras* run by Mexican miners . . . Soledad has four stores and L. Marks is opening another.”<sup>91</sup> The talked about Tejunga short cut between Los Angeles and Soledad is finally surveyed — and found impractical. More suggestions on roads crop up.<sup>92</sup> “The Polk & Kabler mill ran \$1,000 in a six day run by water power.”<sup>93</sup>

Another week, the “Polk & Kabler mill running good . . . seven ledges, two being worked . . . Eclipse tunnel to ledge three to four feet wide . . . another ledge on Saratoga . . . many shafts.



Searles Yates Company mill run by water . . . oldest ledge is Eureka, belonging to Postmaster Capt. Clark, who sold part to Mr. Truman, California postal agent."<sup>94</sup>

Actually, the postoffice at Ravenna City had been opened October 14th.<sup>95</sup> Los Angeles newspapers warned folks not to address "Soledad" if they meant Ravenna, because their letters would end up at Soledad, Monterey County.

Cheerily, 1869 opened. There were "no brawls on the New Year . . . Searles sold out to England, at the Hotel . . . supper served at Folks . . . José Sanchez puts in another water operated mill . . . Polk & Kabler were dropping 5 stamps . . . ore from the Rattlesnake Mine . . . Clark and Gleason have five men on Eureka . . . down 50 feet with an 8 x 4 shaft on 30 inches of rich quartz<sup>96</sup> . . . more machinery for Polk & Kabler."<sup>97</sup>

January saw more Indian trouble. "Noah Crisco got an arrow through his neck."<sup>98</sup>

Folks were happy in March. The "mineral zones extending . . . the Eureka is down 80 feet with a 30 inch vein." The camp is expanding. "Cameron is opening a butcher shop, just come down from White Pine . . . Harper is running stage, Los Angeles to Jennieville."<sup>99</sup>

"Searles, Yates and Henderson start 10 stamps" amid general celebration. "Mrs. England started the mill of the Enterprise Mining Company."<sup>100</sup>

It was necessary to reiterate that there was no postoffice at Soledad, but there was one at Ravenna City.<sup>101</sup> Mail was always getting mixed up.

More Indian trouble in August. "John Miller wounded by arrow in the Big Tejunga."<sup>102</sup>

As of June, Hayward & Company received 59 ounces of gold from a nine day mill run at the Eureka.<sup>103</sup> In July, they displayed 180 ounces,<sup>104</sup> and in August 74 ounces from the same source.<sup>105</sup>

"Eureka down 160 feet to 4 feet of rich ore . . . buildings being erected . . . Directors' meeting, attended by J. A. Hayward, Robert T. Polk, George Gleason, J. A. McClellan, Capt. Clark, Ben C. Truman. J. A. Hayward elected president and general manager, Clark, secretary, Polk, treasurer, mine in charge of Gleason, and mill in charge of McClellan."<sup>106</sup>

In March, George Gleason had resigned his commission as postmaster. For his six months of service, he received a total remuneration of 57c.<sup>107</sup> The reason for his resignation was not stated.

A petition headed by Dennis Searles, and a school census which registered 121 children resident in a proposed Soledad School Dis-

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

trict, brought immediate results. The division line was set at three miles southerly of the Santa Clara River and parallel with the same.<sup>108</sup> The first school building was a typical mining camp board and batt shack, about 14 x 20.

Then the lower mill on Soledad creek closed "for lack of water," so the paper said.

In 1870, Major Truman described the Camp as having "about a dozen houses, including two stores, a school house, blacksmith shop, livery stable and last — but not least — that indispensable adjunct of all mining camps, a saloon — but only one.

"Whether this lamentable state of affairs is due to a lack of enterprise among the saloon keepers, or to any conscientious scruples on the part of the honest miners in regard to the quality — not quantity — of the liquor they are prepared to get themselves out of, or to any lingering respect they may have to the total abstinence laws of the Good Templars, I am at a loss to determine — although I am under the impression, erroneous perhaps, that it is the latter — anyhow it is highly probable that there is an open speculation for any man in the liquor business who wishes to emigrate."<sup>109</sup>

In 1873, G. W. Coffin, Engineer for the abortive Atlantic & Pacific Railroad of Thomas Scott, describes Soledad as "12 miles from the desert at Barrel Springs . . . are 12 or 15 buildings that go to make up the town of Soledad . . . it is not an old town . . . the off-shoot of a mining town with 1,000 inhabitants . . . it has a school house, two stores, a hotel, a blacksmith shop . . . nearby are two large quartz mills."<sup>110</sup>

From the Los Angeles *Evening Express*: "Notice of Regular Miners Meeting at Bell home to elect a Recorder . . . to change the name of Soledad Mining District to Cedar Mining District. John Bell, President; T. H. Scannell, Secretary."<sup>111</sup>

*(To be Continued)*

## NOTES

1. "Rancho San Francisco," by Arthur B. Perkins, June, 1957, *Quarterly Historical Society of Southern California*, p. 102.
2. *Records of the Board of Supervisors, Los Angeles County, Calif.*, Minute Book 4, p. 390 - 394 (meeting of Jan. 7, 1870).
3. *Ibid.*, Minute Book 6, p. 413 (meeting of Jan. 14, 1878).
4. *Early Days of My Episcopate* by William Ingraham Kip, N. Y., 1892, p. 216.
5. *Report of Explorations in California*, Washington, 1853; (better known as Vol. 5, *Pacific R. R. Survey*) Part 2, p. 73.
6. "Reminiscences of a Pioneer" by J. Kuhrts, *Hist. Soc. of So. Cal. Annual*, 1906, p. 59.
7. "The San Fernando Pass," by Vernetty Snyder Ripley. *Hist. Soc. of So. Cal. Quarterly*, March, Sept., Dec. 1947, March, June, 1948.
8. Vol. 5 of *Pacific R. R. Survey*, Part 1, p. 28.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

9. Minutes of Los Angeles County Board of Supervisors, April 4, 1863.
10. *History of Los Angeles County, California*, Thompson & West, Oakland, Cal., 1880, p. 103.
11. Quoted in extenso, "Rancho San Francisco" by Arthur B. Perkins, Hist. Soc. of So. Cal., *Quarterly*, June, 1957.
12. *Ibid.*
13. *Los Angeles Star*, August 11th, 1860.
14. *History of California*, Bancroft, Vol. 4, p. 631.
15. *Ibid.*
16. *Centennial Historical Sketch of Los Angeles County*, Los Angeles, 1876. William Heath Davis, in *Seventy-Five Years in California, 1831 to 1906* says Henry Mellus also handled local gold (p. 159).
17. *Travels on the Pacific Coast* by de Mofras, translated by Marguerite Eyer Wilbur. Santa Ana, 1930.
18. *Sojourn in California by the King's Orphan*. G. M. Waseurtz of Sandels. San Francisco, 1945, p. 50.
19. *Visscher's First Visit to California*, by Gudde, San Francisco, 1940.
20. *History of California*, Bancroft, Vol. 4, p. 630.
21. *Death Valley in '49* by William Lewis Manly, San Jose, 1894.
22. *Journal of John McHenry Hollingsworth*, Calif. Hist. Soc., San Francisco, 1923 p. 50.
23. *Los Angeles Star*, Dec. 3rd, 1859.
24. Informant, Mr. Luis Raggio.
25. This was the Norway Survey. Norway surveyed lots of country in Los Angeles, Ventura and Santa Barbara Counties. Note reference, given by C. M. MacDougal, would be the East side of Section 5, T. 3 N., R. 15 W.
26. *Handbook and Directory of San Luis Obispo, Santa Barbara, Ventura, Kern, San Bernardino, Los Angeles and San Diego Counties*, L. L. Paulsen, publisher, 1875. Names listed from Placeritas follow "Jesús Araña, Farmer; Jesús Araña, Stock-raiser; Bramberry, Apiarian; L. Contreras, Farmer; John Hoe, Farmer; Sanford Lyon, Stockman; C. Marinna, Teamster & Farmer; Mitchell, Miner."
27. Report of California State Mineralogist, 1889.
28. Based very largely on statements of Mrs. Bilderrain, a Lopez descendant. On the other hand, I have never heard San Felician's discovery attributed to anyone else. See "First to Gold," by Francisca Lopez Bilderrain, *Touring Topics*, November, 1930.
29. *History of California*, Bancroft, Vol. 4, p. 634.
30. *Los Angeles and Environs*, J. M. Gwin, Los Angeles, 1915, Vol. 1, p. 156.
31. "In the year 1858, I, Cyrus Lyon, purchased from José Espinosa, one nugget he found from which I realized \$1,928.00. This was the largest piece known to have been taken from this locality." It still holds the local record. "Gold Placers of Los Angeles," by J. M. Guinn, Hist. Soc. of So. Cal. *Annual* of 1911, p. 230.
32. *Ventura Signal*, May 31st, 1873; description by Dr. L. P. Guiberson.
33. Report of Calif. State Mineralogist, (8th Annual), p. 334.
34. *Ibid.*
36. Los Angeles "Court of Sessions" of May 19th, 1851. Hist. Soc. of So. Cal. *Annual*, 1905, p. 255.
37. *Los Angeles Star*, Jan. 28, 1860.
38. *Ibid.*, Feb. 25, 1860
39. *Ibid.*, Apr. 13, 1861.
40. Minutes L. A. County Board of Supervisors, Feb. 2, 1862.
42. *Sixty Years in Southern California*, by Harris Newmark, p. 313, Houghton Mifflin, 1930.
43. Informant, Mr. Luis Raggio.
44. Report of Calif. State Mineralogist, 1882.
45. *Ibid.*, 1915 - 16
46. *Ibid.*, 1893 - 94
47. *Ibid.*
48. *Ibid.*, 1885, p. 77
49. Unpublished letter of T. R. Bard to his mother, from Ojai, Sept. 20th, 1868. The original was in the Ventura Pioneer Museum.
50. Informant, Mr. I. C. Gordon, of Newhall.
51. Informant, the late Mr. Will Delano.
52. Informant, Mr. I. C. Gordon.




## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

53. Informant, Mr. Curtis Lewman, of Newhall.
54. The late Mr. John T. Wilson, pioneer of San Fernando.
55. Informant, the late Mr. John Saunders.
56. Report of Calif. State Mineralogist, 1889.
57. *Ibid.*, 1892 - 94
58. Informants, Mr. John Haskell, Mr. Sam Haskell.
59. Informant, Mr. William J. Clark; also see Report No. 23, Calif. State Mineralogist. p. 195 ff.
60. *Pacific Railroad Reports*, Vol. 5, p. 2A.
61. *Ibid.*, p. 28.
62. Bancroft's *Pastoral*.
63. *Pacific Railroad Reports*, Vol. 5, p. 29.
64. *Ibid.*, p. 67.
65. H. D. Barrows, "Los Angeles Postmasters 1850-1900," Historical Society of Southern California *Annual* 1900; see also Harris Newmark. "Sixty Years in Southern California."
66. Harris Newmark, *Sixty Years in Southern California*. 14 references to Major Truman are indexed.
67. Major Ben C. Truman, *Semi-Tropical California*, San Francisco 1874, p. 98-99.
68. Unpublished MSS Diary of George J. Clark. I personally transcribed this Diary some thirty years ago. However, its owner, Mrs. Rowena Bergenstal, now resident of Lincoln, Ark., advised me by letter Oct. 7, 1957, that it has been mislaid and all that she can find is a copy of my transcription. Incidentally, Clark's Captaincy dated from sailing, not Army, days.
69. *Ibid.*
70. Los Angeles *Tri Weekly News*, Feb. 2, 1863.
71. *Ibid.*, Feb. 6, 1863.
72. *Ibid.*, Feb. 11, 1863.
73. *Ibid.*, Mar. 4, 1863.
74. *Ibid.*, Mar. 6, 1863.
75. *Ibid.*, May 27, 1863.
76. *Ibid.*, June 3, 1863.
77. Los Angeles *Star*, June 4, 1863.
78. Los Angeles *Tri Weekly News*, June 15, 1863.
79. *Ibid.*, July 17, 1863.
80. A. T. Hawley, *Progress & Advantages of Los Angeles City & County*, Los Angeles 1871, p. 98.
81. Los Angeles *Tri Weekly News*, Aug. 11, 1863.
82. Los Angeles *Star*, Aug. 12, 1863.
83. *Ibid.*, Sept. 10, 1863.
84. Los Angeles *Tri Weekly News*, Sept. 9, 1863.
85. *Ibid.*, Nov. 27, 1863.
86. Los Angeles *Star*, May 16, 1868.
87. Los Angeles *Tri Weekly News*, July 31, 1868
88. Los Angeles *Star*, Aug. 22, 1868.
89. Los Angeles *Tri Weekly News*, Sept. 2, 1868.
90. Los Angeles *Star*, Sept. 12, 1868.
91. *Ibid.*, Oct. 3, 1868.
92. *Ibid.*, Oct. 17, 1868.
93. Los Angeles *Tri Weekly News*, Nov. 24, 1868.
94. Los Angeles *Star*, Nov. 28, 1868.
95. Archives of Postoffice Department.
96. Los Angeles *Star*, Jan. 9, 1869.
97. *Ibid.*, Jan. 16, 1869.
98. *Ibid.*, Jan. 23, 1869.
99. *Ibid.*, Mar. 6, 1869.
100. *Ibid.*, Mar. 13, 1869 .
101. *Ibid.*, May 15, 1869.
102. *Ibid.*, Aug. 7, 1869.
103. *Ibid.*, June 19, 1869.
104. *Ibid.*, July 16, 1869.
105. *Ibid.*, Aug. 7, 1869.
106. *Ibid.*, Aug. 18, 1869.
107. Director Headquarters Service, P. O. Dept., by letter June 24, 1954.
108. Los Angeles County Board of Education Records.
109. *Ibid.*, Aug. 18, 1869.
110. Ventura *Signal*, Oct. 18, 1873.
111. Los Angeles *Evening Express*, Mar. 24, 1877.

# Charles Henry Brinley:

## *A Case Study in Rancho Supervision*

By John C. Hough

O MATTER HOW COMPLEX THE BUSINESS activities of Abel Stearns became, they were never free from the peculiar influences of individual personalities. These modifying factors often manifested themselves in trivial ways, but their total effect was important to the free-running of the whole mechanism. Nowhere were they more apparent than as attributes of the various men who became administrators of ranchos. Such individuals formed an intermediate stratum between the foremen, or *mayordomos*, who exercised personal command over the common *vaqueros* and *peones*, and the owner. They had to be able to plan work, write reports and receipts, and in general act in a viceregal capacity for Stearns. They usually had some kind of personal interest in their work because of family ties with Don Abel, and one of them was the son of an old business associate. But the administrator who left the clearest record of his work and who was perhaps the most interesting of the lot, lacked the personal relationship. His name was Charles Henry Brinley.

Brinley possessed imposing qualifications, at first glance. Probably a New Englander, he had had several years of mercantile experience in China.<sup>1</sup> He was relatively well educated, even articulate. His reports to Stearns might have been filled with disheartening news, but at least they were composed with considerable elegance. He could, for example, write the following about the death of a hog in transit to Los Angeles:

I am sorry about the hog — if I had *known* that he was going to die upon the road, I should have been a perfect natural to have sent him, but not being posted up with the delicacy of his situation I don't feel as though any blame can attach to me for his decease.<sup>2</sup>

Unfortunately the spread-eagle quality of his language was not the most important asset he could have brought with him to the Rancho Los Alamitos.<sup>3</sup>

*Charles Henry Brinley: A Case Study in Rancho Supervision*

Brinley's primary responsibility was to supervise the raising of cattle in all its aspects — to take his men to the rodeos on the surrounding ranches, or to send his *mayordomo* with a group of *vaqueros* to them, to see that the calves were ironed with the *fierro* of Abel Stearns, or that cattle were vented for some purchaser.<sup>4</sup> He ordered the *matanza*, or slaughter, and the rendering of fat, the drying of hides. Brinley turned his attention enthusiastically to the side-lines of the cattle industry, especially to the crude processes of converting tallow into soap. The resulting product undoubtedly did not float, but it was serviceable. He was greatly encouraged when a man came all the way from Santa Ana to buy seven dollars worth of it. Why not trade soap for all the tallow produced on the surrounding ranches?<sup>5</sup> Visions of large operations filled his mind and overflowed into his letters.

Los Alamitos contained two not altogether compatible kinds of stock: cattle and sheep. Because the chief shepherd was often ailing, Brinley was forced to become closely involved in this part of the business. He outlined plans for bringing in China rams to improve the breed and constructing good pens with floors for the new lambs.<sup>6</sup> Sheep raising, too, had its special side-line, the making of wool mattresses. The personnel for this enterprise consisted of one *vaquero's* wife, paid in soap. By processing the wool in this way Brinley boasted that he could double its value.<sup>7</sup>

The new broom swept vigorously at the haphazard clutter of the establishment. Brinley investigated the piles of worm-eaten hides and mouldering wool, and fretted to his employer about the carelessness with which they had been kept. He poked into the store-room of the ranch-house wherein the squirrels and skunks had for so long had a holiday in the corn. With a couple of Indians he picked the earthen floor to break down the honeycomb of tunnels, and covered the earth with sand and tiles. It would be much more proper, thought Brinley, to keep one's corn in a separate structure, "as at home."<sup>8</sup>

Along with his management of field operations Brinley sent a stream of correspondence to Stearns. Much of it was made necessary by the centralized system of supply into which the administrator had to fit. Occasionally, to be sure, he negotiated the purchase of a candle mould or a pair of spurs, but generally he had to request that the owner send staples and anything else that was necessary, down to the smallest item. Would Doña Arcadia be so kind as to make a flannel coffee strainer for him?<sup>9</sup> There were also little errands. Mr. Stearns would oblige the correspondent by securing from Felipe García a *serape*, a pair of shoes, pants, a couple



of pairs of socks and a pair of drawers, property of Jesús Quintana, pawned to Felipe for two dollars, and now presumably redeemed.<sup>10</sup> Or would Mr. Stearns take the broken iron pot from the supply-cart and see that it was repaired and returned?<sup>11</sup>

The system of disbursements was just as centralized as the mode of supply. When a *vaquero* needed a pair of shoes, he told Brinley, who passed the request to Stearns. Upon receipt of the shoes by ox-cart Brinley made a notation in his accounts. The price was then deducted from wages. The *vaquero*, however, did not evidently receive cash in any regular fashion. The debit or credit was simply carried on in the books month after month. The *vaquero* could ask Stearns, or occasionally Brinley, for small sums if necessary, and of course there was a settlement upon discharge. We find Andreas Duarte quitting his job on the sixteenth of October, 1852. There were standing against him stirrup irons at \$1.4, seventy cents worth of cigars, \$5.00 cash from Brinley, and the same amount from Stearns, himself, all to be deducted from his \$20.00 earned since the first of the month.<sup>12</sup> Brinley would supply such figures, but Stearns kept his hand firmly on the cash-box.

If running a ranch were purely a mechanical job, Brinley would probably have learned the technicalities quickly enough. What he could not master was the art of getting along with people. He was naturally suspicious. He kept his eye on José Sepúlveda of Rancho San Joaquín and noted that he had had no more than a single rodeo on his ranch, at which not half of the cattle were collected. Now Sepúlveda had grossly violated the customs of the country by selling 150 or more yearling cows "without *señal* or iron . . ."<sup>13</sup> Then, too, neighbor Joaquín Ruiz was going to establish his son with a few cattle in a small house between his ranch and Los Alamitos in order, as Brinley predicted cynically, to rob Stearns of all the stock that wandered into his hands.<sup>14</sup> Whether or not these suspicions were justified, they were part of the pattern of Brinley's attitudes and help to explain his lack of success as an administrator.

Brinley early encountered the personnel problem. In April, 1852, the men were about to leave for Laguna, present Elsinore, for the purpose of rounding up the Stearns cattle in that area. One Guadalupe, aware that labor was commanding higher prices than heretofore, refused to go along unless he were paid two dollars a day, or three if he brought his own horses. Another man offered to work with his own horses for five. Brinley turned down these demands. He mounted all his Indians of "3 years old and upwards," as he put it, and, still short about five effective men, sent his force on to the rodeo.<sup>15</sup>

*Charles Henry Brinley: A Case Study in Rancho Supervision*

On the other hand he did not refuse all demands for higher wages if a good worker was involved. He permitted one Indian to be paid an extravagant wage of a dollar a day, and in an unaccustomed burst of praise conceded that "he's a good boy, and if he would remain here, would prove serviceable [sic]."<sup>16</sup> Possibly the only worker who rated more highly was a refugee from Cerritos, the adjacent domain of John Temple. This Querino had fled from an impending flogging to be delivered by, or under the orders of, his *mayordomo*, and it was charged that he had taken some ranch property with him. Brinley, blaming the *mayordomo* for the whole affair, gladly gave Querino employment. Later he informed Stearns that his employee was well satisfied with his treatment at Alamitos, "is a good boy and is the only servant that has been upon this rancho during *my* stay here, who has shown himself at all times prompt, and ready to do anything to the best of his ability . . ." With great righteousness Brinley foretold that he would secure the services of all Temple's Mexicans before long, as the *mayordomo* there wished to be "too much of a Sultan among them, much to their disgust."

While he could perceive the virtues of one or two individuals, Brinley developed a bitter resentment against the employees as a whole. He began to find that his labor force was dribbling through his fingers. His animosity grew, and his attitude in turn must have done much to drive men away.

By the first part of September Brinley's distress was acute. All the Indian *peones* except two had left, a situation which he maintained was general throughout the surrounding ranches. He had already asked Stearns to "send someone to attend the auction that usually takes place at the prison on Mondays, and buy me five or six Indians."<sup>17</sup> Now he again appealed desperately for *vaqueros*, shepherds and a good cook. He even imparted the surprising information that he was forced to look after the sheep personally and had managed to eat but three meals in four days. Boiling over with a denunciation of his recently acquired countrymen, he said,

. . . if it was possible to obtain people in whom one could have confidence, I should feel happier to say the least — but I am convinced that "*razon*" and "*indio*" is a distinction without a difference — they are all capricious and unreliable.

Then he added a slightly incongruous passage which suggests a lingering notion about sheep-raising that was hard dying, even in the face of his difficulties: "As I have in a measure turned shepherd, perhaps you will send me a pipe, as combining the romantic

with the useful, serves to lighten labor."<sup>18</sup> Romantic or not, it was an impossible situation.

As the number of employees dwindled, Brinley centered his fire increasingly on certain individuals. His first target was Miguel González, half sick the greater part of the time and, to Brinley, a naturally lazy man. Was not González one of the reasons why Brinley's efforts were hamstrung?

I have generally found things undone upon my return here, that I have left orders to do, and I find the best plan is to do everything yourself. I want a man about me here in the house, that if I tell him to lay hold and dig, that he'll do it, and not let any stinking pride, prevent him from soiling his fingers — I can and do work with the object of having a presentable house . . .<sup>19</sup>

Thus Brinley went on, as peevishly as some harassed school-mistress.

By November, 1852, a number of the remaining *vaqueros* served notice of intention to quit, thereby touching off further accusations, this time directed especially at Francisco Rodríguez, the *mayordomo*. Brinley charged Rodríguez himself with having subverted the servants. They were welcome to leave, he rationalized, for he had had difficulty in getting them to carry out orders. As for Rodríguez,

. . . though he is a good steady man for his berth, he has proved himself to be a — ungrateful fellow, after the many kindnesses shown to him by you [Stearns] and me.

I shall endeavor to fix him in such a manner, that he will have no opportunity to fatten off this rancho at \$5 - \$6 per day — this is what he is driving at . . .<sup>20</sup>

In spite of these accusations, or, in a way, because of them, the position most in jeopardy was that occupied by Charles Brinley.

It is clear that Stearns for some time had been quite dissatisfied with the labor situation at Alamitos and he blamed Brinley for the exodus of employees. The administrator in turn disclaimed any interference with the servants since the beginning of what he called "Francisco's reign." He stated that if he were to blame, it was for having "given them too much beef, and treating them too well."<sup>21</sup> After all, he reminded Stearns, he did not have the full authority enjoyed by the owner and had been forced to knuckle to circumstances.<sup>22</sup> We do not know exactly what Stearns thought of these defenses, or who initiated the separation. The fact remains that Brinley's connection with Los Alamitos suddenly ceased about January, 1853, whereas the maligned Rodríguez and González remained on the payroll for many years.

Brinley's direction of affairs was a failure, not because of in-



*Charles Henry Brinley: A Case Study in Rancho Supervision*


sufficient energy, but perhaps by reason of a superabundance of it. He did not adjust to a slower tempo of work. He had to be forever stirring up the employees to perform tasks that might have seemed to them unnecessary, or at least not urgent. He was over-zealous, so anxious to achieve a brilliant success that he could not fulfill the basic requirements. He was too right, and too righteous. He did not flog the laggards, yet he was unable to establish the proper relationship with these men of alien culture that was necessary for even the most routine jobs about the ranch. Only in relation to the whole, were they alien, however; it was he who was the incomprehensible intruder in a Mexican community.

**NOTES**

1. John H. Everett to Abel Stearns, July 20, 1849. Stearns Papers, Huntington Library.
2. Charles H. Brinley to Abel Stearns, July 25, 1852. Stearns Papers, Huntington Library.
3. Stearns had bought Los Alamitos in 1842. It lay partially in the area of present Long Beach, was part of the old Nieto grant, and consisted of 28,512 acres. Stearns' tax inventory of Aug. 13, 1850, a copy of which is in the Stearns Papers, HL, lists the stock at Alamitos as follows: 10,000 cattle, 700 wild horses, 109 tame work horses, 1,100 sheep, and smaller numbers of other animals. On April 1, 1852, there were seventeen employees on the ranch.
4. *Fierro*, brand; vent, counterbrand.
5. Brinley to Stearns, July 7, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
6. Brinley to Stearns, Aug. 30, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
7. *Ibid.*, July 25, 1852.
8. Brinley to Stearns, Nov. 13, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
9. Brinley to Stearns, July —, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL. Doña Arcadia was Mrs. Stearns.
10. *Ibid.*, Sept. 30, 1852.
11. *Ibid.*, July 7, 1852.
12. Brinley to Stearns, Oct. 20, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
13. Brinley to Stearns, Aug. 19, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL. *Señal*, earmark.
14. *Ibid.*, Oct. 2, 1852.
15. Brinley to Stearns, April 21, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
16. Brinley to Stearns, July 13, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
17. Brinley to Stearns, Aug. 30, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
18. *Ibid.*, Sept. 5, 1852.
19. Brinley to Stearns, Oct. 25, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
20. Brinley to Stearns, Nov. 24, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
21. Brinley to Stearns, Sept. 9, 1852. Stearns Papers, HL.
22. *Ibid.*, Nov. 6, 1852.

# *Searching for the Birth Date of* **Eulalia Perez de Guillen de Marine**

*By Marie Northrop*

Y SEARCHING CALIFORNIA RECORDS AND HISTORY, is it possible to establish the exact birthdate of this woman? No, unless her original baptismal certificate can be found in the records of the Loreto Mission in Baja California. And this is unlikely, as the old records were reported to have been destroyed by privateers from Chile about 1817. Hubert Howe Bancroft and others say there is no record of her birth. But there are hopes that these records were sent to La Paz and some day they will be brought to light. Until then, other sources need to be consulted to approximate a birthdate for Doña Eulalia Pérez.

The most qualified and reputable California historians are not able to agree even on a definite *year*, let alone a date. Eulalia's age at her death varies all the way from 101 to 143 years — depending upon the source of information. She caused a great deal of controversy because of the variations in the records concerning her life.

Eulalia Pérez led a very full and interesting life during the Spanish, Mexican and American periods in Alta (Upper) California. Doña Eulalia was born at the Royal Presidio at Loreto, Baja California. Some say she was born in 1768. Bancroft says she was reported to have been born in 1738 but that it was more likely to have been in 1774. He reasons that since Petra, her eldest daughter, was eleven years old when they arrived at San Diego in 1800 and Eulalia said she was 15 years old when she was married, that this is circumstantial confirmation of the assumption that she was 30 years old in 1800. This would establish her birthdate to be in 1770. However, Doña Eulalia may not have given her correct age at her marriage and she could have been married several years before the birth of her eldest child; or should we say, her eldest *recorded* child.

J. Gregg Layne said Bancroft evidently had not seen the 1836 Padrón (census) for Los Angeles. Actually, some census records vary considerably as to the ages and birthplaces. Perhaps the enumerators did not understand the answers given them or the people

### *Searching for the Birth Date of Eulalia Pérez de Guillén de Mariné*

were not sure themselves or they weren't too truthful or conscientious in giving their personal data. The 1850 Federal Census for Los Angeles is said to be a classic example of misinformation in a census record. Proof then requires other sources that are sometimes not easily accessible nor available at all. In "Una Vieja y Sus Recuerdos," a narrative by Eulalia Pérez herself to Thomas Savage, she said her parents were white (*gente de razón*) and that she didn't remember the date of her birth. She did know she was 15 years old when she married her first husband, Miguel Antonio Guillén y Duarte, the Sergeant in command of the military force at the San Vicente Mission at Baja California. Doña Eulalia's son-in-law, Michael White, said she told him that she married Miguel Guillén the year of the Jesuit expulsion from Baja. This is probably not true as White had believed the expulsion to have been in 1750 when it actually occurred in 1767. Doña Eulalia may have had this date confused with her birthdate.

Others say Doña Eulalia was born in 1735. The 1834 Padrón of Santa Barbara gives her age as 58 and the Los Angeles 1836 Padrón lists her as 60 years of age. Therefore, we could assume she was born in 1776 except that the census records are not entirely dependable and there is other information that might be more reliable. In the 1844 Census of Los Angeles she appears as 65 years, and J. Gregg Layne said she was probably lopping off a few years as she was then a widow and might have been looking for another husband. Later on, the years rapidly increased and that makes the issue all the more confusing.

In searching for the approximation of a birthdate, one must search the individual's entire life for information; so the search goes into the remainder of Doña Eulalia's life.

While living in Loreto, Eulalia Pérez de Guillén had four children. The oldest was a girl named María Petra who was born circa 1790, who married Santiago Rubio on 5 July 1807 at the San Gabriel Mission, and died in Los Angeles in 1844. Next was a son, named Isidoro, who was born circa 1791 and died at La Purísima, California, in 1864. Then a son named Domingo was born circa 1792 but he died before they came to San Diego and was buried at San Fernando, Baja California. Another son was born circa 1793 at Loreto but he was accidentally smothered to death shortly after his birth.

Doña Eulalia then lived in San Diego eight years with her husband which again brings forth another discrepancy. She has been reported to have come with the first expedition to Alta California in 1764. More likely, the true story is that Miguel Antonio



Guillén, her husband, came without her on his first trip in 1769 and she came with him later with the two children. This can be accepted as true by an assortment of information. Bancroft said she came in about 1800. Eulalia said she came to California about 1801. The San Diego records first mention her on 26 November 1802.

A daughter, María Josefa, was born 26 November 1802, a son "Miguel Antonio y Tomás" was born 29 December 1804, and a daughter named Saba (Sara?) was born 7 December 1806 — all at San Diego, California. Tomás died on 10 May 1810. Doña Eulalia's daughter, María Antonia Feliciana, was born 21 November 1810 also at San Diego and married José Leonardo Higuera on 31 July 1830 at the Misión San Gabriel, California. Eulalia Pérez was in San Juan Capistrano in 1812 at the time of the earthquake and soon afterwards went back to San Diego where another daughter, María de los Angeles, was born on 4 October 1812. María de los Angeles married José Tiburcio López on 2 July 1852. María del Rosario Guillén was born 1 October 1814. It is not clear where she was born as the 1836 Padrón lists her birthplace as San Diego, her marriage record states San Gabriel, and Eulalia's story implies San Gabriel. It could have been either, as Miguel Antonio Guillén was a guard at the San Gabriel and San Diego Missions. It is said Eulalia was the mother of María del Rosario at 79 years of age, but who can prove it? At any rate, María del Rosario married Michael White on 2 July 1852 at San Gabriel (with whom we might be better acquainted under his Spanish name of "Miguel Blanco"), and she died circa 1892. María Loreta, another daughter, was also born in San Diego and she was married on 30 January 1825 at San Gabriel to Daniel Martin Call. She was buried at the same mission on 9 July 1831. A daughter, María Rita, was born 21 May 1817 at Los Angeles, and married Vicente de la Osa on 19 June 1832 at San Gabriel.

Doña Eulalia's husband, Miguel Antonio Guillén, sometimes known as José Antonio, died on 6 July 1819 at the San Gabriel Mission and is buried there in the "Campo Santo" — the cemetery. After his death, Doña Eulalia went back to San Diego under the military escort of her son, Isidoro Guillén. It seems her services as a nurse and midwife were in great demand; she was the midwife at Pio Pico's birth in 1801 at San Gabriel. Father José Sanchez of the San Gabriel Mission requested Padre Fernando Martin of San Diego to send her back, so Isidoro took his mother and her five daughters back again to San Gabriel. There at the Mission, Doña Eulalia worked herself into great responsibilities. She was given charge of the Indian girls whom she kept locked up at night. She



— From the author's collection.

MARIA DE JESUS ALVINA LOPEZ  
DE DUARTE MARRON  
(*Standing*)

*Daughter of*  
MARIA DE LOS ANGELES GUILLEN DE LOPEZ  
(*Seated*)



— From the author's collection.

MARIA FELICIANA PRESENTACION  
DUARTE DE MURILLO



*Searching for the Birth Date of Eulalia Pérez de Guillen de Mariné*

was the Mission housekeeper, bookkeeper, treasurer and, in 1821, she was given the keys of the Mission: so has been called the "Keeper of the Keys." They had their fun too. She was known for her beauty, vitality, lovely voice, dancing ability, nursing skill and compassion especially for the Indians. In her old age, it can be imagined that she retold many times the story of the cooking contest between María Ygnacia, María Luisa Cota (wife of the Mayordomo Don Claudio López) and herself. She spent an entire day in the preparation of a dinner and was declared the winner of the three-day contest by several judges of the event.

Even though she was quite an old lady, Padre Sánchez urged Doña Eulalia to marry Lieutenant Juan Mariné (Mariner), a Catalanian. Just exactly how old she was at this time cannot be proven. Mariné was the widower of María Antonia Sepúlveda who had six children by this first marriage.

At this point, another controversy arises. It is said Eulalia Pérez was the first grantee to Rancho el Rincón de San Pascual (Pasqual). This is the  $3\frac{1}{2}$  square leagues that now constitute Altadena, part of South Pasadena, Pasadena and San Marino. Others say Mariné was the first owner. W. W. Robinson says she was the first owner but that technically Doña Eulalia was not the first grantee. W. L. Blair says that Padre Salvidea wanted to reward Eulalia for her faithful efforts at the San Gabriel Mission. Even though he had been transferred to San Juan Capistrano, he prepared a deed for this Rancho and sent it to his friend, Padre Sánchez, at San Gabriel. It was ratified on Easter Day, 1826, and that is how it derived its name — "Pascua" meaning Easter. Six years later, Eulalia married Juan Mariné on 7 July 1832 at the San Gabriel Mission. Blair says Mariné was much younger than Doña Eulalia and the 1836 Padrón of Los Angeles lists him as twelve years *older*. At any rate, they did not seem to get along together very well so separated, with Doña Eulalia taking the house and Mariné taking the land. Eulalia Pérez was granted the Rancho but had never bothered to have her deed recorded in the civil records. No doubt she did not realize the importance of this act. But Mariné did, so he applied to Governor Figueroa for the land. It was granted to him on 18 February 1835 and thus Juan Mariné is actually the first *legal* owner of Rancho San Pasqual. In the Archives of Los Angeles are recorded the unsuccessful attempts she made to regain possession of some of her land. But this still leaves Doña Eulalia as the first owner or grantee, doesn't it?

Although it is not possible, at this time, to obtain a positive birthdate for Eulalia Pérez de Guillén de Mariné, other informa-

tion is available, thus making it possible to piece together a brief story of her life so it can be said she was born circa 1768. However, there is one date in her vital statistics that is accurately recorded. The San Gabriel Mission records state that Doña Eulalia died on 11 June 1878, and Father Michael Montoya says she is buried near the door between the chapel and the garden. It is of interest to visit the Mission and see her photograph in the tiny Museum and the marble bench in the garden dedicated to her memory with the following inscription:

THIS MARKS THE GRAVE OF  
EULALIA PÉREZ DE GUILLÉN  
BORN AT LORETO, BAJA CALIF. IN 1768  
DIED JUNE 11, 1878  
14 YEARS MAYORDOMA OF  
SAN GABRIEL MISSION  
ERECTED BY THE GARFIELD STUDY CLUB

#### REFERENCES:

- Title Insurance & Trust Co., Los Angeles, booklet *Pasadena* by W. W. Robinson.  
*Ranchos Become Cities* by W. W. Robinson.  
Historical Society of Southern California, *Quarterly*, Sept.-Dec., 1937, "Pasadena's First Owner," by W. W. Robinson.  
Historical Society of Southern California, *Quarterly*, Sept.-Dec., 1940, "Michael White: Sailor of Fortune" by Helen S. Giffen.  
Historical Society of Southern California, *Quarterly*, Sept.-Dec., 1934, "The First Census of the Los Angeles District" by J. Gregg Layne.  
"Una Vieja y Sus Recuerdos" narrated by Doña Eulalia Pérez, Bancroft Library, Berkeley, California.  
Los Angeles *Sunday Times Magazine*, May 17, 1936, "A Bride — at 100." by Gardner Bradford.  
*Pasadena Community Book* by W. L. Blair, 1947.  
Information from Thomas Workman Temple, II.  
*Romance and History of California Ranchos*, by Myrtle Garrison.  
*California All the Way Back to 1828*, by Michael C. White.  
*An American in California* — Biography of William Heath Davis, by Andrew F. Rolle.  
*California Missions and Landmarks*, by Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes.  
*The Works — History of California* by Hubert Howe Bancroft.  
San Gabriel Mission Marriage Records.  
Junípero Serra Museum records, San Diego.  
Magazine *Dominical de Los Periódicos Lozano*, 22 de abril 1956.  
*History of Monrovia and Duarte*, by Charles F. Davis.  
"Keeper of the Keys," by Nellie Van de Grift Sánchez in *Touring Topics*, January 1929.  
Archives of Prefecture of Los Angeles, 1834-1849, pages 335, 350.

# Book Reviews

MR. CALIFORNIA: AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF ROCKWELL D. HUNT. (Fearon Publishers, San Francisco, 1956.) 374 pp., illus., cloth binding. \$5.75.

We are pleased to add to our library the autobiography of an Honorary Member of the Historical Society, contributor of many articles to the QUARTERLY, a writer and educator of note, Rockwell D. Hunt, the man proclaimed by a governor of the state as "*Mr. California*." For many, his youthful reminiscences will create nostalgia for the California of the 70's, 80's and 90's. It is inspiring to read of the unfolding of his many talents and personal philosophy. Of particular interest is the section devoted to educational travels on several continents and meetings with dignitaries of foreign nations. This is a well-worth-reading account of a molder of California's past who contributes vitally to its present, and whose impact upon the future will be undeniable. — J. L. R.

THE ISLANDS AND PORTS OF CALIFORNIA, by Duncan Gleason. (The Devin-Adair Co., Publisher, New York, 1958.) 201 pp., illustrations in black and white. \$8.50.

"An island has an aura of romance not possessed by any other part of Nature's terra firma. It rises from the ocean floor, surrounded by the mysteries of the deep, the tide line marking a division between the known and the unknown." Thus has the artist-author conveyed his fascination for the sea and for its most intimate companions, islands and ports. Many reproductions of his paintings accompany a narrative rich in historical lore which seems to recreate an earlier era of clippers, sloops, whalers and trading vessels. If one has a taste for the brine (and which of us has not?) and a yen for the sense of limitless space and personal freedom which comes from being near the sea, this book will provide pleasurable experience while portraying an interesting aspect of our history. — J. L. R.

CALIFORNIA FIRSTS, by Rockwell D. Hunt. (Fearon Publishers, San Francisco, 1957) 306 pp. with index. Cloth bound. \$5.50

This is a fascinating compilation of diversified facts from the history of our state. The enumeration of chapter headings will serve to illustrate its scope: *Exploration and Discovery; Transportation and Communication; Mining and Minerals; Religion; Agriculture and Horticulture; Education; Government and Politics; Socio-Economics; Literature and Art; Expositions and Pageants and Miscellany*. Each chapter discusses various appropriate topics which can be located both from the table of contents and the detailed index at the end. The value of the book is threefold: it is a good research



tool for many and varied facets of California history; it is highly entertaining reading about curious and little-known aspects of Californiana; and, in its entirety, it provides a panoramic sweep of California history. — J. L. R.

ATLAS OF CALIFORNIA, by Paul F. Griffin and Robert N. Young. (Fearon Publishers, San Francisco, 1956.) 56 pp. \$1.50.

This atlas is a first of its kind because of its appeal for laymen and educators alike and its presentation of a group of maps of a type not heretofore available. These maps show accurate distribution of crop acreages of leading fruit, nut, vegetable and field crops throughout the state. There are 52 pages of assorted maps in all. Some cover the state as a whole, showing weather conditions, location of canals and aqueducts, highways, railroads and regions which have homogeneous physical, cultural and economic characteristics. For each such region, there are topographical and land use maps.

Recognizing that despite rapid population growth and industrialization, agriculture still constitutes an important segment of California's economy, the authors have provided an interesting pictorial representation of much useful data. — J. L. R.

CALIFORNIA, THE NEW EMPIRE STATE: A Regional Geography, by Paul F. Griffin and Robert N. Young. (Fearon Publishers, San Francisco, 1957) 325 pp., illus., with index, bibliography, cloth bound. \$5.50.

"Twenty million people are expected to become Californians by 1975. Therefore, the state is destined to become the nation's most populous, which will make it the industrial giant of the Pacific and one of the world's great playgrounds." In terms of the water supply which could be made available, California could accommodate a population of over 42,000,000. Within its 158,693 square miles of land area are geographical contrasts exceeding almost any to be found in the world in comparable latitude. Recognizing that there is no economy or culture which is not shaped by its environs, the authors have appropriately designated California as the new empire state.

This is a regional geography which is based upon the concept that the land and the people define each other. The state has been divided into eight regions with distinctive landforms, climate, soils, natural vegetation and people. A portion of the book deals with each, explaining the types of agriculture, industry, manufacturing and other social conditions which its geography affords. Topographical, land use and crop acreage distribution maps supplement the text.

Since California is a recent land, geologically speaking, and its

## Book Reviews

aboriginal population had attained meager cultural advancement and modified the land very little, it is a state which looks forward to history. Yet, in studying the impact of geography upon people, we come to better understand the recent past as well as potentialities for the future. For treating crucial factors in their interrelatedness, this book makes a valuable contribution. — J. L. R.

A CITIZENS' GUIDE TO CALIFORNIA GOVERNMENT, by S. Laird Swagert and Burton R. Brazil. (Fearon Publishers, San Francisco, 1955.) 176 pp., paper-bound. Price: \$1.50.

A concise and extremely useful introduction to many facets of California government, particularly those with which the average citizen is likely to come in contact. Designed for use in courses which satisfy the state requirement for instruction in California government, there are sections devoted to such topics as the history of the California Constitution, politics, the legislative, executive and administrative functions of state government, taxation and financial administration, local government and the law and its enforcement. Interesting and invaluable as a ready reference tool.—J. L. R.

WINTER SPORTS IN CALIFORNIA AND THE 1960 VIIIth WINTER OLYMPICS, by Jerry Carpenter. (Fearon Publishers, San Francisco, 1958.) 80 pp., illus., 8" x 11". Cloth bound. \$4.00.

A delight to the eye from its stark white bindings lettered in black to its many beautiful full-page and half-page photographs, this book abundantly reveals the enthusiasm of its author, an ardent disciple of the cult of winter. Jerry Carpenter is a member of the staff of the California State Chamber of Commerce and editor of the *California Magazine* who has worked for many years to develop a great sports industry on the Sierra slopes.

Many pages are devoted to a discussion of the 1960 Winter Olympics at Squaw Valley and to an understanding of the games, their background and cultural significance. Included are ten pages of tables of Olympic and world record statistics. One section discusses skiing techniques and the history of skiing in California, and about half the book covers California winter sports areas. Special features are a winter sports guide supplement for 1957-1958 describing special programs planned or under-way, a table of California ice rinks which can accommodate group skating, a list of skiing terms and phrases and a concise ski area guide inside the front and back covers. All sections are lavishly illustrated.

Here is everything the winter sports enthusiast will want to know and more and potent temptation for those who have never indulged. The photographs are particularly outstanding. — J. L. R.

## *Activities of the Society*

### MEETING OF APRIL 8, 1958

Returning to the Los Angeles County Museum for this meeting, we enjoyed a variety program with five separate talks (1) by Ken Good of the Museum's Education Division with the help of Miss Ruth Mahood and Russell Belous; (2) a sound film entitled "*A Pueblo in Stills and a Metropolis in Motion*;" (3) "*Lang Revisited*" covering our 1957 Pilgrimage; (4) "*Oo-tse-tee Ar-dee-tsh Skee was the father of California*," an overlooked facet of history related humorously by Treasurer Frank B. Putnam, and (5) "*A Short History of Los Angeles County Museum*," by Miss Ruth Mahood, chief curator, Division of History. There was something to interest everyone in this program.

The hostess Committee, chairmanned by Mrs. Edmund F. Ducommun invited Mrs. Thomas E. Workman and Mrs. Beatrice Sabichi Mitchell to preside at the urns for the following members and guests:

Dr. Irving R. Bancroft  
Herbert M. Morley  
Mrs. Jean Hall Giles  
Mr. and Mrs. E. F. Ducommun  
Mr. and Mrs. Leslie E. Colman  
Mr. and Mrs. E. J. Yorba  
Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison  
Mr. and Mrs. Joseph H. Jenkins  
Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion  
Elizabeth C. Hurwitz  
Belle F. Siegel  
Maymie R. Krythe  
Alice Sturdy  
Thomas Q. Lempertz  
Mr. and Mrs. K. L. Carver  
Mr. and Mrs. J. M. Northrop  
Mr. and Mrs. Thomas L. Newmark  
Mrs. Helen B. Walters  
Gordon Forbes  
Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill  
Mrs. Vera C. Roush  
Henry Wadsworth Longfellow

Mr. and Mrs. L. H. O'Loughlin  
Mr. and Mrs. C. A. Holway  
Mr. and Mrs. Harold C. Ambrosch  
W. Ronald Copp  
James W. Welkes, Jr.  
Dr. and Mrs. John L. Eaton  
Mr. and Mrs. George B. Varnum  
Carmen K. MacFarland  
Zilla C. Graves  
William "Duke" Northrop  
Dr. and Mrs. E. R. Pascoe  
Marie Alden Hopkins  
Ella Baxter  
J. Thomas Owen  
Ilene Beatty McNulty  
Lida Houghton Izant  
Mr. and Mrs. Robert C. Gillingham  
Mr. and Mrs. Ernest G. Hager  
Elmer C. Weber  
Frank B. Putnam  
Mrs. Thomas E. Workman  
Mr. and Mrs. Russell E. Belous



## Activities of the Society

### THE BISCAILUZ DINNER, MAY 13, 1958

The May monthly meeting took the form of a dinner at the Los Angeles Athletic Club on Seventh Street, honoring Retiring Sheriff Eugene W. Biscailuz. President Arlt presided at the head table. At the conclusion of the dinner, he opened the evening's activities by first paying his complimentary remarks to the Sheriff. Then other tributes followed. Thomas Workman Temple presented an old family document to the Sheriff; Past President John C. Austin, who had followed the Sheriff's career for many years; and again by Dr. Arlt, who presented the Sheriff with the Society's first "History Maker Citation."

Sheriff Biscailuz spoke at considerable length upon the many experiences he has had in Los Angeles during his long career in public service. With so many old friends and acquaintances present, he referred to many of them and reminisced upon how they had come to cross his path. This gave a most interesting and personal theme to his informal address.

During the dinner and later, Señor Gabé Ruiz entertained with his Trovadores. When the speeches were concluded, many old friends greeted the Sheriff. That the whole evening proved to be a real success and especially for our honored guest is attested to by his letter of June 1, from which we quote:

*"The evening I spent with the Society was one of the most memorable within recollection. It is a rare treat to be able to spend an evening with so many old and dear friends over the years and meet so many new ones who share my intense interest in our wonderful Golden State and in the history of this County in particular.*

*The tribute paid me was one of the most inspiring that I have ever received and I shall long remember it. Please convey to the officers and to the Society as a whole my sincere appreciation for your efforts in arranging an evening of complete enjoyment."*

Those who attended the dinner were:

Dr. Gustave O. Arlt	Miss Augustine Dalland
Mr. and Mrs. Huston Alexander	Miss Zannie E. Davis
Mrs. Gertrude R. Allen	Charles Demateis
Mr. and Mrs. John C. Austin	Al Doiron
Daisy Baird	Mr. and Mrs. E. F. Ducommun
Mr. and Mrs. John R. Boden	Mr. and Mrs. Chester Faraday
Mr. and Mrs. Norris Bostwick	Mrs. Florence Farmer
Mr. and Mrs. Stanley K. Burgess	Mr. and Mrs. Martin Fuller
Miss Lillian Carey	Mrs. Jean Hall Giles
Miss Katherine C. Carr	Miss Zilla C. Graves
Mrs. Ada Carroll	Mrs. Martha Gristock
Mr. and Mrs. K. L. Carver	Mr. and Mrs. Everett G. Hager
Mrs. Ella Cole	Mr. and Mrs. Giles Hall
Mr. and Mrs. Robert Cummins	Mrs. Evangelina Higuera

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Mrs. Thelma Holmgren	Robert H. Raphael, Jr.
Miss Flora B. Houston	Mrs. A. B. Reamer
Ray Howard	Mr. and Mrs. G. W. Retzer, Jr.
Mr. and Mrs. Heard H. Izant	Mrs. Dora M. Robbins
Mrs. Lida H. Izant	Mrs. Hazel Robinson
Mr. and Mrs. Joseph H. Jenkins	Mr. and Mrs. W. W. Robinson
Mrs. Harry Keeler	Miss Eleanor J. Rogers
Mrs. Gerard Krythe	Miss Judy Rose
Mr. and Mrs. Peter Kuhl	Mrs. Rose E. Ruhl
Dr. and Mrs. J. R. Lacayo	Mr. and Mrs. James E. Serven
Mrs. Penrina E. LoPiccolo	Mr. and Mrs. Clarence Shultz
Mrs. Carmen K. MacFarland	Mrs. Marcius C. Smith
Miss Ruth I. Mahood	Mr. and Mrs. John W. Snyder
Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion	Mr. and Mrs. Herbert W. Stanton
Mrs. Beatrice Sabichi Mitchell	Roger J. Sterrett
Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison	Mr. and Mrs. George L. Swartz
Mr. and Mrs. Raymond K. Morrison	Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Workman
Mr. and Mrs. Joseph M. Northrop	Temple, II
Mr. and Mrs. W. W. Orcutt	Dr. Stafford L. Warren
Harold Oswald	Elmer C. Weber
Dr. and Mrs. Elmer R. Pascoe	Miss Verna Wells
Capt. and Mrs. James Pascoe	Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill
Mrs. Diana Peplow	Mr. and Mrs. Ernest J. Yorba
Mr. and Mrs. A. B. Perkins	Miss Isaline M. Yule
Mrs. Loretta Probert	Mr. and Mrs. Otto J. Zahn
Frank B. Putnam	Stephen Yorba

## OUR 30th ANNUAL PILGRIMAGE, JUNE 21, 1958

Saturday morning three buses loaded with "pilgrims" on Carondelet Street at the rear of the Elk's Club and set forth to the San Fernando Valley, where we noticed briefly as we went four landmarks, No. 151, Campo Cahuenga Memorial Park, where General Andrés Pico capitulated to General John C. Frémont on January 13, 1847; No. 150, Brand Park Memory Garden, No. 157, San Fernando Mission, founded by Padre Fermin Francisco de Lasuen, September 8, 1797, as the 17th in the mission chain, and No. 362, the Adobe built by Andrés and Romolo Pico in 1873, restored and now the San Fernando Y.M.C.A.

Leaving the valley, we passed the Aqueduct Cascade where Mulholland's speech, made when the water first arrived, was recalled. "There it is, take it." After a brief pause at Castaic Junction Station we continued down Santa Clara Valley to Landmark No. 553, Rancho Camulos. Here we were guests of Mr. and Mrs. Edward F. Burger who presently make it their home. The whole party left the buses and wandered through the gardens enjoying coffee under the spreading black walnut tree which covers an enormous area,



### HONORED GUEST

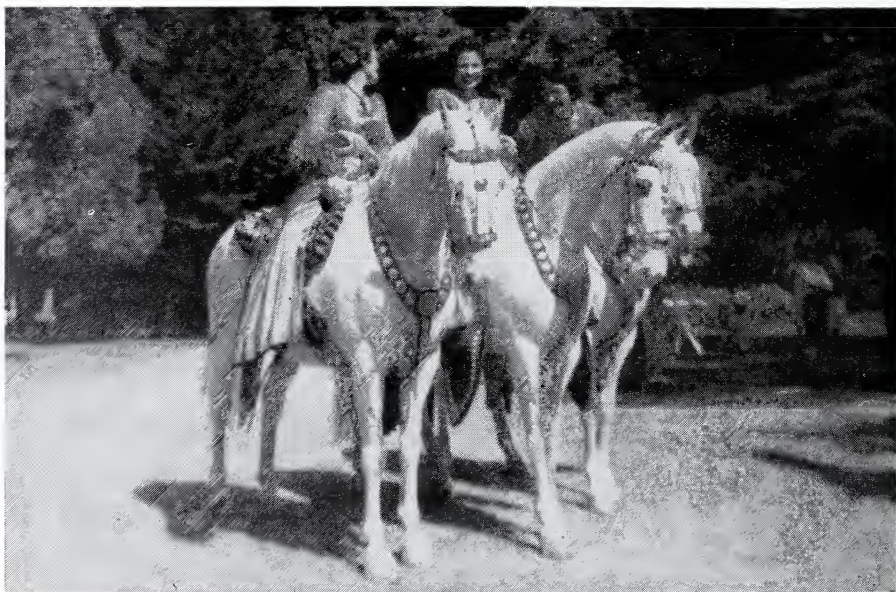
*The Historical Society of Southern California paid tribute to Los Angeles County Sheriff Eugene W. Biscailuz at its meeting on May 13, 1958. Sheriff Biscailuz has served in the Sheriff's Office for more than one-half century. Seated at the head table, on the Sheriff's left, was Mrs. Huston Alexander and, on his right, Society President Gustave O. Arlt. Señor Gabe Ruiz (standing, center) entertained the guests with Spanish music during the affair which was held at the Los Angeles Athletic Club.*





#### ANNUAL PILGRIMAGE VISITS ADOLFO CAMARILLO

*The Historical Society of Southern California made its Annual Pilgrimage to historic Ventura County in June. Members of the entourage will always remember the all-too-short visit that was made at the rancho of Adolfo Camarillo (top photo), who hosted them royally with a buffet luncheon, and assisted by the señoritas of his family (lower photo), treated them to equestrienne demonstrations on their highly prized blooded horses.*



— Photos by William Mason.

## *Activities of the Society*

looking in on the old chapel, still much the same as in Ramona's time, and strolling along the paths described by Mrs. Jackson.

Leaving Camulos reluctantly, the caravan moved on to the town of Piru, where we were told of the California condors, the largest flying birds in the United States. They have a wing spread of nine feet and weigh about twenty pounds each. There are now about one hundred of these birds in the neighborhood of Piru. Next, we touched Fillmore, and then down the valley passing "The Place Called Sespe," made so familiar to us by Dr. Robert Glass Cleland of Occidental College. (See page 85 of the March QUARTERLY for a review.)

Continuing to Santa Paula, we visited the California Oil Museum, where the Union Oil Company was formed in 1890, and so on to Ventura. Here, we noted the home of James H. Roth, president of the *Ventura County Historical Society* on East Main Street.

After luncheon at Holy Cross School where the ladies of the *Altar Society* were our hostesses, greetings were exchanged between James H. Roth, president of the *Ventura County Historical Society* and Dr. Arlt, president of our society. Then, President Roth called upon Mayor Pettit of Ventura, Father O'Reilly of the Mission and Attorney F. L. Fairbanks of Fillmore, who gave us a quick and most interesting historical sketch of Ventura County. Vice-President Percy and Secretary Morrison, both of the *Ventura County Historical Society*, were also introduced. Father O'Reilly made his mission talk after luncheon by taking us all into the Mission (Landmark No. 310) itself where he pointed out the many interesting features of the Mission.

Unfortunately, the hour had so far advanced that our party could not visit *Ventura County Pioneer Museum* or Landmark No. 113, *La Loma de la Cruz*. Much as these omissions were regretted, we loaded the buses and hurried on to visit Don Adolfo Camarillo in his beautiful home south of the city that bears his name.

Upon debarking from the buses all were delighted at Don Adolfo's words of welcome and the genuineness of his words were further confirmed by the cold drinks, salads and sandwiches much in evidence. A small orchestra delighted us with strains of Spanish music and a singer gave several numbers with the trio. His home was opened for our inspection, and best of all, his daughters, grand daughters and great-grand daughters, mounted on their beautiful white horses, gave us a real *fiesta* atmosphere as they rode about the paths and lawns, making the horses do their usual feats. All were put at ease, and the reception received at the Camarillo home



was so unusually gracious that all felt that "old Spanish hospitality" was the order of the day.

After a pleasant hour and a half, once more we "entrained" and sought the homeward highway, stopping only a moment at Stage Coach Inn, Newbury Park, a part of *Rancho Conejo*.

At Calabasas, we drove to the home of *Espirita*, now occupied by John Caradine and his family. Mr. Caradine spoke briefly of the death of Miguel Leonis, former owner, and he welcomed us to the property. Then we once more boarded for Encino, where we noted the Ranch of the Live Oak and the houses built by Vicente de la Osa and Eugene Garnier. Continuing south on Ventura Boulevard, we entered the Hollywood Freeway and arrived back at the Elk's Club about 8:00 p.m., tired but enchanted with a wonderful day.

Thanks to Program Chairman Putnam for all the fine work he put into our *30th Annual Pilgrimage*. We can hardly imagine a better one for some other year.

Who enjoyed that marvelous day? Those here listed rode the buses, and two or three private autos also joined our caravan.

Members who went on trek to Ventura, June 21, 1958:

Frank and Grace Rolfe	Martha Gristock
Ferdinand and Gertrude Perret	Carmen K. MacFarland
Charles Puck	William M. Mason
William F. Holtz and guest	C. C. Ganahl
Kate Darling Chapin and guest	J. Thomas Owen
F. W. Nelson	Mr. and Mrs. L. E. Colman
Mrs. Lester W. Tryce and guests	Richard J. Berry and guest
Zilla C. Graves	Flora B. Houston
Mr. and Mrs. Everett G. Hager	Ruth and Chuck Powell
Mrs. B. Sabichi Mitchell and guest	Katherine Carr
Ruth I. Mahood	Mrs. E. F. Ducommun
Elmer C. Weber	Frank Frank and guest
Dorothy M. McLaughlin and guest	Peter B. Kuhl and guest
Ruth S. Hirshfield and guest	Herbert M. Morley
Edith B. Duncan	Mr. and Mrs. K. L. Carver
Augustine Dalland	Walter K. Towers and guest
Isaline M. Yule	Herbert E. Brown and guest
Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion	Stafford L. Warren and guests
Norris Bostwick and guest	Carlton Ralstons and guest
William Menton	H. Kenyon Burch and guest
Ernest J. Yorba and guests	D. R. Guthrey and guest
Ruth H. Kemman	Leon Schreiber and guest
John C. Wolfskill and guests	Mrs. Thomas W. Temple and guests
Frank B. Putnam	John W. Snyder
Dorothy K. Hassler	Eleanor Ormondy and guest
Mrs. Joseph M. Northrop and son	Clara L. Darling and guests
Antoinette Rowe and guests	Mary Tinglof
Eleanor J. Rogers and guest	Diana Peplow



## *Activities of the Society*

Jean Hall Giles	Mrs. Frank Pachmayr and guest
A. R. Phillips, Jr. and guest	Mrs. Jessie Hoyt
Belle F. Siegel	Mrs. Dexter Monroe
Ethel Keeler	Florence Farmer
Mrs. B. R. Forsythe and guests	Dr. and Mrs. Gustave O. Arlt
Dr. and Mrs. Irving R. Bancroft	Miss C. Marjorie Freeman and guest
Violet Ingram	Mrs. Ella Cole and guests
Mr. and Mrs. David Siemens and Frank Putnam with George Krain drove private cars.	

### RESOLUTION COMMENDS MR. CAMARILLO

At its meeting on June 30, the Board of Directors of the *Historical Society of Southern California* unanimously adopted the following resolution:

*"WHEREAS, Mr. Adolfo Camarillo, throughout his long and distinguished career, has proven himself to be a worthy representative of the California of the Dons that we all love and admire, and*

*"WHEREAS, he maintains in his beautiful rancho home the gracious, leisurely, and hospitable atmosphere that characterized the picturesque past of our Golden State, and*

*"WHEREAS, Mr. Camarillo, on June 21, 1958, gave the members of this Historical Society an afternoon of generous California hospitality that they will never forget, therefore be it*

*"RESOLVED that, in token of appreciation, the Historical Society of Southern California hereby elects Mr. Adolfo Camarillo to honorary life membership and will carry his name forever on the roll of honorary members."*

## Gifts to the Society

*In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.*

*The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.*

*Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.*

MARCO R. NEWMARK,  
Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests

DUNCAN GLEASON: book "*Islands and Ports of California*," by Duncan Gleason, Devin-Adair, 1958, 201 pp., illus.

MISS CHARLOT HOPPERSTEAD: "*The Great Events by Famous Historians*." (The National Alumni, Publishers, 1905) — A world history from 586 B.C. to 1910 A.D. in twenty volumes with index. Issued in a limited edition of which we hold No. 111 signed to Miss Hopperstead. Binding is a facsimile of the original on exhibition in the British Museum, and the editor-in-chief is Rossiter Johnson, L.L.D. Beautifully illustrated with reproductions of many famous paintings. Each volume contains a chronology of universal history. The XXth volume is a complete index of the whole series, with several special indexes.

MARCO R. NEWMARK: City of Long Beach Water Department, "*Annual Report*," 1956-57"

FRANK ROLFE: full color print of the painting, "*Founding of Los Angeles*" by Dean Cornwell; book, "*The Story of the Pacific Coast Borax Co.*" (now U. S. Borax and Chemical Co.); 2 copies of "*Mark Twain's Newspaper Territorial Enterprise*," October 26, 1956, and December 6, 1957, published at Virginia City, Nevada; book, "*The Great Aqueduct*," by Metropolitan Water District of Southern California, 1941, 69 pp., illus.; book, "*Glendora, California, 1887-1937*," History and Souvenir Program of the Golden Get-Together Celebration, May 29, 1937, compiled and written by Ruth Pratt Kinmball, Glendora Press Gleaner 1937, 26 pp., paperbound; book, "*The City of Los Angeles: The First 100 Years, 1850-1950*," city yearbook, 1940, 99 pp., illus.; "*California Reverie*," by Charles E. Haas, mounted clippings from the Los Angeles Daily Journal, 1953, 161 pp., in loose-leaf binder (contains also "Practice of Law in Horse and Buggy Days in old L. A.," by Oscar Lawler (a newspaper clipping)).

SMITHSONIAN INSTITUTION: 2 books, "*Writings on American History, 1952*," Annual Report of the American Historical Association, 1954, Vol. II; "*Annual Report of the American Historical Association, 1956*," Vol. I: Proceedings.

## New Members

The President and Board of Directors take this opportunity to introduce the new members who joined the Society between April 1 and June 30, 1958, and to extend to them a cordial welcome.

### LIFE MEMBER

<i>New Members</i>	<i>Proposed by</i>
ADOLFO CAMARILLO ( <i>Honorary</i> ) .....	Board of Directors
CARSON ESTATE CO. ....	Crawford, Marion

### SUSTAINING MEMBER

MR. AND MRS. FRANK PACHMAYR .....	Yorba, dePackman
-----------------------------------	------------------

### ACTIVE MEMBERS

MYRON I. BARKER .....	Clark, Putnam
ERNEST A. BRYANT .....	Putnam, Carver
HENRY H. CLIFFORD .....	Robinson, Carver
W. R. COPP .....	Putnam, Marion
EUNICE CRITTENDEN .....	Putnam, Carver
LEONARD C. CRITTENDEN .....	Putnam, Carver
MISS FLORENCE DURKEE .....	Cooke, Carver
ROBERT G. ELLHAMER .....	Marion, Carver
LEWIS D. ERWIN, II .....	Putnam, Carver
MARIANA T. ETCEHEMENDY .....	dePackman, Carver
FRANK FRANK .....	MacFarland, Carver
MISS C. MARJORIE FREEMAN .....	Clarke, Robinson
MR. AND MRS. MARTIN FULLER .....	Putnam, Carver
MRS. DOUGLAS C. GREGG .....	Carver, dePackman
MR. AND MRS. D. R. GUTHREY .....	Morrison, Putnam
HAROLD A. HENRY .....	Putnam, Carver
MISS VIOLET INGRAM .....	Houston, Northrop
MRS. CLIFFORD JACKSON .....	Baxter, Northrop
JOSEPH H. JENKINS .....	Putnam, Morrison
DR. RALPH ELDIN MINGER .....	Putnam, Carver
MR. AND MRS. MYRON NUTTING .....	Peplow, Marion
MRS. C. G. OSBORN .....	Marion, Morrison
MISS FRANCES C. RICHARDSON .....	Clarke, Marion
DUDLEY SIPPRELLE .....	Putnam, Carver
JACKSON STANLEY .....	Clarke, Arlt
REV. LUTHER E. STEIN .....	Marion, Putnam
MRS. JOHN A. STRANSKY, JR. ....	MacFarland, dePackman
MRS. WALTER K. TOWERS .....	Arlt, Workman

### INSTITUTIONAL MEMBERS

TUESDAY AFTERNOON CLUB  
BURBANK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
UNIVERSITY OF SAN FRANCISCO, RICHARD A. GLEESON LIBRARY  
WISCONSIN STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY



## *Notes from the Secretary*

### HERITAGE HOUSE DEDICATION AT COMPTON

Early in April, an invitation to attend the dedication of Heritage House at Compton to take place on the 14th was received. Your secretary took an early morning drive and visited this old building and met our Compton friends. The building has been redecorated, furnished as of its own historical period and is opened now to the public for visits and inspection. The kitchen equipment is well-worth examining and the piano which came by ship around Cape Horn shows the groove, worn by chafing on the rope which held it in place on shipboard. Compton has really performed a service to those historically-minded in this interesting restoration. Fortunately, it is well located at the Civic Center Park behind the County Library and the County Courts Building on Palm between Willowbrook and Acacia streets. Heritage House dates from ninety years ago, when Griffith Dickenson Compton arrived by wagon train and laid the foundation of a new community. The restoration committee was chairmanned by Mrs. B. R. Forsythe, who has recently become a member of our Society.

### SUMMER RECESS

Now that the season of Society activities has come to an end with our successful Pilgrimage, why not, while you are relaxing from the pressure of continuing personal demands, give a little thought to your friends and acquaintances who might enjoy being members of our Society? Now is the chance you have been waiting for to sit down and quietly interest them in the work of our group. Get an extra number of the *QUARTERLY* (\$2.00 each to members), point out its good features and show them what has held your loyalty to the Society. In doing this, you will be aiding and abetting the fine work of Director K. L. Carver, chairman of our Membership Committee.

Why not a thousand members in this our *Diamond Anniversary Year*? This is what Chairman Carver has been urging. We have only July, August, September and October in which to achieve this goal. November finds us seventy-five years old.

## *Notes from the Secretary*

### CLASSIFICATION OF MEMBERSHIPS

Have our longtime Active Members ever considered becoming Sustaining, Patron or Life Members? This would help us to grow, and the benefits would return to each of you. Think about it this year and help our anniversary.

### OUR CITY'S BIRTHDAY

September 4, 1958, will find the City of Los Angeles 177 years old, and, as usual, a birthday celebration will be held around the Plaza — the founding point where Felipe de Neve set the city in motion. President Arlt, as in the last few years, will again chairman the affair at the request of Mayor Poulson. He says that this year the celebration will be changed in character. Instead of so many speeches and entertainers, it is planned to set up the program so that the citizens may entertain themselves rather than being entertained. To accomplish this, booths will be set up around the Plaza where they will find plenty of diversion. Some early business pioneers will equip special booths. Our own Society will have a booth with someone in attendance all the time to display our publications and our activities. A new diversion will be the new Chinese dragon which will make its first appearance. It is said to require seventy-five men to make it function. You wait and see! Another feature will be the arrival of the Southern Pacific's old steam train bringing guests who will be met and welcomed by distinguished citizens in old-time costumes. They will ride in horse-drawn vehicles. A band will play throughout the evening, and the people will be able to stroll about and visit booths. This is the present plan, and it should interest many people, especially our native Angelenos. If any brief program is arranged later, it will be put in motion at 9:00 o'clock. *See you September 4th!*

### BUTTERFIELD STAGE CELEBRATION

The anniversary of the establishment of the Overland Mail Centennials this fall should cause us all to be thinking along these lines. Overland Mail Days in California will be October 6 to 10. The cities where corrals were established will have special programs. The documentary film, "*The Butterfield Trail*," will first be shown September 15 at Tipton, Missouri, on the eve of the departure of the caravan which will travel westward from Missouri to California with five stops in our state. Frank B. Putnam, our Second Vice-President and Treasurer, is now at work developing a program for Los Angeles' participation. The climax of the centennial ceremonies will take place at San Francisco, October 10-12.

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

There are not only historical aspects to this affair, but library awards, philatelic activities, dinners and many cities will contribute to the historical souvenir. Get in tune with this important activity.

### NEW HONORS TO DR. HUNT

Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt, an Honorary Member, our early president and long-time historian has been receiving new awards. At U.S.C. he was named "*the alumnus of the year*" to receive the *Asa Call Trophy*. It was presented *Alumni Day*, May 10. Since U.S.C. conferred the degree of Doctor of Literature on Dr. Hunt in 1936, he becomes thereby an alumnus. On May 13, the County Board of Supervisors presented to him a scroll felicitating him upon his 90th birthday anniversary and upon his many achievements.

Another Honorary Member is about to have a birthday in the 90's next month — Mary Foy, first woman City-Librarian. More about it in the September *QUARTERLY*.

### HAGER'S BIBLIOGRAPHY

Mr. and Mrs. Everett G. Hager of San Pedro have been working upon a series of abstracts of every article in our *ANNUALS* and *QUARTERLIES*. When their work is published, we shall have a means of advertising our back numbers in such a way as to permit selection of items of interest to our members and others, as well as outside institutions. The inventory of all our holdings prepared by Mrs. J. M. Northrop, one of our Directors, will assist greatly in enabling us to sell our back numbers.

### A SOUTHERN SYMPOSIUM OF HISTORICAL SOCIETIES

Legory O'Loughlin of Glendale, regional vice-president of the *Conference of California Historical Societies* is at work upon such a symposium to be held in 1959. At a recent meeting of representatives of six societies in this area, enthusiastic support was aroused.

### DUES

If, by any chance, you have not paid your 1958 dues, why not do so this month to get squared away for the fall season.



# PUBLICATIONS

*of the*  
***Historical Society of  
 Southern California***

1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California  
*Telephone REpublic 4-2823*



1892 — Annual Containing the Sutro  
 Documents with translations - - each \$3.00

1931 — One Hundred Fiftieth Anni-  
 versary Special Publication  
 (Annual for 1931) - - - - each \$5.00

All other numbers of Annual  
 Publications - - - - - each \$2.50

A limited number of sets of Annuals  
 (1892 - 1934, inclusive) are  
 available - - - - - per set \$75.00

These sets do not include An-  
 nuals for 1895, 1924 or 1933,  
 which are out of print.

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
 members - - - - - per run \$8.00

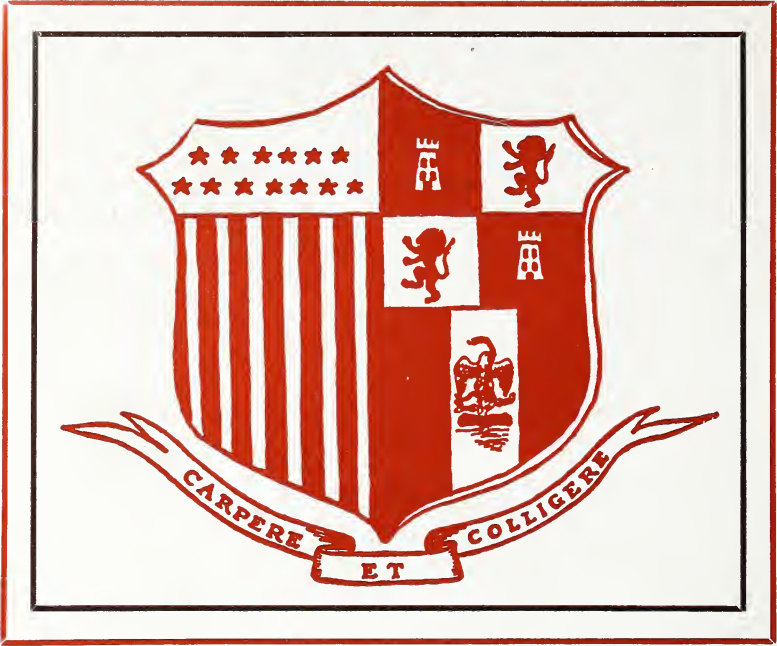
Individual single numbers to  
 members - - - - - each \$2.00

Individual double numbers to  
 members - - - - - each \$3.00

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
 non-members - - - - - per run \$10.00

Individual single numbers to  
 non-members - - - - - each \$3.00

Individual double numbers to  
 non-members - - - - - each \$4.00



September, 1958

Vol. XL — No. 3

1883 — Celebrating Our — 1958  
DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY YEAR

*The*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

# QUARTERLY

The Society's Birthplace,  
November 1, 1883



— From the Historical Collection of Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

## OLD TEMPLE COURT HOUSE ABOUT 1891

*This is the original Los Angeles County Court House that stood on the site now occupied by Los Angeles City Hall. The Historical Society of Southern California was organized in Court Room No. 48 in this building on November 1, 1883.*



**T**HE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for three-quarters of a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 the *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published each March, June, September and December.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to make the *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms are always welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

*The Society's Purposes and Objectives are:*

- To sponsor and encourage observances of historic dates and anniversaries;
- To preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest with particular stress on Southern California;
- To assist in the marking and restoration of landmarks which inspire interest and respect for events, persons and customs of the past;
- To promote activity in the conservation of public records, historical documents, newspapers, museum material and related Californiana;
- To preserve, as an aid to business and industry, business records, industrial and transportation history and the use of historic material in public relations;
- To encourage the increased use of history in the schools, to the end that there shall be developed a greater interest in, respect for, and loyalty to our American institutions;
- To publish material of permanent historic interest and significance;
- To assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities;
- To hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles (except during the summer months) at which persons of recognized authority in their respective subjects appear as guest speakers, followed by refreshments and a social hour;
- To gather at least once each year in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

*This Society is a public non-profit corporation. The principal sources of revenue for its operations and maintenance are from membership, dues, contributions and bequests. It renders a needed public service and is worthy of your support.*

**MEMBERSHIP CLASSIFICATIONS:**

*(Dues include one subscription to the QUARTERLY)*

<i>Life Member</i> .....	\$200.00	<i>Sustaining Member</i> .....	\$ 25.00
<i>Patron Member</i> .....	100.00	<i>Active Member</i> .....	10.00

*Membership dues and contributions to the Society are deductible income tax items.*

*Articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the QUARTERLY, and general society correspondence should be addressed to the temporary headquarters:*

**THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA**

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary*

1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California

Telephone REpublic 4-2823

*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

**QUARTERLY**

*This Number,  
Commemorating  
the Seventy-Fifth Anniversary  
of the*

HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA  
*is respectfully dedicated to*

MRS. ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN  
*secretary emeritus*

*and to the  
following members of the Society  
who have, through the years,  
given unselfishly of their outstanding  
services and talents:*

MR. JOHN C. AUSTIN

MRS. EDWARD A. DICKSON

MISS MABEL GUINN

MR. MAX E. HAYWARD

DR. ROCKWELL D. HUNT

MR. OSCAR LAWLER

MRS. J. GREGG LAYNE

MR. MARCO R. NEWMARK

MISS MARION PARKS

MR. FREDERIC C. RIPLEY

MRS. FREDERIC C. RIPLEY

MR. W. W. ROBINSON

MR. FRANK ROLFE

MR. ROGER J. STERRETT

*and*

MR. ROBERT J. WOODS



— Photo courtesy The Los Angeles Evening Herald-Express

### *Notes of Interest About*

### **Ana Begue de Packman**

Secretary Emeritus Ana Begue de Packman has an enviable record of accomplishments in behalf of the Historical Society of Southern California. She served as secretary of the Society from 1934 until her retirement in 1956 and it was through her direction that the Society grew and prospered during the depression years of the 30's and the war years of the 40's. She carried the organizational and business affairs of the Society "in her hand bag" as its headquarters sought shelter under many roofs while on its continuous quest to "find a home."

Among Mrs. de Packman's contributions to the Society many are outstanding. One is the format and plan for the ANNUAL HISTORICAL TREK; another, under the direction of Curator Marco R. Newmark, is the "*Builders of Los Angeles*" Plaque; and another was the *Centennial Year Roster* of the Society that Mrs. de Packman, Director and Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, working under the guidance of President Edward A. Dickson, and with the aid and co-operation of Director and Mrs. Marshall Stimson and of many other members, so successfully produced.

In addition to these and an untold number of other services, Mrs. de Packman made four outstanding contributions to the QUARTERLY. Her articles appeared in the March, 1937; June-September, 1939; June-September, 1944, and December, 1945, numbers of the publication.



*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

# QUARTERLY

---

VOLUME XL

September, 1958

NUMBER 3

---

## CONTENTS:

ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
THOUGHTS ON THE EVE OF OUR DIAMOND JUBILEE . . . . .	203
<i>By Gustave O. Arlt</i>	
NOAH LEVERING: A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH . . . . .	211
<i>By Lorrin L. Morrison</i>	
NOTES OF INTEREST . . . . .	208-232
<i>About:</i> Colonel J. J. Warner; Henry Dwight Barrows; Major E. W. Jones; James Miller Guinn; George Butler Griffin; Dr. J. D. Moody; Walter R. Bacon; George Finley Bovard; Rockwell D. Hunt; Arthur Ellis; J. Gregg Layne; Henry Raup Wagner; Robert Glass Cleland; Marshall Stimson; Charles Gibbs Adams; Marco R. Newmark; Roger J. Sterrett; Edward A. Dickson; John C. Austin; John E. Fishburn, Jr.; Gustave O. Arlt; Guy E. Marion.	
SOCIETY OFFICERS: 1883-1958 . . . . .	215
A BRIEF SOCIETY HISTORY . . . . .	223
<i>By Ana Begue de Packman</i>	
FIFTEEN DECISIVE EVENTS OF CALIFORNIA HISTORY—PART III . . . . .	265
<i>By Rockwell D. Hunt</i>	
MINING CAMPS OF THE SOLEDAD—PART II . . . . .	285
<i>By Arthur B. Perkins</i>	
BOOK REVIEWS . . . . .	304
ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY . . . . .	308
GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY . . . . .	312
NEW MEMBERS . . . . .	313
NOTES FROM THE SECRETARY . . . . .	314

---

The HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, 1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

---

# The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

## *Officers, Directors and Committees for 1958*

### OFFICERS:

GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *President*

JUSTIN G. TURNER, *First Vice-President*

FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Second Vice-President and Treasurer*

ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary Emeritus*

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary and Curator*

### DIRECTORS:

Gustave O. Arlt

JOSEPH J. LA BARBERA

K. L. Carver

Dwight L. Clarke

Edmond F. Ducommun

Colin M. Gair

Lorrin L. Morrison

Marco R. Newmark

Mrs. J. M. Northrop

Ana Begue de Packman

Frank B. Putnam

W. W. Robinson

Andrew F. Rolle

Miss Grace S. Stoermer

Justin G. Turner

Mrs. Thomas E. Workman

### STANDING COMMITTEES:

*Executive Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; Edmond F. Ducommun, Justin G. Turner, Frank B. Putnam, W. W. Robinson.

*Program Committee:* FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer, Andrew F. Rolle.

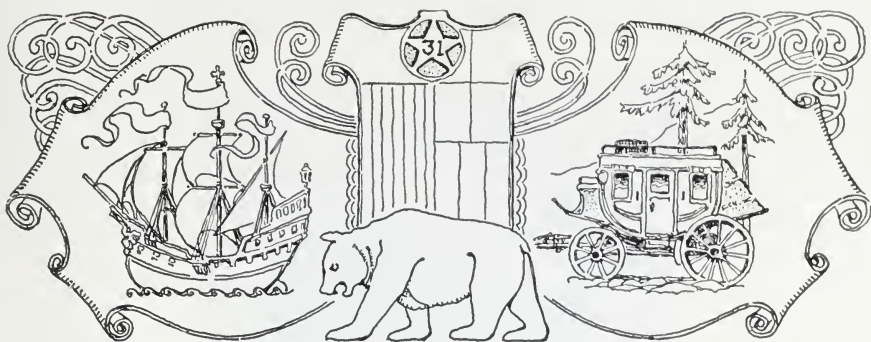
*Publication Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; W. W. Robinson, Justin G. Turner, K. L. Carver, Dwight L. Clarke, Edmond F. Ducommun, Lorrin L. Morrison, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Membership Committee:* K. L. CARVER, *Chairman*; Lorrin L. Morrison, Mrs. J. M. Northrop, Joseph J. La Barbera, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Harold Oswald, Frank B. Putnam, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman, George L. Swartz, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, George S. Moffatt, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Gifts Committee:* MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; GUY E. MARION, *Curator*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, H. H. West, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill.

*Landmarks Committee:* EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba, A. B. Perkins, Miss Ann Patton, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.

*Hostesses of the Social Hour:* MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN and MRS. BEATRICE SABICHI MITCHELL, *Co-chairmen*; Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Mrs. Ernest Yorba, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.



GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

MRS. STAFFORD L. WARREN, *Associate Editor*

FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Pictorial Editor*

---

*The Historical Society of Southern California* QUARTERLY for September, 1958

---

# *Thoughts on the Eve of Our Diamond Jubilee*

*By Gustave O. Arlt*

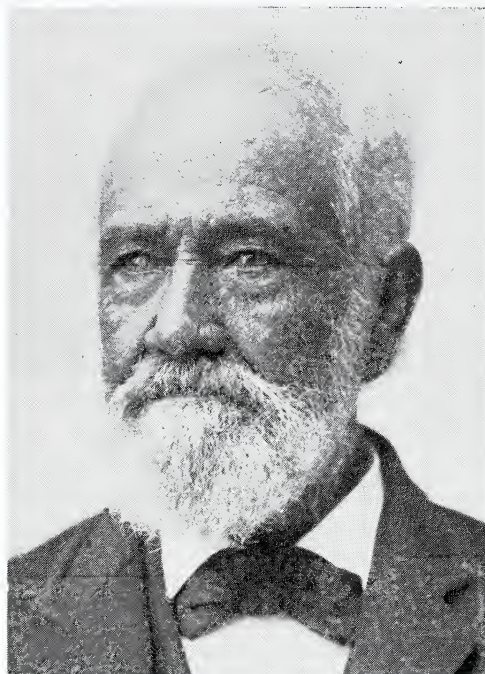


IN NOVEMBER 1, 1958, our Society celebrates the seventy-fifth anniversary of its founding. Even in these days of increased longevity, seventy-five years is a ripe old age for a human individual; for a human institution it is phenomenal. At age seventy-five, the *Historical Society of Southern California* is the oldest historical society on the Pacific Coast; it is the only literary society in Southern California that can look back upon an uninterrupted existence of three-fourths of a century. It is therefore one of the venerable institutions of the Southland; one that looks back with satisfaction and pride upon its many years of devoted — and generally unrequited — service to the preservation of the history of our city, of our region, and of our state.

On the evening of November 1, 1883, fifteen men gathered in a room of Temple's Court House to form a historical society. It is



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

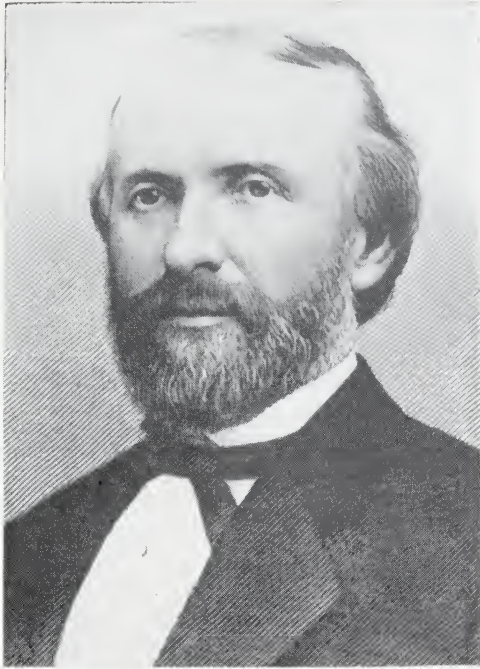


— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

DON ANTONIO CORONEL  
*Founder-Member*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

well, after all these years, to remind ourselves of their names, for they were good names in the life of our city. They were J. J. Warner, Antonio F. Coronel, J. G. Downey, George Hansen, H. D. Barrows, J. M. Guinn, C. N. Wilson, John Mansfield, Noah Levering, Ira More, J. B. Niles, A. Kohler, A. J. Bradfield, E. W. Jones and Marcus Baker. It is interesting to note that not all of them were old-timers; some, to be sure, dated back to the days before statehood and the incorporation of the city; others, however, were of very recent importation. But they were all imbued with one idea — the recording and preservation of history, so that the past should always remain as the colorful tapestry before which the drama of the present should unfold. But I doubt that these fifteen men even vaguely realized that the society which they were founding would persist to celebrate an anniversary three quarters of a century later. And I doubt that any of them suspected that after seventy-five years a society with a membership approaching a thousand would pause to honor their memory.

*Thoughts on the Eve of Our Diamond Jubilee*

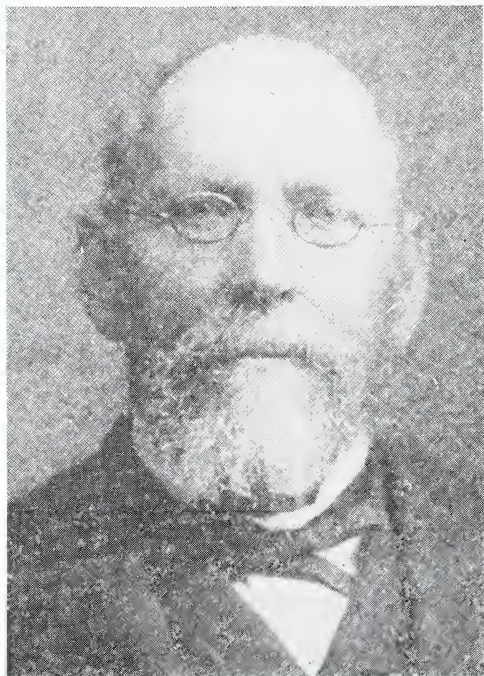


— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

EX-GOVERNOR JOHN G. DOWNEY  
*Founder-Member*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

The birthplace of the Society was not a glamorous spot to remember with pride. For the dingy room in the Temple's Court House, lighted by two smoking oil lamps, served by day as the police court in which the mayor of the city meted out punishment to the vagrants, drunks and other petty offenders of the little community of 14,000 inhabitants. Twenty years later, in 1903, J. M. Guinn, then secretary and curator of the Society, one of the two surviving founders, in his anniversary speech, commented wryly that these uncongenial quarters were the best the Society could afford, "for it was poor and obscure at birth, and it might be added that in its maturer years it is still poor, but not obscure." In 1958, over the vista of seventy-five years, we might be inclined to comment that, unattractive as the room may have been, in 1883 the City at least provided a room!

When one considers the peregrinations of the Society in its early years, one wonders how its members ever kept up with it. Soon after its birth, it moved to the second floor of the Nadeau Hotel where it flourished for a year. This must have been the glamour



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

GEORGE HANSEN

*Founder-Member*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

period of the young society, for the Nadeau Hotel was fairly new and swanky. In these quarters the Society gave a grand reception for John Charles Frémont and his estimable wife, Jessie Benton Frémont, and made them both honorary members. (How many of us knew that *The Pathfinder* was a member of our Society?) There were also receptions for Lyman C. Draper, founder of the Wisconsin Historical Society and for Professor Asa Gray, the father of modern botany. It must have been a gay social whirl that year but it didn't last long, for hotel life proved expensive and the Society shifted its base "away out" on West Fifth Street—near Grand Avenue—to the Normal School. But that was too far out in the wilds, the members refused to trudge along the unpaved, unlighted streets, and after only a few months the Society was forced to return to more populous realms, the Council Chamber in the old City Hall on Second Street. Here it remained until 1889, when it was evicted in favor of the Board of Education which needed more room. At this point, probably from an atavistic urge, the Society returned to its



*Thoughts on the Eve of Our Diamond Jubilee*



PROFESSOR MARCUS BAKER  
*Founder-Member*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

origins; it moved into the police court room over the city jail. The affinity of the Society to the law enforcement agencies is a little startling!

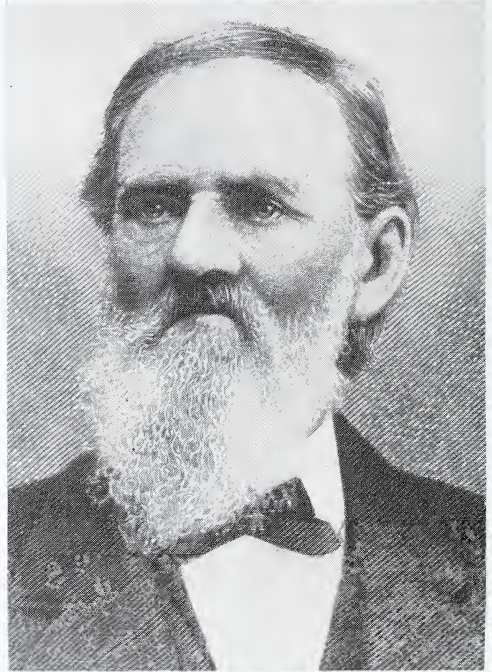
Early in 1891, the Society moved back to the old City Hall, for the Board of Education had found more sumptuous quarters, and it now enjoyed one of its longest sedentary periods, almost five years, until 1896. But then came the final rude eviction from the public buildings of the city, and for many years the Society lived a nomadic life, holding its meetings in the homes of members, alternately in Los Angeles and Pasadena. For more than a quarter of a century the ANNUAL and later QUARTERLY publications of the Society do not even carry the address of a headquarters, presumably because they changed too frequently. It was not until the comparatively recent period when a portion of the old Earl residence on Wilshire Boulevard was leased to the Society by the County that it again had a place to hang its collective hat. And now that, too, is gone, and the Society is again as homeless as it was in 1896 when it was evict-

*Notes of Interest About*

**Colonel J. J. Warner**

Colonel Jonathan Trumbull (Juan José) Warner, the first man to be elected as president of the Society upon its organization in 1883, was chosen the following year to continue laying the foundations for this Society which has become the oldest historical group on the Pacific Coast.

Colonel Warner, in helping to design this literary structure, pressed for the development of material of a quality that would warrant the publication for an ANNUAL magazine. The first ANNUAL was issued in 1884 and that publication never missed a year's dateline. In 1935 the Society had developed to a point where it could begin publishing the QUARTERLY. Colonel Warner was a contributor in *Volume I, Part 1* of the ANNUAL and again in *Volume VII, Parts 1 and 2*, issued in 1907-1908.



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

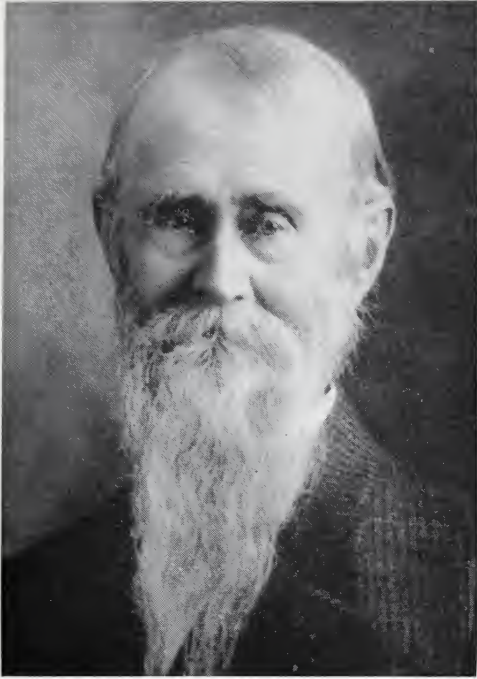
**COLONEL J. J. WARNER**

*Founder-Member — First President  
Historical Society of Southern California*

ed from the City Hall. But there is one big difference: at that time it was a small, struggling organization, trying to establish a place for itself in the cultural life of the community; today it is a big, dynamic society with a growing, enthusiastic membership with enough influence and resources to acquire a permanent home of our own — if we really want it.

As I leaf through the volumes of our old ANNUALS, I am struck by one persistent, recurring note, the interminable, fruitless effort to secure a building from public funds. Pages and pages are devoted to descriptions of the sumptuous quarters provided for the historical societies of New York, Wisconsin, Minnesota and others by their states. Pages of invective are poured on the governing bodies of California for finding uncounted sums for other projects but never a penny for history. Valiant efforts were made and sometimes success seemed very near. As early as 1892, the Society succeeded in getting the City Council to call a special election to vote on a \$50,000 bond issue for the construction of a Library and Historical Build-

*Thoughts on the Eve of Our Diamond Jubilee*



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

**HENRY DWIGHT BARROWS**

*Founder-Member, 1888 President  
Historical Society of Southern California*

*Notes of Interest About*

**Henry Dwight Barrows**

President Henry Dwight Barrows, who served in the Society's top office in 1888 and as vice-president in 1883-1884, 1886-1887, 1893-1894, and in 1899 also served as treasurer in 1890 and again 1895. But aside from these executive positions in the early years of the Society he also became one of the most prolific contributors to the Society's ANNUAL publications.

A close check of the early ANNUALS discloses that President Barrows made a total of fifty literary contributions to the ANNUAL over a period of some twenty years.

ing in Central Park. But the proposition was defeated at the polls. In 1905 a bill was introduced in the State Legislature for the appropriation of \$125,000 to erect a building jointly for the Appellate Court and the Historical Society. The bill passed both houses with comfortable majorities only to be vetoed by the Governor in favor of a \$400,000 appropriation for construction in the State Capitol.

Again in 1948, this time not through our own efforts but through the farsighted policy of the Historical Section of the Division of Parks and Beaches, we almost attained a building. The bill authorizing the California Centennials of 1948-49-50, contained a provision for the erection of two large, permanent historical buildings, one in northern, the other in southern California. These were to house the two historical societies, along with appropriate museums and libraries. But while the Legislature did not hesitate to appropriate several million dollars for ephemeral celebrations during the centennial years — pageants, exhibits, fiestas, spectacles in the Hollywood Bowl and the Coliseum — they could not find it in



their hearts to appropriate an equal sum for a truly fitting memorial in the form of two historical buildings.

Today, once more, we are engaged in negotiations that may put an end to our wanderings. And this time we may be approaching the matter in a more realistic manner. We no longer expect the State, the County, or the City to show the generous attitude toward history that has been shown in so many eastern states. But we also know that these governmental agencies are now very willing to help us if we show at least some inclination to help ourselves. The Plaza Park project which has now been under way for some years with the joint sponsorship of City, County and State, is now making rapid progress. Rehabilitation of some of the old buildings has commenced, and along with it the demolition of some that have no historical value. A number of very desirable locations are becoming available and the responsible agencies have shown a genuine willingness to assign one of these sites to us. If we succeed, then success will have been well worth waiting for. There could be no more appropriate spot for the *Historical Society of Southern California* than the vicinity of the Old Plaza where the pueblo was born and where a hundred years of its history was made. Nor will there be a more beautiful spot in the city when the Plaza and Civic Center projects are complete; when the old Pico House is restored and in operation, when the Merced Theater is again playing and when the vista to the Fort Moore Memorial from Main Street becomes a beautiful open parkway. A building for our Society in these surroundings would become an attraction for the visitors to our city, a show-place where our historical treasures could be put on display in the very neighborhood in which they originated. It would be the best guarantee for the continued, healthy and dynamic existence of our Society, not only for a second seventy-five years but for as long as the national banner and the Bear Flag wave over the Civic Center. May the beginning of our second seventy-five years bring us the realization of all the hopes and dreams and wishes of the years that have passed!

# Noah Levering: *A Biographical Sketch*

By Lorrin L. Morrison



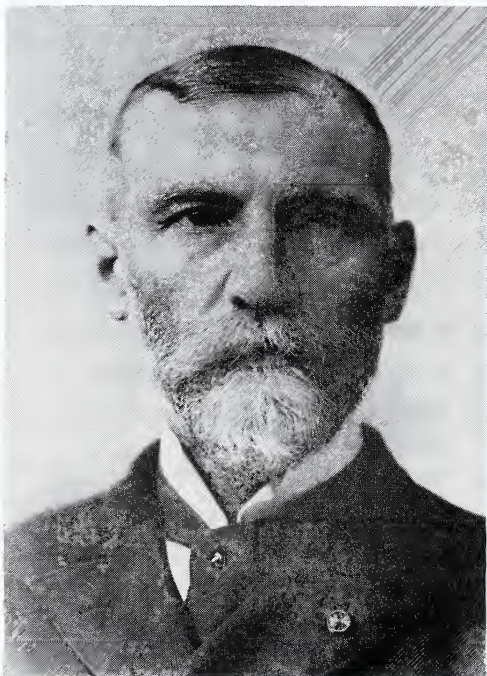
WHEN NOAH LEVERING, founder of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, called the organization meeting to order on November 1, 1883, he stood in a rather paradoxical position. At that time he was in his fifty-seventh year and had been a resident of California for only eight years. But, according to Society records, it took the efforts of this California "new-comer," with a desire to learn more about the bountiful history of his adopted state, to inspire the pioneer Americans, the original crop of native sons and daughters, and the *Californios* who traced their blood lines back through provinces of Mexico to Spain, to come together into an organization that would record and preserve their history.

Being "an outsider" he was, nevertheless, intensely interested in the history of the area and succeeded in interesting some "old-timers" to join him in founding the Society. Mr. Levering's life story, prior to his coming to Los Angeles in 1875, forms the background for his keen interest in historical and civic matters.

He was born in Knox County, Ohio, on April 13, 1827, where he was raised and educated in public and private schools. As a young man in 1849 he moved to Kentucky where he taught school until 1853. In that year he made two moves: first to Urbana, thence to Bloomington, Illinois.

In Bloomington he temporarily gave up school teaching to become an apprentice in the law office of Leonard Swett, who was destined at a later date to become a law associate of Abraham Lincoln. Under Swett's sponsorship and training, Levering was admitted to practice before the Supreme Court of Illinois in 1854. The following year he married Miss Margaret Fry Martin of Jacksonville, Illinois.

A change of scenery came for the newly-weds in 1856 when they moved to Sioux City, Iowa, where they resided until 1865. While living in Sioux City, Noah Levering rose to many positions of importance in civic and community life. He was elected County



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

**MAJOR E. W. JONES**

*Founder-Member, 1889 and 1893 President  
Historical Society of Southern California*

*Notes of Interest About*

**Major E. W. Jones**

Major E. W. Jones served two terms as Society President: the first term was for the year 1889, and the second for the year 1893. He served four terms as vice-president: 1883, 1886-1888, 1890 and 1897. In addition to his service for the Society in its early formation years, he bears the distinction of having been the first president of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce which was founded in 1888.

Major Jones made four contributions to the ANNUAL publications of 1887, 1888-1889, 1890 and 1893. His article, "Some Wonders of Idaho," gave interesting geological data on that state which abounds in mineral wealth.

Judge in 1862; served as City Clerk of Sioux City; named Commissioner of Iowa Troops by Governor Kirkwood in 1863 and Enrolling Officer for the national draft for men to serve in the Civil War. He so distinguished himself in public service that, in 1864, he was made an honorary member of the Iowa State Historical Society.

However, in 1865, with the end of the Civil War and the start of a new migration to the West, Levering decided to move again. After resigning all his public positions he moved to Independence, Missouri, where he entered the mercantile business. After four years of business life, politics came to the fore and Levering accepted the appointment as postmaster at Macklin, Missouri.

By 1875, when Levering made his last change of residence, this time to Los Angeles, he had made a "career of careers." He had been a school teacher, lawyer, city clerk, county judge, officer in the military, chief of a draft board. He had also been a merchant and a postmaster.

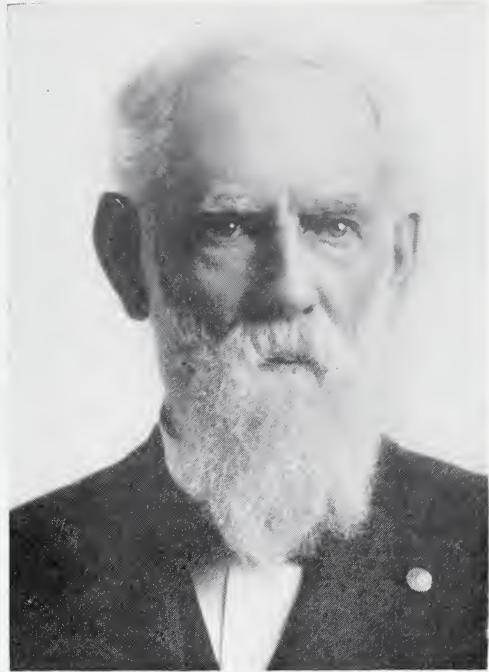


## Noah Levering: A Biographical Sketch

### *Notes of Interest About* **James Miller Guinn**

James Miller Guinn, a founder-member of the Society, was Society president in 1890, treasurer from 1883 through 1889 and in 1891, and secretary and curator from 1893 through 1918. During his thirty-five years of active service as an officer, Mr. Guinn contributed a total of eighty-three articles for publication in the ANNUAL.

Mr. Guinn was a versatile historian whose writing shows a great range of interest, an ability for research and accuracy, and a desire to leave a written record of importance on every subject he covered. Today, this author's works are considered to be primary sources for historical facts and data on the West.



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

**JAMES MILLER GUINN**  
*Founder-Member, 1890 President*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

In Los Angeles he developed an interest in agriculture and bee-raising. In 1876 the Los Angeles Agriculture Society named him editor of a regular news department that ran in the Los Angeles *Herald*. Concurrently, he edited "The Apiary Department," a regular feature in the prominent farm publication, "*The California Cultivator*." This interest in agriculture and bees led him to devise a method whereby bees could be commercially transported across the Pacific Ocean. In 1880 he became the first man to successfully ship bees from California to New Zealand, where they were much in demand.

The year 1883 marked two important milestones in the life of Noah Levering. His genealogy, loaned to us by a distant cousin, Assemblyman Harold Levering, states that he was named to a Los Angeles School Board where he served for twelve years; and second, he founded the *Historical Society of Southern California*, an organization that has faithfully carried out its founder's wishes through three-quarters of a century.

*Notes of Interest About*

**George Butler Griffin**

George Butler Griffin, Society president in 1891, vice-president in 1890, and curator and secretary in 1892, has the distinction of doing the most detailed literary task yet performed for a Society publication.

The ANNUAL for 1891 contains "*The Documents of the Sutro Collection*." These nineteen documents, copied in Spanish under the direction of Adolf Sutro from the original documents in the *India Archives* in Seville, Spain, are basic historical reference documents pertaining to the discovery and exploration of the West Coast of Mexico and California.

Mr. Griffin translated the documents into English and published them in Spanish and English in the ANNUAL for 1891. The book of 214 pages, has been selling steadily since it was published. A few copies remain and a complete reprint is now in the mechanical processes.



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

**GEORGE BUTLER GRIFFIN**

*1891 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

The paradox of Mr. Levering's life was that while he founded a historical society that would, by its very nature, be dedicated to preserving the history of Southern California and its pioneer citizens, he was to them, a "new-comer" and an "outsider" telling them what they should do to record and place their deeds and their names properly in history. This he did well, for the Society still survives and bears the distinction of being the oldest historical society in the State; is also bears the distinction of having established a publishing program for historical publications in 1883 that has produced regularly its ANNUALS and QUARTERLIES through these last seventy-five years.

But Mr. Levering, being a man who seems to have made a life-long career of having many careers, never served the Society he founded as an officer and only in its first year as a director. The yearly ANNUALS reveal very little about his service to the Society after that November 1, 1883, organization meeting. But at that meeting he said, "We should have a historical society."

We have that Society. Today, it is seventy-five years old.

## *Society Officers: Presidents 1883-1958*



-- Courtesy Los Angeles Times

### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **Dr. J. D. Moody**

Dr. J. D. Moody, Society president in 1897-1898, served two terms as vice-president after he stepped down from the president's chair. He was vice-president in 1900 and again in 1902.

Dr. Moody made seven contributions to the ANNUALS in the period from 1897 until 1904. His writing shows a wide historical interest on such diversified subjects as *African Folklore*, *American Aboriginal Alphabets*, the *American Revolution*, *A Witty California Woman* and *Honors to Sequoiah*.

**J. D. MOODY**

*1897-1898 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

## **Society Officers: 1883-1958**

### ***Presidents***

Col. J. J. Warner .....	1883-1884
Gen. John Mansfield .....	1885
Isaac Kinley .....	1886
Ira More .....	1887
Henry Dwight Barrows .....	1888
E. W. Jones .....	1889
James Miller Guinn .....	1890
George Butler Griffin .....	1891
Ira More .....	1892
E. W. Jones .....	1893
C. P. Dorland .....	1894
Edwin Baxter .....	1895
Frank J. Polley .....	1896
J. D. Moody .....	1897-1898
Albert E. Yerex .....	1899





— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

**WALTER R. BACON**

*1900-1907 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

*Notes of Interest About*

**Walter R. Bacon**

Walter R. Bacon, Society president from 1900 through 1907, was a concise, careful researcher. His first contribution to the ANNUAL, "Value of a Historical Society," published in 1899, could well be read by our members today who are interested in seeing the Society live for another three-quarters of a century.

President Bacon contributed a total of only four articles to the ANNUALS but each is worth re-reading. They were, in addition to the one mentioned above; "Fifty Years of California Politics" (1900); "The Dilatory Settlement of California" (1901); and "Pioneer Courts and Lawyers of Los Angeles" (1905).

Walter R. Bacon .....	1900-1907
William L. Judson .....	1908-1910
George Finley Bovard .....	1910-1915
Rockwell D. Hunt .....	1916-1926
Arthur Ellis .....	1927-1928
John C. Parish .....	1929-1930
J. Gregg Layne .....	1931-1932
Henry R. Wagner .....	1933-1934
Dr. Robert G. Cleland .....	1935
Marshall Stimson .....	1936-1937
Dr. Joseph B. Lockey .....	1938
Charles Gibbs Adams .....	1939
Marco R. Newmark .....	1940-1942
J. Gregg Layne .....	1942-1945
Roger J. Sterrett .....	1946-1947
Edward A. Dickson .....	1948-1950
John C. Austin .....	1951-1954
John E. Fishburn .....	1955
Dr. Gustave O. Arlt .....	1956—

## *Society Officers: Vice-Presidents 1883-1958*



— Courtesy Los Angeles Times

**GEORGE FINLEY BOVARD**

*1910-1915 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **George Finley Bovard**

George Finley Bovard was president of the Society for six years from 1910 through 1915. Although he made no original contributions to the Society for use in the ANNUAL, Mr. Bovard devoted his time and effort to helping the Society and other organizations found the Los Angeles County Museum.

The records show that the Historical Society was the parent organization that promoted and brought the Los Angeles County Museum into being. It was President Bovard who, as head of a special committee, put most of the Society's historic papers and possessions into the Museum for safe keeping until they could be reclaimed and deposited into a permanent home.

## ***Vice-Presidents***

Henry Dwight Barrows .....	1883-1884; 1886-1888; 1893-1894; 1899
E. W. Jones .....	1883; 1886-1888; 1890; 1897
A. F. Coronel .....	1884; 1885
J. G. Downey .....	1884
John Mansfield .....	1884; 1891
Ira More .....	1885-1886
J. J. Warner .....	1885
Isaac Kinley .....	1885
Rev. J. Adam .....	1886; 1895; 1899
C. N. Wilson .....	1889
Edwin Baxter .....	1889; 1893
George Butler Griffin .....	1890
John P. P. Peck .....	1891
C. P. Dorland .....	1892
Tessa L. Kelso .....	1892
Mrs. M. Burton Williamson .....	1894-1898; 1900-1915
A. C. Vroman .....	1896; 1901; 1903



— From the Society's Collection

**ROCKWELL D. HUNT**

*1916-1926 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

*Notes of Interest About*

**Rockwell D. Hunt**

Eleven-year President Rockwell D. Hunt (1916 through 1926), in addition to having the distinction of serving longer in that post than any other person, also has the distinction of being a member of the Society continuously for the last fifty years. He joined the Society in 1908 when the organization was only twenty-five years old. This year the Society is celebrating its Diamond Anniversary and Dr. Hunt has recently passed his ninetieth birthday.

But age to him is merely a challenge to get more things done. His first article appeared in the 1911 ANNUAL and, twenty-two articles later, he has a book-length history appearing through the four numbers of this, the 1958, volume. The Society will publish Dr. Hunt's "Fifteen Decisive Events of California History" in bound-book format in April, 1959.

Albert E. Yerex .....	1898
J. D. Moody .....	1900; 1902
Dr. J. E. Cowles .....	1904
Hon. Henry E. Carter .....	1905-1907
Millard F. Hudson.....	1908
Rockwell D. Hunt .....	1910; 1913-1915
Burt O. Kinney .....	1911-1912
Robert G. Cleland .....	1916-1917; 1919-1923
Roy Malcom .....	1916
Waldemar C. Westergaard .....	1917-1921; 1945-1947
Mrs. Lucy M. Gains .....	1918
Victor E. Marriott .....	1922-1923
Arthur M. Ellis .....	1924-1926
John C. Parish .....	1924-1928
Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes .....	1927-1928
Lillian A. Williamson .....	1929-1931; 1937-1939
George W. Beattie .....	1929
J. Gregg Layne .....	1930; 1941
Charles Yale .....	1931
Lillian A. Williamson .....	1932
Phil Townsend Hanna .....	1932



## Society Officers: Vice-Presidents and Secretaries 1883-1958



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

**ARTHUR ELLIS**  
1927-1928 President

*Historical Society of Southern California*

### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **Arthur Ellis**

Arthur Ellis served the Society for two years as President during 1927 and 1928. During his time in office the Society's forty-fifth anniversary was celebrated.

Mr. Ellis made no contributions as an author to the Society's publications. However, he assisted Charles Prudhomme in the research and preparation of "*Gold Discovery in California — Who Was the First Real Discoverer of Gold in This State.*" which was published in the ANNUAL for 1922. Mr. Ellis was a Los Angeles printer.

Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes .....	1933
Charles G. Adams .....	1933-1935
Sarah Bixby Smith .....	1934-1935
Carl I. Wheat .....	1936
Florence Dodson Schoneman .....	1936
Dr. Joseph P. Lockey .....	1937
Marco R. Newmark .....	1938-1939
Roger J. Sterrett .....	1940; 1942-1945
Laura Cooley .....	1940
Lindley Bynum .....	1941-1944
Edward A. Dickson .....	1946-1947
John C. Austin .....	1948-1950
Homer D. Crotty .....	1948-1952
Marshall Stimson .....	1951
Frederick F. Houser .....	1952-1954
Gustave O. Arlt .....	1953-1955
Edmond F. Ducommun .....	1955; 1956
Justin G. Turner .....	1957-1958
Frank B. Putnam .....	1958

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA



— Courtesy Mrs. J. Gregg Layne

## Notes of Interest About

### J. Gregg Layne

J. Gregg Layne served the Society as president for a total of five years: first in 1931-1932, then again from 1942 to 1945. He served as vice-president in 1930 and again in 1941, and as curator in 1929. However, his most notable service to the Society was his editorship of the *QUARTERLY* for a period of nearly seventeen years. Mr. Layne succeeded Carl I. Wheat, the *QUARTERLY*'s first editor in 1936 and continued in the editor's chair until his untimely death in 1952. During those years the *Editor's Page*, the *Book Reviews* and *Gifts to the Society* became regular departments of the magazine.

His careful analysis, his caustic comments and his praise for work well done served to establish his *Book Reviews* and the *QUARTERLY* as an authoritative literary publication.

Mr. Layne made one hundred fifteen contributions to the *QUARTERLY*.

### J. GREGG LAYNE

1931-1932; 1942-1945 President

*Historical Society of Southern California*

## Secretaries

Marcus Baker .....	1883
C. N. Wilson .....	1884-1885
J. C. Oliver .....	1886
Edwin Baxter .....	1887-1888
B. A. Stephens .....	1889-1890
C. L. Goodwin .....	1890
B. L. Stephens .....	1891
George Butler Griffin .....	1892
James Miller Guinn .....	1893-1918
Mabel Guinn .....	1918-1923
Rolland A. Vandegrift .....	1924-1926
Charles Yale .....	1927-1929
Laurance L. Hill .....	1930-1932
Marion Parks .....	1933-1934
Ana Begue de Packman .....	1934-1956
Guy E. Marion .....	1956—

## *Society Officers: Treasurers and Curators 1883-1958*



— From the Society's Collection

### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **Henry Raup Wagner**

Henry Raup Wagner served as Society president in 1933 and 1934. His literary contributions to the ANNUAL and QUARTERLY began in 1933 and continued into 1947.

In all, Mr. Wagner made six contributions to the literature of the Society. His studies were profound examples of detailed research blended into easily told, concise documents.

#### **HENRY RAUP WAGNER**

*1933-1934 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

## ***Treasurers***

James Miller Guinn .....	1883-1889; 1891
Henry Dwight Barrows .....	1890; 1895
C. P. Dorland .....	1892-1893
Edwin Baxter .....	1894; 1896-1910
M. C. Bettinger .....	1911-1927
Laurance L. Hill .....	1928-1932
Frank Rolfe .....	1933
Joseph Netz .....	1934-1935
Max E. Hayward .....	1936-1938
W. W. Robinson .....	1939-1945
Robert J. Woods .....	1946-1947
Roger J. Sterrett .....	1948-1950
Edward A. Dickson .....	1951-1955
Frank B. Putnam .....	1956-1958



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA



— From the Society's Collection

*Notes of Interest About*

**Robert Glass Cleland**

Dr. Robert Glass Cleland, one of the most eminent historians that Southern California has produced, served as Society president in 1935 and as vice-president in 1916-1917 and from 1919 through 1923. In 1933, at the Society's fiftieth anniversary banquet, he was the featured speaker.

Dr. Cleland was a periodic contributor to the *ANNUALS* and *QUARTERLIES*, his first article appeared in the *ANNUAL* for 1914 and his last article in a Society publication ran in the March, 1953, issue of the *QUARTERLY*. In all, he contributed seven articles for Society publication.

**ROBERT GLASS CLELAND**

*1935 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

***Curators***

Ira More .....	1885-1891
George Butler Griffin .....	1892
James Miller Guinn .....	1893-1918
Mrs. A. S. C. Forbes .....	1924-1926
Lillian Williamson .....	1927-1928
J. Gregg Layne .....	1929
Dr. Owen C. Coy .....	1930-1936
Dr. Frederick W. Hodge .....	1937-1940
Dr. Waldemar Westergaard .....	1941-1947
Roger J. Sterrett .....	1948-1950
Marco R. Newmark .....	1952-1956
Guy E. Marion .....	1957-1958

# A Brief Society History

*Founded November 1, 1883*

*Incorporated February 13, 1891*

**By Ana Begue de Packman**

EDITOR'S NOTE—Mrs. de Packman was the secretary of the Society from January 1, 1935, until elected secretary emeritus for life in 1956. Her great-grandfather, Máximo Alanís y Casillas, a native of Chametla, Sinaloa, was one of the soldiers with Fernando Rivera y Moncada who accompanied the *pobladores*, or settlers, who arrived in San Gabriel August 18, 1781, and who founded Los Angeles on September 4, 1781. Alanís was the original grantee of *Rancho San José de Buenos Ayres*, 4,438 acres, site of the University of California at Los Angeles. Mrs. de Packman's great-great grandfather, Juan Francisco Reyes joined the Portolá party and was mayor of Los Angeles, 1793-1795. Mrs. de Packman is the author of "*Leather Dollars*" and "*Early California Hospitality*," besides many other articles.



THE RECORD READS that Noah Levering upon his arrival in the City of Los Angeles in the month of May, 1875, felt the lack of the recorded background of this Southern California City. Therefore, knowing that he had chosen this place as his future home and realizing that here was to be born his family of native sons and daughters, he launched a self-appointed task. Here, in his own words, is repeated the story of the founding of the *Historical Society of Southern California*:

Soon after my arrival in Los Angeles in May, 1875, I learned there was no historical society in the State. After I had spent several months in and about Los Angeles, and made the acquaintance of many of the leading citizens from whom I learned much of the early history of California. I was thoroughly convinced that this was a grand field for historical work and that steps should be taken at once to gather up and preserve the unwritten history which would be prolific with interest to those who should come after us. I suggested to several persons the propriety of the formation of an historical society, and was as often met with the reply that the effort would be fruitless, as people would not take the sufficient interest to accomplish the object. I could not make up my mind to abandon the enterprise. During the week of the County Fair in October, 1883, I resolved to make a determined effort, by canvassing the city for volunteers to organize a society. I was soon convinced that it was much easier to secure volunteers to quell a rebellion than to preserve the history of the same. I called upon one of the wealthy citizens of the city and, after stating my business, I was asked, 'Is there any money in it?' I said no. The reply was, 'Well, I want nothing to do with things that there is no money in.'



— From the Society's Collection

*Notes of Interest About*  
**Marshall Stimson**

Marshall Stimson, who was Society president in 1936-1937, served also as vice-president in 1951. In addition to this executive service, Mr. Stimson served on the Board of Directors for many years and gave freely of his professional services as a counsellor-at-law for the Society.

He was a contributor to the *QUARTERLY* with six of his articles appearing between June, 1936, and June, 1951. His most notable service, however, was captaining a team of his colleagues in the Society's U. S. Supreme Court case to obtain clear and permanent title to long-dormant funds that had been transferred to the Society by the Pioneer Society.

Through those legal efforts of Mr. Stimson and his equally enthusiastic colleagues, the Society will someday soon have its own permanent home.

**MARSHALL STIMSON**

*1936-1937 President*

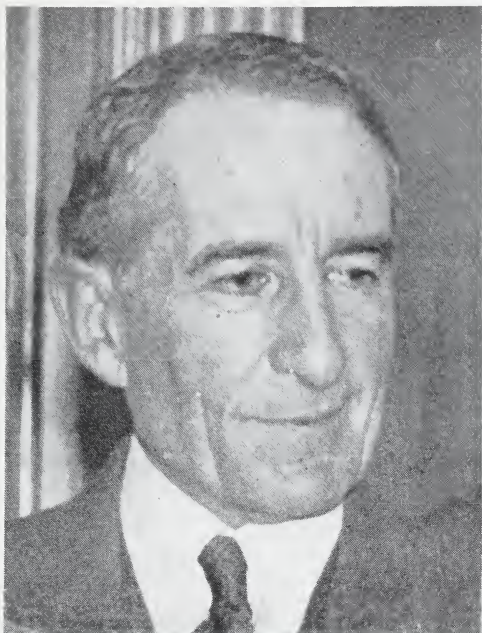
*Historical Society of Southern California*

I was disappointed but not discouraged. Believing that there were men of larger souls and more liberal minds, I continued my efforts. The first man that I found who took an interest in the project was Professor Marcus Baker of the National Magnetic Observatory, which at that time was located in this city, near the Normal School.

Professor Baker was the first to enroll his name in a little book that I had provided to obtain signatures in. With many kind words of encouragement and wishes for my success, he sent me on my way rejoicing. After considerable time spent in canvassing, I secured the following additional names: R. H. Hewitt, 37 Banning St., Los Angeles; Horace Bell, Los Angeles; G. W. Ingalls, Vacaville, Cal.; Thomas Gary, 917 Downey Ave., Los Angeles; H. Fuller, Alosta, Cal.; J. B. Niles, Los Angeles; Joseph D. Lynch, Los Angeles; Horatio Rust, South Pasadena; F. M. Palmer, Los Angeles; Ira More, Los Angeles; John Mansfield, Los Angeles; twelve names in all. Having secured enough signers to organize, I consulted Mr. Rust in regard to the time and place for the first meeting. The Normal School building was selected as the place, the exact date and the time set for the meeting I have forgotten. I saw Professor Ira More and obtained his office, in the Normal School building, for the



## *A Brief Society History*



— Courtesy Los Angeles Times

### **CHARLES GIBBS ADAMS**

*1939 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

#### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **Charles Gibbs Adams**

President Charles Gibbs Adams, who served during 1939, also served as a vice-president in 1934-1935. He distinguished himself as a Society member by serving on the Landmarks Committee.

In 1932 he contributed an article, "Gardens of the Spanish Days in California," for the *ANNUAL*. In 1938 and 1940 he reported on the *ANNUAL TREKS* for those two years in the *QUARTERLY*. Mr. Adams was an outstanding landscape architect.

meeting. The professor said he would have it lighted and in readiness for us.

On the evening appointed, I repaired to the professor's office at about 7 o'clock only to find it as dark as lost hope. My spirits, which had indicated a point far above zero, now suddenly dropped as far below, and I seated myself upon the steps in front of the building and began to whistle, like a boy passing through a graveyard on a dark night, to keep up his spirits. I realized that I was a lost mourner at the grave of my hopes. While thus contemplating the gloomy prospect I heard a racket in the basement of the building, which revived my hope, and I was soon tending in the direction where I found the janitor, who informed me that he knew nothing of the meeting but would light up, which he did at once. Soon after, Colonel Warner came in, a few minutes later H. Rust arrived, which were all that I now remember. Before adjourning we concluded to hold an adjourned meeting a few evenings later in the Council Chamber in the Temple Block, provided the room could be obtained. We resolved ourselves into a committee of the whole to make the necessary arrangements. The room was secured, I had a notice of the meeting inserted in each of the city papers and also personally notified a number of persons. General Mansfield also interested himself in getting an attendance. On the evening of November 1,



— From the Historical Collection of the  
Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

**MARCO R. NEWMARK**

*1940-1942 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

1883, in the city court room, old Temple Block, the following named gentlemen met for the purpose of organizing a historical society: Colonel J. J. Warner, H. D. Barrows, Noah Levering, General John Mansfield, Professor J. M. Guinn, Major C. N. Wilson, Ex-Governor J. G. Downey, Professor Ira More, J. B. Niles, A. Kohler, Don Antonio F. Coronel, George Hansen, A. J. Bradfield, Major E. W. Jones and Professor Marcus Baker. Colonel J. J. Warner was elected president; Major C. N. Wilson, secretary.

A committee was appointed to draft a constitution and by-laws, and that evening dates the beginning of the Society which has continued without interruption for seventy-five years and is believed to be the oldest historical society west of St. Louis.

An ANNUAL was published regularly from 1884 through 1934, when it was changed to a QUARTERLY, which is issued in March, June, September and December. Carl I. Wheat designed the plan and format for the establishment of the QUARTERLY and became its first editor.

The 1931 ANNUAL, 264 pages, commemorated the 150th anniversary of the founding of Los Angeles. The numerous original documents pertaining to the founding were printed in both the

*Notes of Interest About*

**Marco R. Newmark**

Marco R. Newmark, son of a pioneer Los Angeles merchant, Harris Newmark, is one of the most authoritative historians on Los Angeles pioneers of the American period. His deep interest in the history of Los Angeles has manifested itself by his long and continuous service to the Society.

Mr. Newmark, in addition to serving as Society president in 1940-1942, has been vice-president in 1938-1939, and curator from 1952 through 1956. He has served at various times on nearly every standing committee. In addition to this service, Mr. Newmark has made a total of thirty-one contributions to the QUARTERLY. His *Historical Profiles* are excellent thumbnail biographies of many outstanding citizens of Los Angeles.

## *A Brief Society History*



— From the Society's Collection

### ROGER J. STERRETT

*1946-1947 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **Roger J. Sterrett**

Roger J. Sterrett was Society president in 1946 and 1947; treasurer from 1948 through 1950; and he served two terms as vice-president: the first in 1940 and the second from 1942 through 1945. During the time he was treasurer he also served as curator.

Mr. Sterrett made a lasting contribution to the Society in 1935 when he designed the QUARTERLY's book plate that runs on the first editorial page of each issue. The book plate has been adopted by the Society as the identifying emblem to run on the series title page of each cloth-bound book the Society will publish in the future. Mr. Sterrett contributed one article for the QUARTERLY which ran in the December, 1940, number.

original Spanish and in English translations: the ANNUAL included a genealogical record of the *pobladores* and accompanying soldiers.

In 1935, Carl I. Wheat directed the translation into English from Spanish of all the original archives of Los Angeles County which then included the present Ventura and Orange Counties. The original documents were sent to the Huntington Library and Art Gallery where they are permanently stored. The Huntington Library furnished photostats of the Spanish documents for the Los Angeles County Recorder.

In 1935, the Society published "*The California Overland Express, the Longest Stage Ride in the World*" by William Tallack, with an *Introduction* by Carl I. Wheat. This book had previously been printed in the QUARTERLIES for June and September of that year. The QUARTERLY for December, 1935, included Lieutenant E. O. C. Ord's 1840 map of the "Ciudad of Los Angeles" and it was reproduced on heavy paper suitable for framing. Powell's sketch of Los Angeles, made in 1850, was published in 1936 from a print





— Courtesy Hugh H. Evans, president,  
Western Federal Savings and Loan Association

EDWARD A. DICKSON  
1948-1950 President

*Historical Society of Southern California*

*Notes of Interest About*

**Edward A. Dickson**

Edward A. Dickson, Society president from 1948 through 1950, vice-president in 1946-1947, and treasurer from 1951 through 1955, was a man of many beneficial talents and actions.

In addition to Mr. Dickson's fine contributions to the *QUARTERLIES* from 1948 to 1953, he was editor of the *QUARTERLY* after the death of J. Gregg Layne in 1952. He edited the publication until Dr. Gustave O. Arlt was named to the editorship in December, 1953.

The Society was always the beneficiary when Mr. Dickson worked on projects that needed to be done. At one time he furnished the Society a "home" in the Hollingsworth Building until he, with the aid of Secretary Ana Begue de Packman, Marshall Stimson, and other Society members, obtained quarters in the Earl Mansion on Wilshire Boulevard.

made by Edwin Grabhorn. All of these special items are out of print.

The feature article in the *QUARTERLY* for December, 1954, was Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt's "*Changes in California in My Time*" and his photograph appeared on the cover. He was president of the Society from 1916 to 1926.

The *QUARTERLY* for December, 1956, has a reprint from the only known copy of Judge Robert M. Widney's 1872 pamphlet: "*Which [Railroad] Subsidy Shall I Vote For, or Shall I Vote Against Both,*" which resulted in Los Angeles being on the Southern Pacific's main line.

The Society makes an annual pilgrimage in June to some place of historical interest. On several of these pilgrimages, plaques have been installed by the Society, among them being *Mission San Buenaventura*, *Rancho Sombre del Roble* at Canoga Park, *Rancho Trabuco* near *San Juan Capistrano*, *Fort Tejon*, the *Slaughter Adobe* on *Rancho Buena Vista* near Chino, and the *Adobe* on *Rancho Los*

## *A Brief Society History*



— From the Society's Collection

**JOHN C. AUSTIN**

*1951-1954 President*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **John C. Austin**

John C. Austin was Society president from 1951 through 1954. Previously, he served as vice-president from 1948 through 1950. While Mr. Austin has made no authored contributions to the Society publications he has, none-the-less, authored historical documents, in the form of architectural plans and drawings for many of the outstanding buildings, civic, business and industrial, that stand out boldly on the Los Angeles skyline.

He has accomplished, through his working manuscripts, the recording of history in stone and steel that will in many instances, be a record as permanent as if it had been recorded in printed books.

*Cerritos.* The Society initiated the movement which resulted in U. S. C.'s *Widney Hall*, the oldest college building in southern California, being designated a state historical landmark and suitably marked with a bronze plaque.

In 1928 the Society established a tradition when it conducted its first annual historic pilgrimage. That one-day summer-time feature became so popular that it has continued every year as a looked-forward-to event by all Society members. Only during the years of World War II has the organization failed to schedule pilgrimages.

Through the years since the pilgrimage was first established it has taken on a format that has become traditional. Members meet on a pre-arranged Saturday in June at designated place in the central part of the City of Los Angeles. There most board chartered luxury buses, while some join in procession with their own automobiles. The caravan rolls out on the streets and highways to



— Photo courtesy Bank of America  
National Trust and Savings Association

JOHN E. FISHBURN, JR.  
1955 President

*Historical Society of Southern California*

*Notes of Interest About*

**John E. Fishburn, Jr.**

John E. Fishburn, Jr., Society president in 1955, served the Society as a financial advisor in the investment of the Building Fund that was created when the Society won the U. S. Supreme Court decision on the old accounts of the Pioneer Society.

Mr. Fishburn served the Society actively for only one year before his duties as a vice-president of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce placed too much demand on his time. This year he chairmanned a "70th Anniversary Membership Drive" for that organization.

the selected historic spot that has been designated as the point of interest for the day.

During the bus ride Society members take turns at becoming commentators for this annual tour. As each site along the way is passed the commentator gives its historical description. Usually, 100 or more, and sometimes as many as 250, people participate in the Pilgrimage.

Aside from the impromptu recollection of the "pilgrims," each bus has an able speaker aboard to give the authentic historical information about each point of interest passed.

Upon arrival at the destination, a formal program is held with competing speakers delineating the history of the location. The participants all carry their own lunch boxes on many of the treks and either right at the spot or at some nearby public park a grand picnic luncheon is a highlight of every pilgrimage. On some treks the members have been invited guests to luncheons served by present owners of the historic site.



## *A Brief Society History*



### *Notes of Interest About*

#### **Gustave O. Arlt**

Dr. Gustave O. Arlt has served as Society president since 1956. Before his election to the presidency, he served as a vice-president from 1953 through 1955.

In December, 1953, the Board of Directors named him editor of the *QUARTERLY*, succeeding Edward A. Dickson, who directed the editorial policies of the publication following the death of Editor J. Gregg Layne in 1952.

Under Dr. Arlt's direction the *QUARTERLY* has broadened its field of historical coverage and has steadily improved its format and design. Prior to his assignment as editor, Dr. Arlt contributed three articles that were published in the *QUARTERLY*: one in 1949; one in 1952 and one in 1954.

The Eulogy, read by Dr. Arlt at the funeral of Edward A. Dickson, was published in the *QUARTERLY* in March, 1956.

#### **GUSTAVE O. ARLT**

1956-(—) President

*Historical Society of Southern California*

Many historic sites of Southern California bear lasting reminders of the Society's Annual Pilgrimages by the markers and plaques erected or sponsored by the Society.

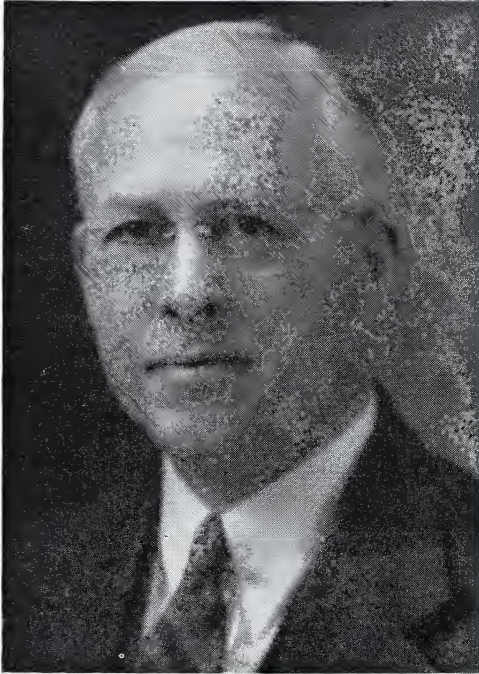
A brief resumé of the many treks will be of interest:

#### *The First Pilgrimage — The 1928 Visit to El Pueblo*

Led by Society Treasurer Lawrence L. Hill, who acted as guide on this June day, members and friends of the Society stepped their way around and through the streets and buildings of Old Los Angeles.

Starting from the Plaza Church, on the west side of the Plaza, on North Main Street, the Pilgrims crossed the street to the Pico House, not the first hotel of the Pueblo, but the most modern of its day when it was built in 1869.

Next door the famous Merced Theatre was visited. On the corner of Arcadia and North Main was visited the Baker Block, the first height limit apartment house in the City. Here Doña Ar-



*Notes of Interest About*

**Guy E. Marion**

Executive Secretary Guy E. Marion began his active service for the Society in August, 1956, after the retirement of Mrs. Ana Begue de Packman. He also serves as curator for the Society.

Prior to becoming active in the Society, Mr. Marion served an outstanding business career as a staff executive of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce. He organized and put into operation the Chamber's Research Department of which he was the executive head for twenty-nine years.

During his service with the Chamber he developed the Population Tract Plan as applied to Los Angeles. This plan has made possible long time decade comparisons of identical areas within the city. It was during his incumbency that the Business Outlook Conference was promoted. This has attracted larger followings each year and has become a feature in the Chamber's program of civic activities.

**GUY E. MARION**

*Executive Secretary*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

cadia Bandini Stearns de Baker held court with the élite of Los Angeles.

A few doors south the group stopped at the old home of the Farmers and Merchants Bank, oldest bank of the City.

Next door, very much remodeled, stood the oldest hotel of the Pueblo, the Bella Union Hotel. The Bella Union grew on an adobe foundation.

Around the corner, north on Los Angeles Street, the Samuel Foy Harness shop was on the roster. Then across the street the pilgrims traveled to the site of the Alexander Mellus row, the pioneer adobe business block of the pueblo.

On the northwest corner of Arcadia and Los Angeles Streets was the site of the adobe home of Don Antonio Coronel. Here were held the first school classes of the Pueblo. Don Antonio was an indispensable civic-minded citizen. He was County Assessor (1850) and one of the Founder-Members of the *Historical Society of Southern California*.  
(Text continued on Page 238)

*A Brief Society History*

There will be a *special* meeting of the  
**Historical Society of Southern California** in Justice  
Austin's-Court Room, in the Old City Hall, on Second  
Street, on *Monday* Evening,  
~~November~~ *November* 25, 1889, at 7:30 o'clock.

*Your attendance is earnestly requested.*

*B. A. Stephens.*

*Secretary.*

— Coronel Collection, Los Angeles County Museum

THE CORONEL COLLECTION OWNED BY THE  
LOS ANGELES COUNTY MUSEUM

Don Antonio Coronel, one of the founder-members of the Historical Society of Southern California, was an avid collector of Californiana. His collection, presented originally to the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce, is now the possession of the Museum. Miss Ruth I. Mahood, the Museum's Chief Curator of History, presented the Society with photo copies of the above post card and, on page 234, a Spanish language letter from George Butler Griffin to Mr. Coronel. James Honey, Museum staff member, has translated the letter for the QUARTERLY. The translation follows:

"Los Angeles, California  
"March 9, 1890

"Dear Sir and Friend:

"I received your note dated the 6th of this month. I have taken note of its contents.

"It seems it is not necessary yet for the "History Committee" to have a meeting. If it becomes necessary, I will notify our colleagues to meet at your house, and I will also notify you in time.

"In the next meeting of the "Historiedad" I will talk about the legal incorporation. Today, our situation is only as any gentleman's reunion. We do not have legal status, and because of this, the many books that the society owns do not belong to anyone. In our group there are some troglodyte persons; nevertheless, I think the majority will see things the way they should be.

"I hope you and your wife are very well.

"I remain,

"Truly Yours

"Geo. Butler Griffin"

On page 235 is an undated, unsigned invitation to a Society Board of Directors reception in the home of Mr. and Mrs. Williamson. On page 236 appears a reproduction of the cover of a four-page Commemorative Program sponsored by the Society, the Daughters of the American Revolution and the California Society, Sons of the Revolution. On page 237 is reproduced page three of the same program. Page two carried only the seal of the Sons of the Revolution and page four was unprinted.



Casa de V<sup>o</sup>.  
Los Angeles, Cal., 9<sup>o</sup> de Mayo 1890

Muy Sr. y Amigo Mío:—

Recibí la esquela de V<sup>o</sup>. fechada  
á 6<sup>o</sup> del corriente, y he notado el contenido de ella.

Parece que, en cuanto al "His-  
tory Committee", todavía no hay necesidad para nuestra  
reunión. Al llegar al caso, citaré á nuestros colegas  
en la casa de V<sup>o</sup>., y de tal cita dará aviso oportuno á  
V<sup>o</sup>.

En la próxima reunión de la "Histor-  
ical" voy á tratar de la incorporación, según la lei.  
Hoy nuestro estado no es mas que el de cualquiera reu-  
nión de caballeros. No tenemos existencia legal; y, por  
consecuencia, los muchos libros de. que tiene la sociedad no  
pertenece á nadie. En nuestro cuerpo existen ciertos  
señores trogloditas; sin embargo, creo que la mayoría  
vea de la manera debida lo que todos deberíamos  
ver.

Espero que V<sup>o</sup>. y la estimable esposa  
de V<sup>o</sup>. (c. p. b.) se hallen sin novedad.

Yo, de V<sup>o</sup>.

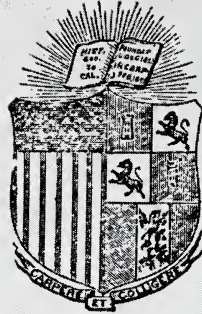
afmo. amigo, P. S.

q. r. m.  
Per. Walter Piffin

You are invited to attend a  
Reception  
Given by the Board of Directors  
of the  
Historical Society of Southern California  
Monday evening, March Twenty Second  
at the  
Residence of Mr and Mrs Williamson  
Jefferson Street second house  
West of Mc Clintock Av—  
Take the University Cars—

— Coronel Collection, Los Angeles County Museum

July 4th, 1847



July 4th, 1897

The **HISTORICAL SOCIETY**  
of **SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA**,

**ESCHSCHOLTZIA CHAPTER**,  
*Daughters of the American Revolution*,

...and the...

**CALIFORNIA SOCIETY**,  
*Sons of the Revolution*,

Invite you to be present at a

**Commemorative . . . . .**  
**Celebration**

of California's  
. . . . . First Fourth of July

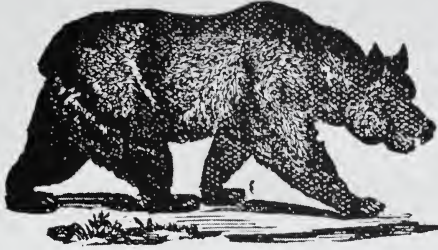
In the Hall of the **FRIDAY MORNING CLUB**  
No. 330½ South Broadway  
**AT 8 O'CLOCK P. M.**

**JULY 3rd, 1897**



*A Brief Society History*

JULY 4,  
1847

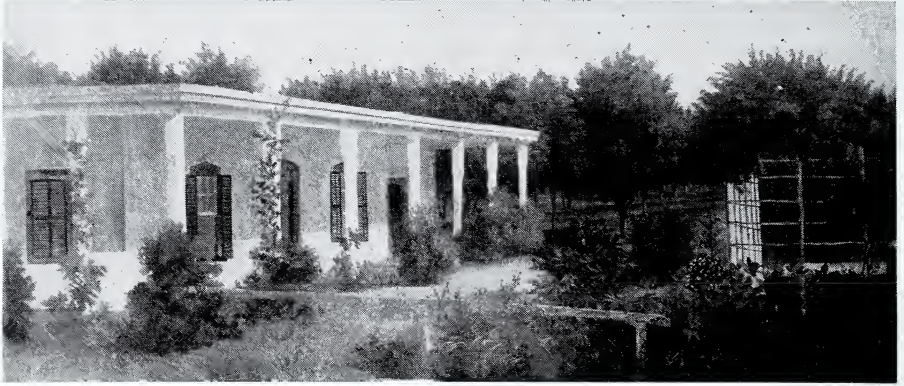


JULY 4,  
1897

PROGRAMME

CALL TO ORDER

1. LADIES' QUARTETTE,        -        March Militaire—*Schubert*.  
MISS EDNA FOY, First Violinist.  
MISS BEATRICE KOHLER, Second Violinist.  
MISS VELLA KNOX, Viola.  
MISS SARAH SIMONDS, Cello.
2. INTRODUCTORY REMARKS,  
DR. J. D. MOODY  
President Historical Society.
3. ADDRESS,        -        -        -        "July 4th, 1847."  
J. M. GUINN, A. M.  
Secretary Historical Society of Southern California.
4. MUSIC,        -        -        -        "Red, White and Blue."  
CAPT. J. A. OSGOOD  
PROF. T. W. WILDE, Accompanist.
5. ADDRESS,        -        -        -        "California Fifty Years Ago."  
COL. S. O. HOUGHTON
6. NINA WALTZ,        -        -        -        -        *Wekerlin*.  
MRS. L. P. COLLETTE
7. SONS OF THE REVOLUTION.  
HOLDRIDGE O. COLLINS  
President of the California Society.
8. DAUGHTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.  
BY THE REGENT OF ESCHSCHOLTZIA CHAPTER
9. LARGO,        -        -        -        -        *Hayden*.  
LADIES' QUARTETTE
10. ORATION,        -        -        -        "Old and New England."  
MAJOR J. A. DONNELL
11. AMERICA.  
BY THE AUDIENCE



— Ana Begue de Packman Collection

#### SOCIETY MEETING PLACE

*Don Antonio Coronel, a founder-member of the Historical Society of Southern California, opened his home on many occasions for monthly meetings and social events of the Society. The home was located on what is now the northwest corner of Seventh and Alameda Streets.*

Next the cavalcade moved into Nigger Alley (which became Old China Town later), then to the southeast corner of the Plaza to visit a two-story brick building, a reminder of the first horse-drawn fire engine and hose cart.

On the opposite corner, at Ferguson Alley, were the remains of Don Ygnacio del Valle's residence. This citizen was alcalde of Mexican days and mayor during the transition from the Mexican to the American periods. He served as County Recorder.

Next on the tour was the Vicente Lugo adobe, the first home of St. Vincent's College.

Flanking the north side of the Plaza was the site of the adobe home of Don Agustin Olvera, at one time County Judge.

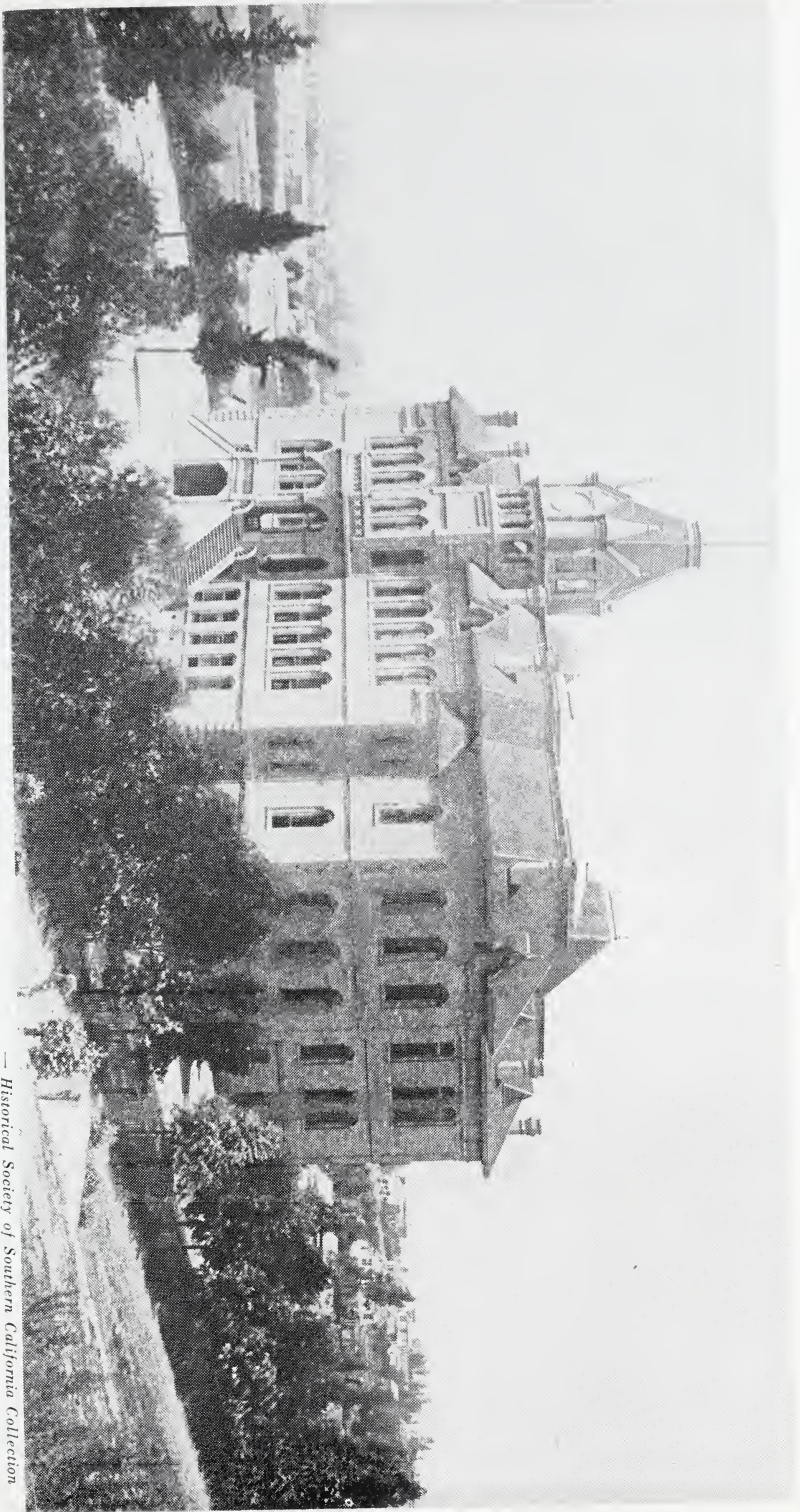
Then the caravan moved into Olvera Street to the historic Ávila adobe museum and across the street to La Golondrina sidewalk cafe where a luncheon was served.

#### *The Second Pilgrimage — A Visit to the Hacienda of Don Pio Pico*

The *Historical Society of Southern California* officially joined with the *Whittier Women's Club* and the *State of California* in dedicating the home of the last Mexican Governor as a museum shrine.

The *State of California* agreed to restore and maintain the adobe home of Don Pio Pico as a State Monument. A bronze plaque with the appropriate inscription was installed.





— Historical Society of Southern California Collection

### STATE NORMAL SCHOOL, ABOUT 1885

*One evening in October, 1883, the founding of the Historical Society of Southern California became a reality when Founder Noah Levering, Colonel T. J. Warner and H. Rust met here to plan for and call an organization meeting for the evening of November 1, 1883. This building was located near Fifth Street and Grand Avenue, where the Los Angeles Public Library now stands.*





— From the Historical Collection of Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

### TEMPLE BLOCK IN 1890's

*This modern three-story structure at the junction of Main and Spring Streets, just north of the present City Hall, served the Historical Society of Southern California as a temporary headquarters where the Board of Directors held meetings.*

After listening to instructive talks on the history of the Southland, a delightful luncheon was enjoyed under the shade of the century-old ash tree.

### *The Third Pilgrimage — Campo de Cahuenga*

The *Historical Society of Southern California* trekked to *Campo de Cahuenga* to assist in the celebration commemorating the signing of the Treaty on January 13, 1847.

Here at the foot of the north slope of the *Providencia* (Santa Monica Mountains), at the north approach to Cahuenga Pass and on the banks of the Los Angeles River, in the adobe house of Don Tomás Feliz on January 13, 1847, Lieutenant Colonel John C. Frémont of the American forces and General Andrés Pico, leader of the Californians, signed the *Articles of Capitulation* (Treaty of Cahuenga) which marked the close of military activities in California between Mexico and the United States. Cease Fire! This is a State Monument.

### *The 1934 Butterfield Stage Route Pilgrimage*

The fourth annual pilgrimage was under the guidance of Society Member Roy M. Fryer and the *Historical Society of Pomona*.

## *A Brief Society History*



— From the Historical Collection of Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

### OLD NADEAU BUILDING

*This building which was originally built for use as a hotel, was later converted to an office building and, on November 22, 1883, after the Society held its organizational meeting in the Old Temple Court House (pictured on the cover), the Society received a formal invitation to hold monthly meetings in Judge Morgan's court room in this building. For eight months this became the official headquarters and meeting place. The Nadeau Building, the first four-story building in Los Angeles, was located at the southwest corner of First and Spring Streets.*

This trek followed the ruts of the Butterfield Stage Route and other historic routes eastward from Los Angeles.

The Butterfield stages commenced operations between San Francisco, California, and St. Louis, Missouri, in 1858. An old schedule of stations states that eastward from Los Angeles the stages proceeded to El Monte, 13 miles, then to San José (Pomona), 12 miles, and from San José to Chino, 12 miles. The precise route which they followed is, however, a matter of historic interest and was made the subject of this study.

There were several pioneers on the trek who were living at the time of the stage operations and thus were descendents of those who had actually traveled on this historic old stage line.

### *The Fifth Pilgrimage — Over the Old Rancho Trail*

The *Historical Society of Southern California* traveled over the Ranchos' old trail from Los Angeles, many times detouring the highway to visit a historic site.





— Coronal Collection, Los Angeles County Museum

### LOS ANGELES COUNTY MUSEUM

*This early photograph of the Los Angeles County Museum shows it before the modern and more extensive west wing was added. The Historical Society of Southern California was the motivating force in the founding of this great County institution. When the Museum was first opened in 1910, the Society had permanent headquarters there and operated the Historical Section. The historical books, documents and possessions of the Society were moved in and that collection, still carried in inventory by the Society, formed the foundation for the great history collection that is now the pride of the Museum.*

The first stop was made at El Molino, the old grist mill of San Gabriel Mission. Then the Pico Mansion at El Ranchito, Whittier, was visited. A short stop was then made at the *California Monument*.

On to Rancho La Puente, William Workman's homestead; next to John Rowland's first brick mansion, the caravan wended its way.

Speeding along the Pilgrims visited Isaac Williams' *Rancho del Chino*, home of the *Junior Republic* and then moved over the battlefield trails to El Sereno Club, still on the Chino Rancho.

Luncheon *al fresco* was enjoyed. This was a good day's trek from the City and return.

### *The Sixth Pilgrimage — To the Phineas Banning Home*

Under the guidance of Director Marshall Stimson, the Society's members and friends rolled over *El Camino Real* to the Banning Mansion at Wilmington and a visit to Drum's Barracks.

Many pioneers in the group compared the hazardous journey by ox-cart, which took several days, to the swift auto ride of the present days.

The pioneer resident and owner of the Military Post (Drum Barracks) gave a very clear picture of the history of Wilmington



## A Brief Society History



— Ana Begue de Packman Collection

### A MEMORABLE VISIT TO CASA FIGUEROA

Mrs. Ana Begue de Packman, long-time secretary of the Historical Society of Southern California, at one time operated her own California Historical Museum in the Figueroa Adobe on South Figueroa Street. She played hostess many times to the Society and other organizations. This photo shows her (left) on one such occasion. Others in the photo, from left to right, are Miss Close, president, Los Angeles Parlor No. 124, N.D. G.W.; Florence Dodson Schoneman and Mrs. Louise Ward Watkins.

during the Civil War. With appropriate remarks, Mr. Stimson sounded the luncheon call and called attention that we must be on time to participate in the boat ride extended through the courtesy of the Los Angeles Harbor Commission. One hundred and fifty members and friends enjoyed a delightful trip through the Greater Los Angeles Harbor.

### *The Seventh Pilgrimage — To Rancho Sombre del Roble*

This was a seventy-mile journey that took the Society members from Los Angeles over *El Camino Real* out to the Amestoy adobe at *El Encino*. There the first stop was made for a brief tour of historic grounds and a treat of ice-cold orange juice that was served by the Amestoy family at the edge of the pool fronting the old adobe.

More brief inspection stops were made at *Rancho de Triunfo*



— From the Historical Collection of Security-First National Bank of Los Angeles

#### SOUTHWEST MUSEUM

*This historic institution has been "home" to the Historical Society of Southern California at various times, both as a general meeting place and as an operating and mail address headquarters.*

and José Reyes adobe was found in good condition; then *Rancho El Escorpión* and *Rancho Las Vírgenes*. Here stood the two-story adobe of "*Spiritu*," a daughter of a chief of the Comihabit Indians, who was the wife of Miguel Leonis (The Basque).

Next on the route was Shadow Ranch, with the first redwood house built in the San Fernando Valley, which was the home of Alfred Workman, pioneer operator of wagon trains in the Valley. The ranch, at the time of the trek, was the property of Mr. and Mrs. Colin Clements, both well-known writers. Mrs. Clements is the daughter of Charles Dwight Willard, pioneer Los Angeles newspaper man.

The final stop on the trek was made at *Rancho Sombre del Roble*, the home of Society Director and Mrs. William W. Orcutt. Tables had been prepared for the two hundred and fifty guests and the genial hosts served a bountiful luncheon of tortillas, chili beans and coffee.

The afternoon was spent in the friendly atmosphere of the hosts' beautiful California patio where numerous impromptu talks on the history of the area were made. Following the talks the hosts entertained their guests with many selections of authentic early California music.



## *A Brief Society History*



— Historical Society of Southern California Collection

### THE EARL MANSION ON WILSHIRE BOULEVARD

*This was home for Historical Society of Southern California from 1945 until 1956 when the historic old residence was destroyed to make a parking lot on the site. From there, the Society moved to the temporary headquarters it now occupies at 1909 South Western Avenue.*

### *The Eighth Pilgrimage — To Rancho Los Alamitos*

Society Director Charles Gibbs Adams organized and directed this caravan to the home of Mr. and Mrs. Fred Bixby and family.

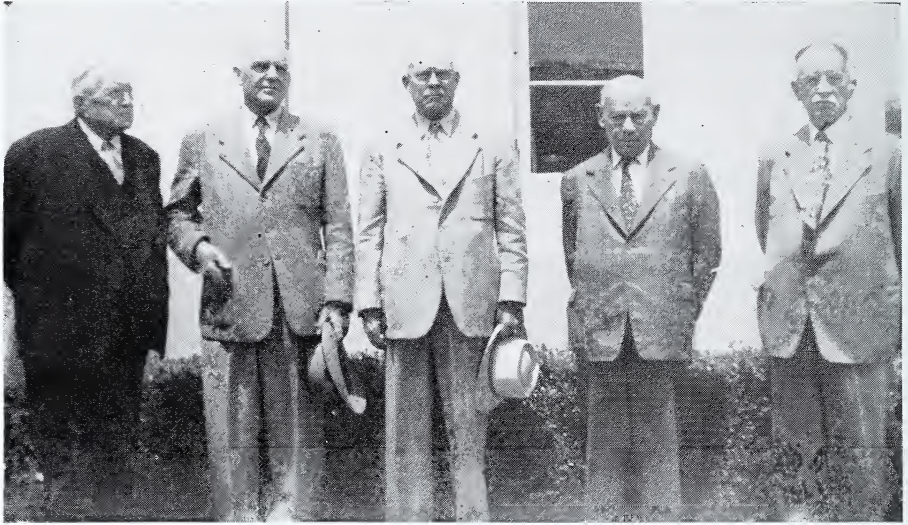
The affable host and hostess led the entire group through their historic adobe home which had been a home of members of the Figueroa family at one time and, at a later date, the home of Don Abel and Arcadia Bandini Stearns. Many antiquities were on display for the visitors.

Mr. Bixby invited the guests to his corral where he displayed his blooded stallions and his prize-winning herd of pedigreed cattle.

The caravan, once again on the move, next passed through the domain of the Yorbas to *Mission San Juan Capistrano* and then to San Luis Rey and on to *Guajome*, the "place of the frogs."

There, at *Guajome*, the Society was hosted by its owner, Cave Coutts, son of Ysidora Bandini and Lieutenant Cave Coutts. Mr. Coutts, Jr., who was born at the hacienda and, at the time of the visit, was in the evening of life, still dwelt at his birthplace. The group enjoyed its picnic luncheon in the patio at Mr. Coutts' home.





— Ana Begue de Packman Collection

### AN OLD SPANISH LAND GRANT TOUR

*The Twenty-fifth annual pilgrimage was highlighted by many stops at historical places. But, before the tour left headquarters on Wilshire Boulevard, this distinguished group of gentlemen paused for a group picture. From left to right, they are Society President John C. Austin, Richard Bard, Past President J. Gregg Layne, editor of the QUARTERLY, Society Curator and Past President Marco R. Newmark and Society Director Frederic C. Ripley.*

Following the picnic an exploratory tour was conducted through and around the grand old casa. Points of interest were its segregated kitchens and its "story-book" chapel where many paused in meditation.

A brief program of historic facts and anecdotes followed and the pilgrims, this year traveling in their own vehicles, chose their own routes homeward.

### *The Tenth Pilgrimage — To the Palomares Adobe*

Director Charles Gibbs Adams, again at the head of a Society pilgrimage, led his enthusiastic followers to the famed *Palomares Adobe* in Pomona. This adobe has been designated a historic landmark.

As the caravan of more than fifty private automobiles rolled along the main highway from Los Angeles it was guided by members of the Pomona Historical Society via *Rancho La Puente*, the land grant of William Workman and John Rowland, pioneers of 1841.

A short stop was made at *Vejar Adobe* on the Diamond Bar

## A Brief Society History



— Historical Society of Southern California Collection

### PILGRIMAGE TO FORT TEJON

In 1953 the Annual Pilgrimage took members and friends to the site of Old Fort Tejon where a dedicatory plaque, honoring Lieutenant Edward Fitzgerald Beale, was unveiled. Before the buses moved away from the Earl Mansion these distinguished travelers paused for picture-taking. They are, from left to right, Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, present co-chairman of the Hostess Committee; Marco R. Newmark, curator and past president; Dr. Aubrey Neasham, representing the California State Division of Beaches and Parks; Edmond F. Ducommun, chairman of the Landmarks Committee; Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, chairman of the Membership Committee; Roger J. Sterrett, past president and past curator; and Frederic C. Ripley, Society director. Messrs. Ducommun and Ripley hold dedicatory plaque.



### AN INTERESTING NOTE ABOUT THREE FATHERS

When Secretary Emeritus Ana Begue de Packman was assisting with the development of the editorial content of this commemorative issue of the *QUARTERLY* she recalled three public service incidents in the lives of the fathers of three of the five eminent men pictured above—Harris Newmark gave the city its first free public drinking fountain and located it on the busy intersection of Spring and Main Streets in front of the Temple Block; Charles Louis Ducommun compiled, as a public service, daily rainfall statistics and issued Los Angeles' first regularly scheduled daily weather reports; and E. P. Ripley, president of the Atchison, Topeka and Santa Fe, was one of pioneers in the movement to preserve the Old Missions of California, Arizona and New Mexico. As a tribute for this and many other public benefactions mission bells in all three states tolled seventy-one strokes — one for each year of his life — when Mr. Ripley, a non-catholic, passed away.

Ranch, near Spadra, and it was found to be in a very good state of preservation.

At the focal point of the trek, the *Palomares Adobe*, which had been restored and kept in a beautiful state by the citizens of Pomona, Director Adams conducted a tour through the gardens of California flowers and plants which was dominated by the Rose of Castile in full June-time bloom.

The picnic luncheon was enjoyed in the shade of the lush green shrubs that entwined themselves through the framework of the adobe's large ramada.

*The Eleventh Pilgrimage — Missions Santa Ynez and La Purísima*

This annual trek was a change in pace for Society members. Due to the distance to be traveled and the historic sites to be visited on the trek President Marco R. Newmark and Landmarks Chairman Charles Gibbs Adams organized a two-day motorcade for the journey.

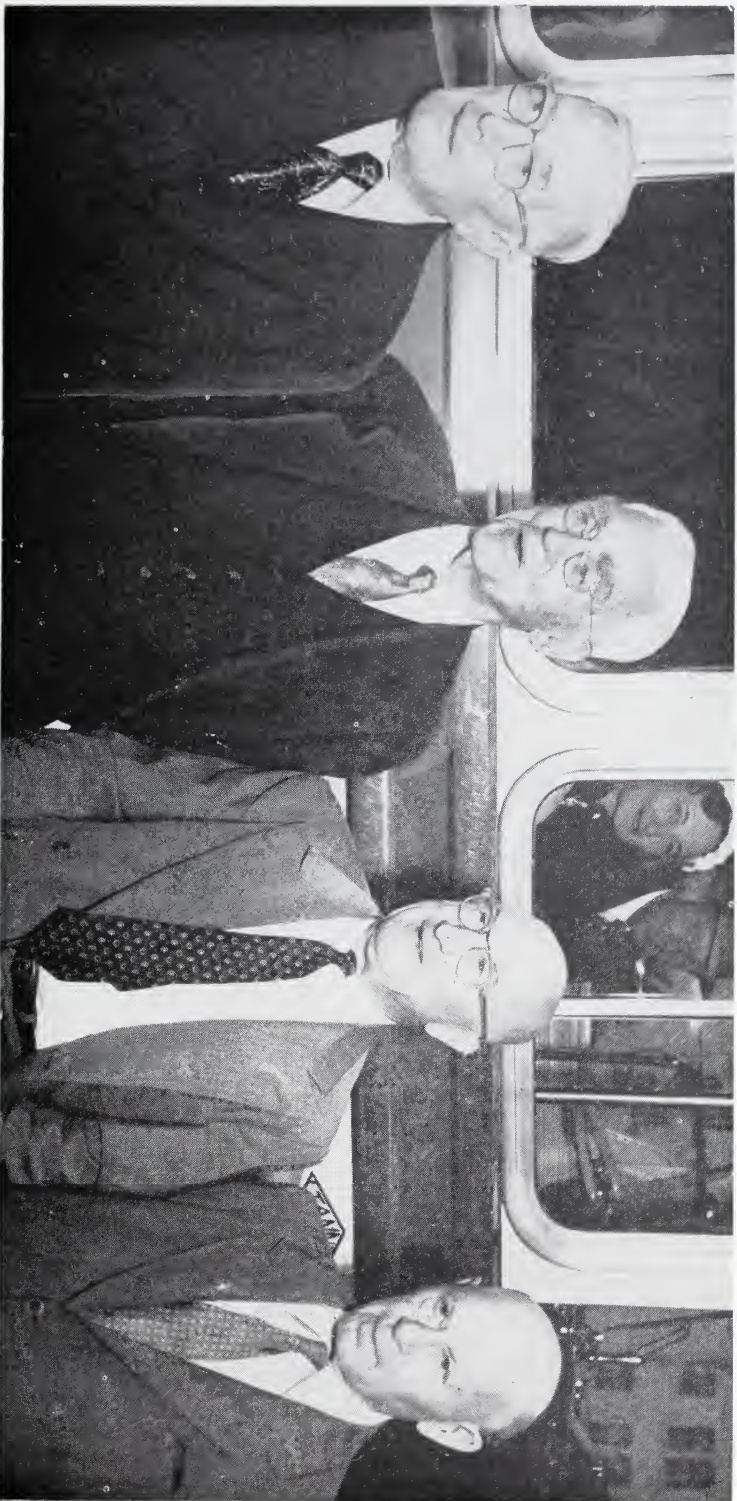
Many stops, for inspection of historic places along the way, were made by individual drivers. The first official stop was made at Mission San Buenaventura. From there to the next stop — Santa Barbara County's new Court House, a special police escort accompanied the caravan. On the spacious lawn of this new landmark the pilgrims were served a delightful California-style breakfast by members of the Santa Barbara Parlors of the Native Sons and Native Daughters of the Golden West.

After the breakfast, conducted tours were made through Santa Barbara Mission, the Presidio and its military guard house and many of the historic adobe dwellings of Santa Barbara. Among the dwellings visited were the de la Guerra adobe, the Oreña adobe and the Yorba home, known as Casa Adobe of the Harmer family. At nearly all the places visited informal talks by prominent Santa Barbara citizens, regarding the history and restoration of the site, were given.

In the afternoon the caravan reassembled to continue the journey to Mattei's Tavern in the Santa Ynez Valley where an informal dinner and evening of reminiscences was enjoyed before the pilgrims retired for the night.

The following morning, the caravan visited Mission Santa Ynez for a leisurely inspection tour under the guidance of the padres. Then the caravan moved once more to Mission La Purísima for another guided tour. This is a state monument and the guide was a state ranger.





—Historical Society of Southern California Collection

### THE 1954 HISTORICAL PILGRIMAGE ALONG THE MISSION TRAIL.

*As the members of the Historical Society of Southern California boarded their excursion buses for this pilgrimage President John C. Austin (left), unable to make the trek, was on hand to bid the travelers "God-speed." He stands beside Joseph Scott, chairman for the day, who was assisted in his duties by Directors Edmond F. Ducommun and Marco R. Neumark. Mr. Ducommun was Society vice-president and Mr. Neumark a past president.*

*The Centennial of the American Flag Raising  
Ceremony in Los Angeles*

In lieu of a 1946 Pilgrimage the *Historical Society of Southern California* assumed the responsibility of directing and participating in the *Commemoration of the One Hundredth Anniversary of the Raising of the First American Flag* over the Pueblo.

President Roger J. Sterrett related that, on that historic occasion a century ago, Commodore Robert F. Stockton and Major John C. Frémont, at the head of the United States forces, entered Los Angeles and hoisted the American Flag in recognition of possession. Thenceforth, with the exception of a brief period during which the native population regained temporary control, Los Angeles has been an integral part of the United States.

The proposal to commemorate, with fitting ceremony, that historic date was made by the *Historical Society of Southern California*, through Vice-President Edward A. Dickson.

Working closely with Mayor Bowron, a formidable committee was created to work out the details. Such dignitaries as Governor and Mrs. Earl Warren, Mayor Fletcher Bowron, Leo Carrillo and others were honored. Entertainment was under the direction of George Jessel. Frank Sinatra and Jane Powell rendered vocal solos. Margaret O'Brien was official representative from the motion picture industry.

On the Spring Street steps of the City Hall the *Historical Society of Southern California* created a tableau depicting the historic event of August, 1846. Spring Street, in front of the City Hall, was the amphitheatre that accommodated thirty-five hundred invited guests. Tops of the buildings served as a free gallery for many hundreds more.

The Police Band gave several renditions of patriotic compositions, appropriate for the occasion.

*The Twelfth Pilgrimage — The Portolá Expedition of 1769*

On June 16, 1947, the annual pilgrimage, again a cavalcade of private cars, met at the San Fernando Mission to retrace the footsteps of the Portolá expedition of 1769.

Across the San Fernando Valley to *El Camino Real*, then over the Cuesta Vieja (San Fernando Pass) out to Castaic Junction, then left along the edge of the Santa Clara river to *Rancho Camulos*.

At the Camulos landmark, Director and Chairman John C. Austin with his pilgrims was greeted by Mrs. August Rubel and Manager E. N. McPhail.



## *A Brief Society History*



— Historical Society of Southern California Collection

### THE 1955 ANNUAL PILGRIMAGE TO LAKE VINEYARD

*President John C. Austin, Miss Anne Wilson Patton, grand daughter of Historic Pioneer Benjamin D. Wilson, Vice-President Edmond F. Ducommun, Past President Marco R. Newmark and Treasurer Frank B. Putnam formed a line when Mrs. Jean Hall Giles sounded the coffee call at the picnic luncheon on this pilgrimage. Miss Patton was hostess on the visit to Lake Vineyard for the picnic luncheon. Later in the afternoon the pilgrimage moved on to Huntington Library where a formal program was presented.*

The good Padre Collins from San Fernando Mission, in the chancel of the Camulos Chapel, extended his blessings to the audience. He spoke of the honor to serve where, before him, early Franciscan padres had preceeded him.

Mr. Austin reviewed the history of the rancho from the first grantee Don Antonio del Valle, the father of Don Ygnacio del Valle.

The original grant was *Rancho San Francisco*, of which "Ca-



mulos" was a part. The century-old adobe of Rancho Camulos was the inspiration for Helen Hunt Jackson's novel "Ramona."

After light refreshments under the aged walnut trees, the motorcade retraced its way back to the Mission of San Fernando as guests of the Rev. Father Collins.

In the Memory Gardens, *Friends of the Mission* played hosts to the *Historical Society of Southern California* where a delightful collation was served.

The cavalcade, on the road again, stopped at the Don Andrés Pico adobe home, one mile south of the Mission on Sepulveda Boulevard.

The next stop was made at *Rancho Los Encinos* on the Ventura State Highway. This was the first stop made in the Valley of the Oaks by the Portolá Expedition of 1769 and later became the first site of *Mission San Fernando*.

Rancho Los Encinos was a provisional grant to Alcalde Juan Francisco Reyes on a conditional tenure. When it was imperative to have a Mission in the Valley of the Oaks, Alcalde Reyes willingly relinquished his provisional grant.

On the site of the first Portolá stop, from Reyes' first adobe that served the Padres, were built the *Vicente de la Osa* adobe and the Garnier Brothers' stone house which became a highway stop for travelers through the Valley.

### *The Seventeenth Pilgrimage — To the Bowers Memorial Museum in Santa Ana*

The motorcade for this pilgrimage, under the guidance of Vice-President John C. Austin, assembled at the Earl Mansion on Wilshire Boulevard.

On its way to Santa Ana stops were made at the Washington Street crossing of the Los Angeles River which, in 1847, was a battlefield. It is marked by an inscribed plaque and a pair of cannon.

Another stop was made at the former home of California's last Mexican Governor, Pío Pico. After a brief inspection and informal talks at this historic site the motorcade moved on through the vast domain of the Yorbas, to the Bowers Memorial Museum in Santa Ana.

In this modern, fire-proof building is housed a treasured collection of mementos, documents and Indian artifacts presented by the families of the Yorbas, the Ávilas and the Sepúlvedas.

At the Museum Mrs. F. C. Coulter, curator, greeted the visitors. Educational talks regarding the history of Orange County

## *A Brief Society History*



— Historical Society of Southern California Collection

### THE 1957 PILGRIMAGE TO LANG STATION

*When Landmarks Chairman Edmond F. Ducommun and Program Chairman Frank B. Putnam scheduled the marking of Lang Station as a Historical Landmark they gave members a side trip to see two other historical markers honoring Francisco López, who actually made the first discovery of gold in California.*



— Historical Society of Southern California Collection

were given. The exploits of José Antonio Yorba and his descendants were highlighted in which it was revealed that Yorba was a Catalan volunteer when the King of Spain called for California colonists. He received, as a reward for his services, a grant comprising 150,000 acres of the rich and bountiful land that later comprised a part of Orange County.

After the tour of the museum, an old California custom was exemplified by Hostess Coulter. She, with the assistance of several young ladies appropriately dressed in Early California costumes, served cooling refreshments as the Society members enjoyed their picnic in the gardens of the museum.

Following the picnic a formal program was organized in which Vice-President Austin and William McPherson, Orange County historian, were the principal speakers. A short program of guitar and violin music closed the eventful day.

### *The Nineteenth Pilgrimage — To Rancho Santa Anita*

Past-President Marco R. Newmark led the Society members on a motorcade to *Rancho Santa Anita* at the special invitation of Owner Harry Chandler. Upon arrival of the entourage, Mr. Chandler welcomed his guests enthusiastically. Mr. Newmark responded for the Society.

A picnic luncheon with ample refreshments was spread on long tables under century-old eucalyptus trees awaiting the guests.

Following the luncheon a formal historical program was held. Edwin Carpenter of the *Huntington Library* gave the principal address that traced the ownership and development of the rancho from the original land grant to its current owner. The address disclosed that *Rancho Santa Anita*, originally part of lands granted to *Mission San Gabriel* was established as a rancho in 1839 when Hugo Reid married Victoria, a "daughter" of the Mission. He applied for a grant of 13,000 acres of its land upon which to establish a home, orchards and grazing lands. It took two years for him to obtain the grant.

Reid, a native of Scotland, settled in California and became a Californian when he married a native daughter and acquired Mission lands, then became a naturalized American citizen when California became a part of this country. Mr. Reid served as a Southern California representative on the committee that drafted the first California Constitution.

In 1847 *Santa Anita Rancho* became the property of Henry Dalton, an Englishman, who paid \$2,600 for the vast acreage. Joseph Rowe, a citrus grower, later acquired the property from Dal-





#### ANNUAL PILGRIMAGE VISITS ADOLFO CAMARILLO

*The Historical Society of Southern California made its Annual Pilgrimage to historic Ventura County in June. Members of the entourage will always remember the all-too-short visit that was made at the rancho of Adolfo Camarillo (top photo). Mr. Camarillo hosted them royally with a buffet luncheon, and was assisted by the señoritas of his family (lower photo), who treated the guests to equestrienne demonstrations on the Rancho's highly prized blooded horses.*



— Photos by William Mason.

ton, who, badly in debt, sold his equity for \$2,300. Albert Dibble and William Corbett, bankers, also became owners of the property. They sold 2,000 acres to L. J. Rose, the San Gabriel Valley vintner, for \$4,000. William Wolfskill acquired the remaining acreage for \$20,000. He planted many of the towering old trees that still grace the rancho.

Later, Harris Newmark bought 8,000 acres, including the Hugo Reid adobe, for \$85,000, and three years later resold it to "Lucky" Baldwin for \$200,000. Baldwin then began a development program for the property that turned the old rancho into essentially the same show-place estate that it was under ownership of Mr. Chandler.

### *A Pilgrimage to Rancho Sombra del Roble*

On October 2, 1948, members and friends once again took to the road to pay homage to our late Director William W. Orcutt. Our hostess, Mrs. William W. Orcutt, greeted the many guests as they arrived at her charming estate, *Rancho Sombra del Roble*.

An interesting feature of the afternoon's program was a ceremonial marking of the grove of venerable oaks (robles) that, in 1778, had been topped to fire the lime kilns, which furnished mortar to build the Mission of *San Fernando Rey de España*.

A bronze plaque, dedicated to the honor of William Warren Orcutt, long a Director of the Society, now marks this historic oak grove — a grove that existed when Cabrillo sailed the coast of California. Mrs. Orcutt accepted, with appropriate remarks, the plaque which had been designed by Director Roger J. Sterrett.

The occasion was one of the most gala affairs of the season. The hostess, Mrs. Orcutt, spread a generous repast, while "musicos" filled the air with melody.

Society President Edward A. Dickson presided and acknowledged numerous guests.

### *The Twentieth Pilgrimage — To Santa Barbara*

The 1949 annual pilgrimage of the *Historical Society of Southern California* took place on June 25, when about one hundred members left Los Angeles by motor coaches to visit Santa Barbara.

The journey started through Cahuenga Pass, along *El Camino Real* and over the old Conejo Stage Road. Description of historic places of interest along the highway were broadcast to the passengers by Landmarks Chairman Roger J. Sterrett and Secretary Ana Begue de Packman.

## A Brief Society History



### THE SOCIETY BLAZON

At the Board of Directors meeting, held in Room 4 of the Phillips Block, on Wednesday, July 20, 1891, the design and description for an official Historical Society of Southern California emblem was approved. The Blazon, or Shield, is pictured above. Its description, as composed by its designer, Colonel George Butler Griffin, follows:

"A poly of thirteen gules and argent; on a chief azure, thirteen estoiles argent six and seven, for the United States. Impaling quarterly gules a castle argent, argent a lion rampant gules, for Spain; a poly of three, vert argent and gules, the second charged with an eagle having in beak and sinister talon a serpent seated on a cactus growing on a rock in the water proper, for Mexico. "Historical Society of Southern California, founded 1883; incorporated February 13, 1891," on an open book and resting on a sunburst. Motto: On a ribbon, 'Carpere et Colligere.' Translation: Together and to Bind Together."

Explanation: The left one-half of the shield represents the United States as it was organized in the period immediately following the Revolutionary War; hence, the thirteen white stars on a field of blue and the thirteen alternating red and white vertical stripes. The right one-half of the shield is divided into two sections. The top section is representative of the kingdoms of Castile and León, which were the two most predominating kingdoms in the Spanish acquisition and settlement of California. The lower right hand quarter of the shield is taken from the official Mexican flag which flew over California during Mexico's ownership and rule of California.

Note: the book and sunburst design which are described as being at the top of the Blazon was abandoned when it was discovered that the original artist had made a typographical error. Some members of the Society think it might be appropriate to redraw the whole design and reinstitute it as our official emblem.

The motorcade was welcomed in Santa Barbara by members of the *Santa Barbara Historical Society*. The highlight of the day was a luncheon at El Paseo.

Supervisor Paul E. Stewart made the welcoming speech at the Court House and a response by President Edward A. Dickson followed. A tour was made of the Court House and Library to view



the magnificent murals and Spanish decorations. Native Daughters Ann McCaughey, Pearl Chase and John Richard, president of the *Old Mission Days' Fiesta* made appropriate remarks.

After luncheon the group adjourned to the Mission of Santa Barbara where Fathers Geiger and O'Brien were hosts for the Franciscan Order. A short stop was made at the Natural History Museum.

For a passing recognition, the pilgrims visited the Trussell-Winchester Adobe. This "Yankee" adobe was built in 1854 by Captain Horatio Gates Trussell, a mariner from Maine. Later it was the home of Mrs. John Russell Hastings, who eventually presented the property to the *Santa Barbara Historical Society*. Director Marshall Stimson spoke for the visiting pilgrims.

The return trip was made via Oxnard, Hueneme, Point Mugu and over the Rindge estate along the Pacific Coast Highway.

*The Twenty-first Pilgrimage—"A Century of California Literature"*

The highlight feature of the 1949-1950 season of programs, on June 6, 1950, was a notable gathering of members and friends of the Society at the *Huntington Library*. Opening of an exhibit commemorating a "*Century of California Literature*" was arranged by the library as a contribution to our *California Literary Centennial*, which was officially sponsored by the *Historical Society of Southern California*.

Observance of the *California Literary Centennial* was proposed by President Edward A. Dickson.

Speaking for the Trustees of the Library, Dr. Robert A. Millikan, welcomed the guests.

Dr. Gustave O. Arlt, Director of the *California Literary Centennial*, delivered the formal address.

Mr. Joseph R. Knowland, chairman of the *State Centennial Commission*, and Mr. Leslie E. Bliss, librarian of the *Huntington Museum*, were honored by those present.

*The Twenty-second Pilgrimage — An Old Spanish Land Grant*

On June 16, 1951, the *Historical Society of Southern California* visited an old Spanish land grant held by the third generation descendants of the 1850 California pioneer, Richard O'Neill, who came from San Francisco to make his fortune in the Southland on soil cut from the leagues of *Old San Juan Capistrano Mission*.

The pilgrims left the Society headquarters in three motor coaches. Arriving at *Rancho Trabuco* (Blunderbus), where O'Neill Park has been created, the Honorable Willard Smith, supervisor of Orange County, greeted the Society and President John C. Austin

### *A Brief Society History*

graciously responded. The O'Neill family — Mrs. Richard O'Neill, Jr., her son, Richard Jerome O'Neill, and her daughter, Mrs. Alice O'Neill Moise and two grandsons, Anthony O'Neill Moise and Jerome O'Neill Moise, were introduced.

Event of the day was the unveiling of the memorial monument disclosing the dedicatory bronze plaque honoring the late Richard O'Neill, Jr. and marking O'Neill Park as a gift from the O'Neill family to Orange County.

Leading the march to the tree-shaded picnic tables was Program Chairmen Marshall Stimson and W. W. Robinson. Here, amid the gay strains of old Spanish music, through the courtesy of Mrs. Richard O'Neill, Jr., Chairman Stimson introduced honored guests Judge Marcus Foster, Miss Mary Foy and Volney and Norwood Howard.

After a most pleasant and interesting day, members and their friends again embarked on the motor coaches for the journey home.

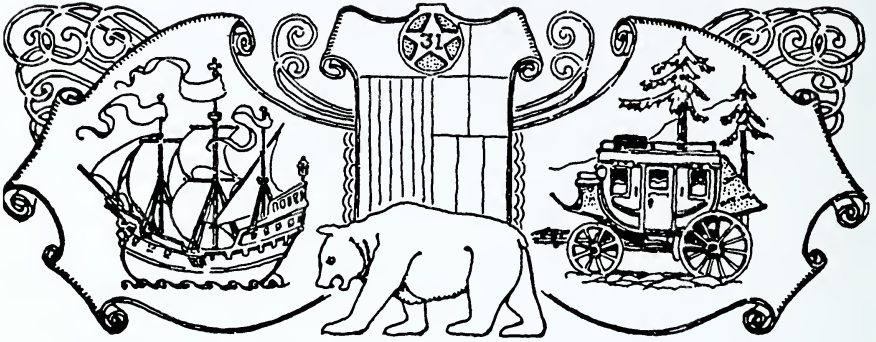
#### *The Twenty-fifth Pilgrimage — Commemorating the 170th Anniversary of the Founding of Mission San Buenaventura, Saturday, June 2, 1952*

A caravan of motor coaches carried the enthusiastic members of the *Historical Society of Southern California* to the Mission, which was the last one founded by Padre Serra.

As the motorcade traveled along, commentators on each coach broadcast descriptions of the historic ranchos as they were passed: *San José de Buenos Ayres* (Westwood and Bel Air), through the Comihabit Trail (Sepúlveda Boulevard) and out on *El Camino Real* (Ventura State Highway) which crossed *Ranchos Encino, Triunfo, Calabasas, Conejo, Guadaluca, Calleguas, Las Posas, Santa Clara Colonia, San Miguel*, the Ranch of Mission *San Buenaventura, Rancho Cañada Larga*, and *Rancho Santa Ana*. At Eugene P. Foster Park, where the Society members and friends were invited guests of the *Ventura County Pioneer Society*, a delightful picnic luncheon was enjoyed.

*Ventura County Pioneer Society* President William J. Suytor extended greetings to President Austin and other members of the Society. At three o'clock the caravan departed to conclude the day's journey.

Rev. Daniel Hurley, at the Mission door, was awaiting the pilgrims. In the roped-off street a large audience witnessed the ceremony of the unveiling of the bronze plaque which was placed on the lower part of the bell tower.



### THE SOCIETY BOOK PLATE

*In 1935 when Carl I. Wheat and J. Gregg Layne designed and developed the first issue of the QUARTERLY, they wanted an identifying Book Plate that would run in every issue. The editor and his associate called on Roger J. Sterrett to do the work. Mr. Sterrett took the basic design of the official Society Blazon and modified it to include a large star with figure 31 superimposed to signify California as the thirty-first state. He added with decorative scrolls and finely drawn detail a sailing ship on the left, a stage coach on the right and a great bear walking across the foreground of the shield. The QUARTERLY has never published an issue without Mr. Sterrett's BOOK PLATE at the editorial masthead and, henceforth, it will be used as the identifying emblem on the Series title pages of all fully-bound books to be published by the Society.*

Father Hurley, rector of the Mission, with appropriate words thanked the Society for its thoughtfulness. He said that this was the most recognition that the Mission had received in its life of one hundred and seventy years.

After a full day all were ready for the trip home via the Pacific State Highway.

### *The Twenty-sixth Pilgrimage — To Fort Tejón*

The twenty-sixth annual pilgrimage of the *Historical Society of Southern California* was dedicated to commemoration of the centennial of the founding of the Indian Reservation of the Tulares by Lieutenant Edward Fitzgerald Beale. The headquarters were established in Grapevine Canyon, which site later became Fort Tejón.

The motorcade went out Sepúlveda Boulevard through the San Fernando Valley, then over Highway 99 to the Fort where the *Kern County Historical Society* was the host. All participants met jointly to enjoy basket luncheons. Then they brought to a climax an auspicious occasion by unveiling a dedicatory bronze plaque bearing the inscription:



To the Memory of  
Lieutenant Edward Fitzgerald Beale  
1st Superintendent of Indian Affairs  
in California  
Appointed by President Millard Fillmore  
1853

Vice-President Gustave O. Arlt and Landmarks Chairman Edmond F. Ducommun drew the veil and presented the tablet, which was accepted in behalf of California by State Historian Dr. Aubrey Neasham.

Following the dedication, Ranger Louis Wakefield guided the pilgrims and friends through the old buildings of the fort that were being restored.

*The Twenty-seventh Pilgrimage — On the Mission Trail*

Bright and early under a misty sky, President John C. Austin bid Godspeed to the pilgrims aboard the motor coaches on their way to *Mission San Luis Rey*, King of Missions, that was founded in 1798.

Mr. Joseph Scott was named as chairman of this annual event. On the itinerary, special commentators in each coach pointed out the places of interest enroute.

The Padre Guardian of the Mission greeted Mr. Scott and made the guests welcome to tables set *al fresco* in the patio of the Mission. The young brothers of the Franciscan Order served hot coffee to both the *Historical Society of Southern California* and the neighboring *San Diego Historical Society* who joined in honoring *Mission San Luis Rey* on its one hundred and fifty-sixth anniversary.

Brother Luke gave the history of the oldest building on the grounds. This was the Mission Church dedicated in 1813, being one of the few Missions that escaped the great earthquake of 1812.

Guests visited the burial grounds where hundreds of Indians and many of the first families of California lay at rest.

*The Twenty-eighth Pilgrimage — To Rancho San Pasqual*

Edmond F. Ducommun, chairman of the Landmarks Committee, and Past-President John C. Austin were leaders of this pilgrimage to the Lake Vineyard home of Benjamin Davis (Don Benito) Wilson, a small part of which is presently Lacy Park in the City of San Marino.

Here the Society members enjoyed a picnic luncheon in the park before proceeding to *Huntington Library* where the formal ceremonies were held with Society Past President Robert Glass Cleland addressing the gathering.

Past President John C. Austin introduced the guest of honor, Miss Anne Patton. Miss Patton is the granddaughter of Benjamin Davis Wilson, daughter of George S. Patton, Sr., first mayor of San Marino and sister of the late General George S. Patton, Jr., of World War II fame.

Miss Patton related that she was born on old Fort Moore Hill, North Broadway in Los Angeles, during the years her father, George S. Patton, was district attorney of Los Angeles County. Her father came here from Virginia when he was 12 years old. Miss Patton's mother, Ruth Wilson Patton, was born on the ranch (Lake Vineyard) where Miss Patton still lives. She was the daughter of Benjamin Davis Wilson and Margaret Herford Wilson, second wife of "Don Benito." Wilson's first wife was Ramona Yorba.

Miss Patton has more than ordinary deep affection for her home, for she has lived there all her life, except during the time she spent while attending school in the East.

Her grandfather, Benjamin Davis Wilson "Don Benito" (1811-1878) died before Miss Anne Patton was born.

Mr. Austin expressed his appreciation to both Dr. Robert Glass Cleland and Miss Anne Patton for a most enjoyable day.

*The Twenty-ninth Pilgrimage — To Lang Station*

Program Chairman Frank B. Putnam, on June 15, 1957, and members and friends of the *Historical Society of Southern California* boarded motor coaches to participate in the annual trek, this time to Lang Station.

On this memorable occasion the Society paid tribute to the centennial anniversary of the joining, with a "Golden Spike," of the Northern and Southern sections of the Southern Pacific Railroad at Lang Station, Soledad Canyon. Colonel Crocker of San Francisco drove the historic spike.

Through efforts of our member, Mr. Victor H. Rossetti, the Southern Pacific Railroad presented a bronze plaque to mark this Landmark No. 590.

### *A Brief Society History*

President Gustave O. Arlt made acceptance remarks and introduced speakers Captain George R. Anderson and Messrs. H. Brad Atwood, H. A. Bury and A. B. Perkins.

Following an enjoyable picnic luncheon in Saxonia Park, the return trip via motor coaches passed through the historic San Fernando Pass, to the Pioneer Oil Refinery in Newhall, and the Cascade of the Owens River Aqueduct that flows into the Mulholland Dam.

#### *The Thirtieth Pilgrimage — Historic Places in Ventura County*

On June 21, 1958, the pilgrimage was routed along the King's Highway to visit State Landmarks No. 151, *Campo de Cahuenga*; No. 150, *Brand Park Memory Garden*; No. 157, *San Fernando Mission*; No. 362, the *General Andrés Pico Adobe*; and *Rancho Camulos*, grant of the del Valle family. Here Mr. and Mrs. Edward F. Burger, who are the present owners, were hosts for a short visit. The invited pilgrims and President Gustave O. Arlt were escorted through the gardens and to the century-old walnut tree, where beneath its shade refreshments were served.

Leaving Camulos the Society met with the *Ventura Historical Society* where the caravan was made welcome. Father O'Reily of the Ventura Mission gave an interesting talk on the Mission which is Landmark No. 310.

Next on the route, the *Historical Society of Southern California* members and friends, as invited guests, arrived at the famous Camarillo home and were served a sumptuous repast. Music and Spanish songs made the occasion a fiesta.

Don Adolfo Camarillo introduced his daughters and granddaughter as they passed in parade mounted on the renowned white palominos of *Rancho Camarillo*. Old Spanish hospitality was the order of the day.

After a most enjoyable day the pilgrims entrained homeward passing through *Rancho Conejo*, *Calabasas*, *Encino* and back on the Freeway to the Elks Club parking lot where they debarked to their parked cars.





— Historical Society of Southern California Collection

THE FIRST ELECTRIC LIGHT POLE IN LOS ANGELES  
*was in front of the St. Charles Hotel. There were seven of these 150-foot  
light masts erected on the streets of Los Angeles in December, 1882.*

# Fifteen Decisive Events *of* California History

*By*  
Rockwell D. Hunt



Part III

*Chapter Eight*

## Admission of California Into the Union, September 9, 1850



IN THE MORNING OF OCTOBER THE 18TH, 1850, the good steamship *Oregon* proudly entered the Golden Gate, with banners flying — she was the fortunate bearer of official good tidings from Washington, bringing great joy to all the people of San Francisco. California had been admitted into the American Union of states on the 9th of September. The reaction of the populace was electric and spontaneous. Regular business gave way to the universal feeling of exultation. Of one mind the people poured themselves into Portsmouth Square for felicitations. The next day the editor of the *Alta* expressed the sentiment in these words:

We have never seen so general and joyous excitement or anything comparable with it . . . At once the American flag went up from every possible place in the city . . . Every hat swung around and every voice was brought into requisition, to welcome the first public flag ever raised in honor of the Thirty-first State of the Union.

The formal celebration was held October 29, when Nathaniel Bennett was the talented orator of the day. The long, memorable debate in congressional halls was at last ended. President Fillmore had affixed his signature to the bill, the vexatious delays were over, California at last was legally recognized as a co-equal in the sisterhood of states — no longer to be thought of as a foreign land. How the achievement was consummated is one of the most engaging stories of our national history, and forever a glorious part of our priceless American heritage.

First, look at the swiftly changing situation in California. In accordance with the proclamation of *de facto* Governor Bennet Riley, the Constitutional Convention met at Monterey in September, 1849, in the midst of the gold-rush days. It is highly significant that forty-eight delegates, nearly all of them young and energetic men, turned aside to engage in the sober task of drafting a government, then so desperately needed. The overwhelming sentiment of the convention favored immediate statehood, completely by-passing all thought of territorial status. In this is seen the reason why California is known as the Minerva State, and the sufficient explanation of the appearance of a likeness of the goddess on the official great seal — full-grown from the brow of Jupiter.

Even more far-reaching in character, overshadowing all else in its ultimate consequence, was the early adoption, by unanimous



### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

vote, of a resolution which reads: "Neither slavery nor involuntary servitude, unless for the punishment of crimes, shall ever be tolerated in this State." On careful analysis that action, taken on the tenth day of September, in California, proved to be the "pivot point of the slavery question in the United States." Its full implication could not possibly have been seen by any delegate at that hour. But in perspective it is abundantly clear that a virile and dynamic sixteenth free state, knocking for admission into the American Union was without the counterpart of a slave state, which was calculated to destroy the balance that had been obtained and become traditional in the United States Senate. When the work of the convention was completed and the constitution was adopted by popular vote, a state government was set up with Peter H. Burnett as first governor and John McDougal as lieutenant-governor. Edward Gilbert and George Wright were elected as representatives to Congress, and the bicameral legislature proceeded to elect William M. Gwin and John C. Frémont as U. S. Senators. Speaking from the local standpoint, for all practical intents and purposes California had become a state, and San José was its capital.

But now the scene shifts to Washington. There we find California's political leaders, elected to the Senate and House of Representatives, earnestly seeking the admission of their state into the Union, playing an important part in the "irrepressible conflict" that plagued the nation. The demand for admission had fundamental significance in the historic, memorable debate in the United States Senate, involving as leading participants the great triumvirate — Webster, Clay, Calhoun. The crucial issue was that of slavery extension, which was to strike at the institution of slavery itself. The first session of the 31st Congress extended from the 3rd of December 1849 until the last day of September, 1850. This extraordinary meeting of the national legislature, extending through the long summer months, was without precedent.

Clay introduced his great Compromise Bill on the 29th of January, 1850. Who could expect Calhoun and the South ever to consent to witness virile young California come in as a free state, thereby breaking the balance in the Senate between freedom and slavery! The impending crisis was a great moment in American history. To enfeebled Calhoun, inspired leader of the South, it was nothing less than his bounden duty as he saw it, solemnly to voice his conviction in behalf of a cause that in reality had already been irretrievably lost. Then there was Webster with his overpowering personality, who opened his Seventh of March speech with these immortal words: "I wish to speak today not as a Massachusetts man,

nor as a Northern man, but as an American . . . I speak for preservation of the Union." Fully convinced that the institution of slavery could not thrive in California, he uttered these solemn words: "I would not take pains uselessly to reaffirm an ordinance of nature, nor to re-enact the will of God."

But others also, both in and out of the Senate, participated prominently in the debate that continued week after week. These included Lewis Cass, a staunch advocate of nationalism; Salmon P. Chase, who had been active in the Free Soil movement; and Robert Toombs, who solemnly avowed before his country and "in the presence of the Living God," that in the event slavery were excluded from the Western territories, he, "for one, should be ready for secession." The voice that resounded clear and strong, above the din, however, was that of William H. Seward, militant Whig leader rapidly coming into the ascendant. The climax was reached when he appealed to "a higher law than the Constitution," regulating "our authority over the domain." He declared,

The territory is a part—no inconsiderable part—of the common heritage of mankind, bestowed upon them by the Creator of the universe. We are his stewards, and must so discharge our trust as to secure, in the highest attainable degree, their happiness.

It is to Seward that we are indebted for the classic phrase describing the new commonwealth — "the youthful queen of the Pacific, in robes of freedom gorgeously inlaid with gold."

The California Bill, in one of the stormiest sessions of Congress on record, finally came to a vote and was approved by the Senate August 13, and after debate ratified by the House September 7, 1850. Only two days later President Fillmore wrote the word "Approved" and affixed his signature under the bill signaling the admission of California as a free state into the Union, thus adding the thirty-first star to the national galaxy. It should be remembered with gratitude that it was President Taylor who had been chiefly instrumental in advancing the cause of California's admission — he it was that had shown loyalty to the cause and had given his recommendation. But the hand of death, laid upon him on the ninth of July, 1850, explains how the final approval of the bill fell to his successor. The distressed Southern leaders found small comfort in the Fugitive Slave Law — they could see no counterpoise anywhere — scanning the horizon as they might — that could match the birth of the new commonwealth we gratefully call the Minerva State.

That the admission of California was an achievement of great historic importance and decisive character admits of no doubt at all.

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

Locally it fully confirmed the presence of the organization of the state itself, even though it brought a unique *de facto* status the better part of a year previous to becoming a co-equal member of the American sisterhood of states. The succeeding steps taken, the adoption of a state constitution and the statutes enacted by the legislature were at a later date validated. Thus, even before formal admission California was already a full-fledged state, a *fait accompli*.

But viewed from the national standpoint, to the birth of the new commonwealth, the sixteenth free state, must be accorded even wider significance and decisive character. Indeed, it would be difficult to over-estimate the influence of the entrance of that highly dynamic free state on the question of slavery in the nation. Note the considered judgment of Samuel H. Willey, devoted chaplain at the Monterey Convention, referring to the resolution forbidding slavery. "It was a good Providence that brought on the determining of that question *then*," he wrote, "and fixed it as a fundamental principle of our organic law, not to be changed by any chance majorities of the hour." It is scarcely an exaggeration to declare that when the Shannon resolution was adopted on the 10th of September, 1849, the death knell to slavery in the nation was sounded, in Monterey, the provincial capital of California. Of the great contributions of California to the Union since that day — this is not the place to narrate.

Finally, the clothing of California the Golden with full statehood was destined to have a profound influence upon world history. Its thousand mile coast-line along the Pacific, greatest of all seas, brought the nation face to face with the teeming, awakening myriads of people of the immeasurable Orient. California looked out upon what was rightly called "the chief theater of events in the world's great hereafter." It was as if "Manifest Destiny" pointed the way to some great consummation.

The year 1846 is rightly regarded as the year of the American conquest of California. That historic event, with others that were contemporary, led Bernard DeVoto, for his widely read book to call that year *The Year of Decision*. It is here submitted that if 1846 may be thought of as "the year of decision," at the least it cannot be deemed presumptuous to call the mid-century year 1850 as "A Year of Destiny."

See Selected Bibliography, page 283



*Chapter Nine*

## **Election of Leland Stanford as Governor, in 1861**



WHAT HAS HAPPENED IN CALIFORNIA, on more occasions than one, has been of distinctly national significance. To illustrate the truth of this statement, one need only to cite such events as the arrival overland from the United States of Jedediah Smith in 1826, the return of John C. Frémont in the spring of 1846, after receiving secret messages from Archibald Gillespie, to become a leading figure in the American Conquest, James Marshall's discovery of gold at Coloma in January, 1848, and the admission of California to the Union in 1850 as the sixteenth free state. The present chapter deals with another event that has national significance — the election of Leland Stanford as "War Governor" of California, in the year 1861.

Notwithstanding the fact that California came into the Union under a free constitution, there were many Southern sympathizers in the state, and the dominant issue in the nation was the question of slavery and slavery extension — the "irrepressible conflict" was already on. In the governorship the Democratic Party had enjoyed a virtual monopoly right down to the Civil War: in 1860 most of the state officers were of Southern sympathy, though by that time strong anti-slavery leaders had begun to assert themselves. When Fort Sumter was fired upon — and later — strong temptations to disloyalty came to many men in public office as well as in private life. Even before that date, there had been much talk about creating a "Pacific Republic," which would take California out of the Union.

The newly organized Republican Party held its first national convention in Philadelphia in 1856. One leader defined Republicanism as "organized opposition to the political power of slavery in the federal government and in the free states." The first presidential nominee was John C. Frémont, who suffered defeat at the hand of James Buchanan, the Democratic nominee. The whig party was virtually disbanded.

On the 14th of November, 1860, the thrilling news of the election of Lincoln reached California. Southern sympathizers regarded secession as inevitable. It was understood that Senator William Gwin favored the establishment of a "Pacific Republic" in the event of secession; and Congressman John C. Burch held that

## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

it was the duty of the representatives of the Pacific Coast to use their utmost exertions to prevent disunion, and suggested that it would be well for the people of California, Oregon, New Mexico, Washington and Utah to seek refuge for themselves . . . by retiring and establishing a prosperous, happy and successful republic on the Pacific slope . . .

Each member of the "Big Four" of the Central Pacific Railroad was a Republican — Stanford, Huntington, Crocker, Hopkins. Stanford had assisted in the organization of the party, in Sacramento, in 1856. It is interesting to note that as a young student at Cazenovia Seminary, in New York State, he had studied Francis Wayland's textbook, *The Elements of Moral Philosophy*; he had read "with a deep conviction of the inconsistency of the only foundation upon which free government may be maintained, and the antagonistic doctrine by which slavery must be perpetuated." In 1857 he was defeated for the office of state treasurer; two years later he was again defeated, for governor.

Events moved rapidly after the news of Lincoln's election. As to the story of an alleged conspiracy on the part of General Albert Sidney Johnston, commanding the military forces, to betray California to the Confederacy, believed by many, it is sufficient here to state that no official evidence of conspiracy has been presented — his successor in command, General Edwin V. Sumner, reported that Johnston "was carrying out the orders of the Government" to the time of his own arrival.

Meantime a strange occurrence befell Leland Stanford. He had amassed a comfortable fortune in California. His biographer, George T. Clark, reports: "The lure of scenes of his youth . . . drew him back to Albany." He and Mrs. Stanford sailed out the Golden Gate in January, 1861, believing they were saying a final farewell. But that was not to be. The Republicans needed his leadership more than ever. He decided to return, arrived at San Francisco June 3. Three days later the Sacramento County convention voted to present to the forthcoming state convention "the name of Leland Stanford, a long tried, true and faithful Republican as a suitable candidate for governor . . ." The State convention assembled at Sacramento June 18th. When called upon to address the delegates, he responded with a carefully prepared speech, saying, in part:

I have striven for our great principles. I felt that in the contest that is now raging throughout the country, civil liberty is at stake. Democracy and aristocracy are in antagonism. I believe in the people; I believe in the Democracy; I believe in the elevation of the masses.

Stanford received the Republican nomination for governor on

the first ballot, with 197 out of a total of 325 votes. Following his brief acceptance speech, three rousing cheers were given the nominee.

Then followed a vigorous campaign, carried especially throughout the central and northern part of the state. The Breckenridge Democratic nominee was John R. McConnell, sympathetic with the seceded states; the Union (Douglas) Democratic ticket was headed by John Conness. The election took place on September 4, when the entire Republican ticket was elected, Stanford running ahead of his colleagues. For governor the canvassed vote showed, for Stanford, 55,935; for McConnell, 32,872; for Conness, 30,944. In the opinion of the Sacramento *Union* it was a vote "to sustain the government of the nation against rebellion and not for the Republican candidate; it was a union vote for the country, not a partisan one . . ." Had the election resulted in a victory for McConnell, it is believed there would have been serious civic commotion in the state — if not something even worse. The election of Stanford and the Republican ticket lifted from the shoulders of loyal Unionists a great burden of anxiety.

Governor Stanford was confronted with difficult and threatening conditions throughout his two-year term. Some of these conditions may be considered briefly. The state treasury was empty, and there was a heavy floating indebtedness; but more grave than that, a large part of the population was well known to sympathize with the Confederate cause and disposed to render aid by all practicable means. The disastrous flood of 1862 added greatly to the burden of government. On J Street in Sacramento the water was five feet deep; boats were requisitioned to take the governor-elect and party to the Capitol for the inauguration. On January 28, the *Union* reports, "no less than 64 boats were moored on Third Street, between K and L . . ." The legislature was compelled to adjourn to San Francisco to complete its session.

The agitation for a Pacific republic, or "Republic of the Pacific," already referred to, was a disturbing factor, tending strongly toward virtual secession. Other manifestations of disloyalty were not far to seek. For a time there were those who openly advocated secession; but as it became increasingly indiscreet and sometimes positively dangerous to avow their sympathy or commit overt subversive acts, expressions of disloyalty assumed more subtle forms. Two secret organizations of prominence were "Knights of the Golden Circle" and "Knights of the Columbian Star," both widely organized in the state, with members numbering into thousands. Then there were numerous disloyal newspapers, vitriolic



### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

speeches were made, sermons and prayers were heard in disloyal pulpits, celebrations of Confederate victories, harangues in saloons and bar-rooms, and still other expressions of disloyalty were an ever-present concern of the loyal administration.

Despite all this, however, it may confidently be stated that, speaking generally, California remained intensely loyal to the Union, to President Lincoln and the Stars and Stripes. Chief of all the centers of loyalty was the city of San Francisco, where, said the *Alta California*, among the citizens "devotion to the flag is an all-absorbing passion. It is shared equally by all classes, and is all but universal."

By no means did Governor Stanford achieve the magnificent results single-handed. He was sustained and ably assisted by a number of organized activities in behalf of the Union. There was the Home League, formed "to bring together Republicans and Democrats in support of the Union of President Lincoln's administration; Union meetings were held over the state, in cities, towns and mining camps. A high type of effective oratory was much in evidence — the eloquent appeals of leaders like Thomas Starr King, the peerless Unitarian preacher, and Martin C. Briggs, the patriotic "Methodist Trumpeter," proved of incalculable influence. Others whose names must never be forgotten, include silver-tongued Edward D. Baker, who died on the battlefield, James McClatchy, Cornelius Cole, Henry Edgerton and John Bidwell. These, and still others of their kind, deserve well of the commonwealth.

California, "Empire State of the Pacific," was saved to the Union — but that was not all. California contributed generously to the Union cause during the time of civil strife that threatened the national integrity. Most of her men were needed at home; but when opportunity came there was a rush to enlist in the California Regiment. The "California Hundred" left San Francisco in December, 1862, and five weeks later the group was received in fine style in Boston, where in response to the mayor's address, Captain Reed said:

We come not as citizens of California, neither as citizens of Massachusetts. We come as citizens of the United States, and we are proud to enroll ourselves under the quota of Boston.

A company of loyal native-born Californians was organized at San José, under the resounding call of Captain Pico: "Sons of California: Our Country calls and we must obey—" In all, California furnished two full regiments of cavalry, eight regiments of infantry, one battalion of native cavalry, and the Mountaineers, a battalion of infantry, besides several special companies of volunteers. Grant.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Sherman, Hooker, Halleck, Sumner, Baker, Farragut, Goldsborough, Porter, Alden, Baldwin — all these had seen service in California.

Another beneficent, doubly-welcomed gift to the nation was in the form of California gold. Generous amounts were appropriated for military purposes, soldiers' relief fund, and particularly in support of the Sanitary Commission, a forerunner of the Red Cross society of today. General Grant once remarked: "I do not know what we could do in this great national emergency, were it not for the gold sent from California."

Leland Stanford did not continue as governor throughout the Civil War period. He was succeeded by Governor Frederick E. Lowe, who patriotically continued the policy of loyalty to the Union. Nor can Stanford be given sole credit for preserving California to the Union. But he it was who won the title "War Governor," he, more than any other individual, built the noble framework within which the loyal forces of the state were able to achieve the noble result. It was his election as governor of California that lighted the torch of freedom, that set the pace on the highway of Union and liberty, that proved decisive in the history of California.

See Selected Bibliography, page 283

## Completion of the Pacific Railroad, May 10, 1869



THE COMPLETION OF THE FIRST TRANSCONTINENTAL STEAM RAILROAD presents one of the most thrilling stories in the annals of California — though the actual culmination took place at far-away Promontory, Utah, on the tenth day of May, 1869. There it was that the locomotive of the Central Pacific, extending eastward from Sacramento, was directly confronted by the locomotive of the Union Pacific, extending westward from Omaha, Nebraska. The meeting of the engines, on a single track, bore a message of vital significance for California, and for all the world. For California the message was immortalized, not without an intimation of poetic pride, by Bret Harte, in his verses "What the Engines Said." The kernel thought is seen in the lines,

All the Orient, all Cathay  
Find through me their shortest way;  
And the sun you follow here  
Rises in my hemisphere.

It was an event of transcendent importance. It brought California face to face with the mighty Pacific, as if to say, pointing ever westward, "There is your East! There is Cathay! There is India!"

It signalized the realization of a world dream of centuries — nothing less than the fruition of the search for a direct passage from the Occident to the Orient; for thenceforth the way was open from the newest West to the oldest East. The Strait of Anian, the elusive Northwest Passage, had at length been fathomed.

Like every great historic event, the completion of the Pacific Railroad had its antecedents and contributing causes, perhaps often unperceived at the time, but always relevant. The forerunners of the railroad in California transportation and communication in themselves constitute a fascinating saga, embracing as they do the crude *carreta* (ox-cart) and "wash-tub mail" of early Spanish days, and running the gamut of saddle horse and pack-mule, freight wagon, stage coach, overland mail, Pony Express — and even the fabulous "Camel Corps" — by land, including also the graceful clipper ships and other sailing vessels, then the proud steam-ships and river boats, culminating in the electric telegraph.



But the steam railroad was talked about in California long before it became a reality. Railroads are not built in a day. The news-hungry American miners of the gold rush and beginnings of statehood found in them a favorite topic for camp-fire conversation. "Can the railroad ever climb the Sierra Nevada Mountains?" was debated back and forth, forward and backward, by the eager gold-diggers. No matter if the arguments were based on ignorance, or if engineering data were totally lacking, the argonauts were often vehement, pro and con; but on one basic proposition all were united — California *must* have better transportation, and better communication with "America!" The agitation will not subside till something is done about it!

Something was done — but that's a long story in itself. Congress was interested; explorations and surveys were undertaken "to ascertain the most practicable and economical route for a railroad from the Mississippi River to the Pacific Ocean." Ultimately the reports of these surveys appeared in twelve volumes, published by the federal government.

The account of the formation of the Central Pacific Railroad in Sacramento and of its sensational development has been told and retold. Only a single item need be interjected here — in important respects the "Big Four" (Stanford, Huntington, Crocker, Hopkins) should read the "Big Five," for the story is not complete without the addition of the name Theodore Judah, the first chief engineer. This brilliant young engineer, called by some the "crazy Judah," was the first to make a thorough and exhaustive survey through the Sierra Nevada Mountains. The "engineering wizard of the West" implemented his genius and originality with honest-to-goodness work and plenty of it, both in exploring the Sierra Nevada for practicable routes and in his earnest efforts in Washington, D.C. But ultimately some of his views were not in harmony with those of the Big Four — they parted company, and Judah, who contracted the dreaded fever on the Isthmus, came to his untimely death in New York, being still a young man in his thirties. For his contribution he has been too little appreciated.

The opening of the Civil War accentuated the importance of the Pacific Railroad from a military standpoint, as well as the political, and brought to an end the possibility of the southern route. Actual construction was begun at Sacramento, in 1863. Crocker, who rather boastingly declared, "I built the Railroad!", depended chiefly for his labor supply upon thousands of Chinese "coolies," imported for the purpose; Irish immigrants were the chief reliance for the labor force of the Union Pacific. The spirit of rivalry be-

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

tween the Central Pacific and the Union Pacific became more intense as the gap between West and East narrowed. A world's record for a single day was established on the 29th of April, 1869 — between daylight and dark Crocker's laborers laid 185 feet more than ten miles of track, a feat made possible by the incentive to win the prize money under the amendatory act of 1864.

At length, May 10, 1869, the gap was completely closed, West and East came triumphantly together at Promontory, 1086 miles from Omaha, 689 miles from Sacramento. It was decreed by joint Congressional resolution that at Promontory Summit "the rails shall meet and connect, and form one continuous line." That was a gala day in our annals — on a desolate spot in northern Utah. The highly dramatic scene enacted before several hundred witnesses has been described in minute detail by John P. Davis:

After the last spike had been driven, the Central Pacific train was backed up, and the Union Pacific locomotive, with its train, passed slowly over the point of junction and back again; then the Central Pacific locomotive, with its train, went through the same ceremony.

The "driving of the last spike" was announced simultaneously by telegraph in all the large cities of the Union . . . Business was suspended and the longest procession that San Francisco ever had seen attested the enthusiasm of the people . . . At the Eastern terminus in Omaha, the firing of a hundred guns on Capitol Hill, more bells and steam-whistles, and a grand procession . . . The ringing of bells at Independence Hall and the fire-stations in Philadelphia produced an unusual concourse of citizens to celebrate the national event . . .

Sacramento had ample reason to celebrate. Thirty assembled locomotives led the grand choir composed of all the bells and whistles of the city in what was described as "one prolonged demonstration of joy." This is the historic message in the telegraphic dispatch announcing the consummation: "The last rail is laid! The last spike is driven! The Pacific Railroad is completed!" In his commemorative address Governor Henry H. Haight spoke eloquently of the centennial celebration of California's settlement by the Spanish as "the crowning work of Saxon civilization, which links together in iron bonds the two great oceans of the world, and carries California at one bound into the center of the great family of nations."

The completion of the transcontinental steam railway marked the beginning of the end of the American frontier. The still numerous Indians were pushed to either side of a narrow strip crossing the great expanse of plains and desert, and two formidable mountain ranges. It was but a single railroad track of iron, but it was the beginning of the overthrow of the frontier, whose final annihilation

was compassed by the chartering and then the building of other great railroads to the north and to the south. After further vicissitudes and delays, five new transcontinental routes were open to traffic — the frontier had disappeared. In the words of Frederick Jackson Turner, "the first period of American history had come to its end."

It would not be difficult to show the relation between the completion of the Pacific Railroad and the American tradition of "Manifest Destiny," which — however vague and bombastic — was for decades a powerful factor in determining the course of our history. It called for the acquisition of California, it demanded continental boundaries for the American Republic, with Webster it proclaimed the unity and indivisibility of the nation. California itself may be thought of as a child of Manifest Destiny. By dint of the energy of the "Big Four" (or "Big Five"), criticize them as one will, even justly, the Central Pacific *was built*. It not only provided better transportation; it brought the West and East together; by its iron bands it pierced and destroyed the "Great American Desert," and helped preserve the integrity of the nation in its hour of greatest peril. It was a decisive event not only in California history, not alone in American history, but in the progress of the human race. Some pronounced the completed Pacific Railroad the "mightiest work of utility ever undertaken by man."

See Selected Bibliography, page 284



## Discovery of Oil as a Great Commercial Product



IN HIS RECENT VALUABLE BOOK, *California Through the Ages*, William J. Miller presents a brief but very lucid explanation of the creation and occurrence of petroleum. It is derived, Doctor Miller points out, from marine organisms that were buried in fine grained marine sediments (or muds) in past geologic ages. Some simple uses of petroleum in California date back to a time many long years before the first white explorers appeared on the scene. Crude oil, or asphaltum, served numerous purposes in a limited way among the Indians and later during the Spanish régime. As a single illustration of this use of asphaltum, we may refer to W. W. Jenkins who, with Sanford Lyon, at the instance of Francisco López, "visited the oil springs, from whence the Mission San Fernando took the oil in rawhide bags to the mission, where it was distilled for lighting purposes." The phenomenal deposits at Rancho La Brea had been known by Indians for centuries.

As the Indians had undoubtedly seen gold long before Marshall's discovery in 1848, so they had not only seen but had made some practical use of petroleum. But all this had no real significance from the viewpoint of modern industrial progress.

The fascinating history of the petroleum industry differs from that of gold particularly in that no single discovery of special importance can be pointed to in the case of the petroleum. The "event" must be given a much wider connotation, to include a group of related occurrences over a considerable period of time. When these are viewed together they constitute an event of decisive significance to the history of California. The discovery of oil may be likened to its own early appearance — inconspicuous seepages, gas emanations and deposits of asphaltum in different areas — attracting but little thought or attention. As to early beginnings, one writer thus expressed it: "There was no 'rush' to the 'diggings,' nor was the news sent round the world." But the same writer claimed that "it meant more to the world than the glittering particles that Marshall found in the tailrace at Sutter's Mill."

The first commercial oil well drilled in the United States, in Pennsylvania, bears the date of August, 1859. It was from this that the beginnings of the great petroleum industry sprang. The consequent excitement and early developments in the east focussed

special attention to the California seepages. About the end of 1863 the first oil company of the state was organized. During 1865 two other companies made their appearance. In that year a small quantity of refined petroleum was shipped in a sailing vessel down the San Joaquín River to Stockton, where it was sold for local consumption. Within a very few years thereafter knowledge of the widespread presence of oil became common property. Even so the frequently quoted statement of Professor Benjamin Silliman, a trained geologist, was subjected to no little criticism, that "California will be found to have more oil in its soil than all the whales in the Pacific Ocean."

In spite of the excitement, and the lively exploitation of "oil properties," however, and largely due to the lack of scientific knowledge of petroleum and its fabulous potentialities, the true era of "black gold" had not arrived, even though Lyman Stewart, one of the eastern founders of the industry, had come to California — later to become founder of the Union Oil Company, still later to be referred to as the "grand old man of western oil."

It was not until after the drilling of a well in Pico Canyon, not far from Newhall, that the first refinery of commercial importance was constructed, in the year 1876. In that year the production of crude oil in California was reported as amounting to 12,000 barrels. But the young industry received little encouragement from such scientists as Clarence King and J. D. Whitney. The only generally known use for petroleum was for illumination; early attempts at distillation brought disastrous results — the business had a bad name.

But in 1884 Lyman Stewart invested \$13,000 in oil properties, most of them located in Los Angeles County. It was well known that oil existed in many parts of the state, from San Diego to Humboldt; and in spite of discouragements, there was slow development because of the persistent efforts of a small number of larger companies. Another great name in oil appeared in 1892 — Edward L. Doheny brought in the first producing well in Los Angeles proper; it was not long till he and his associates had sixty-nine wells pumping, most of them in residence sections of the Angel City. Up to this time it may be said the industry had been "still in the stage of adolescence."

In reality it was the year 1892 that marked the beginning of the new age. A fever of excitement followed hard upon the acts of the dynamic Doheny. Quite revolutionary was the fact that petroleum had begun to be used as a fuel: before the decade ended the industry had become profitable. J. F. Elwood dug a shallow well

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

with pick and shovel near Bakersfield in 1899 — results proved sensational. His discovery set off California's greatest oil boom. The petroleum age had finally arrived — the industry had attained its majority.

Prominent among the personalities in its early development will always be remembered Lyman Stewart, Edward L. Doheny, C. A. Canfield, J. F. Elwood, Captain John Barneson and Thomas O'Donnell. It was during that final decade of the nineteenth century that the petroleum industry was getting its big start: the achievements of those years in summation constituted a decisive event in the history of California.

The unfolding story of oil reads like a fairy tale — though most fairy tales are too dull— too lacking in fantasy — to match it. For the year 1900 the oil production had leaped to more than four million barrels; but during the years immediately following the increase was so incredible that for the single year 1910 the total recorded production amounted to 77,697,568 barrels in California alone. That year marked the appearance of the most remarkable gusher on record, located in Kern County, which in a period of a year and a half shot 8,000,000 barrels of oil into the air. For 1929 the total production had jumped to the unbelievable amount of nearly 400 millions of barrels, valued at one-third of a billion dollars — approximately three-quarters of the combined value of California's complete mineral production. Even a glance at the actual value of gold production in the state, when compared to that of crude oil, yields startling results. The greatest recorded gold production for a single year — in 1852 — was valued at \$81,294,700; the value of crude oil for the year 1925 was \$330,609,829. The total value of all the gold produced until now drops into relative insignificance when compared to the billions flowing from oil.

While exploratory work in search of new oil pools is still being pushed with vigor in many parts of the state, the three main divisions of the producing fields have been: (1) Los Angeles basin, including, among still others, Santa Fé Springs, Signal Hill, Huntington Beach and Inglewood; (2) San Joaquín district, including Kern River, McKittrick, Midway-Sunset and Coalinga; (3) Coast fields, including Watsonville, Santa Maria, Ventura, Newhall and Summerland.

There is no need to attempt even a brief outline of the more recent developments of the gigantic, intricate petroleum industry, with its numerous auxiliaries and accessories. Its ramifications seem to have become almost infinite. However, it may be illuminating to make mention of certain relevant aspects and specific feat-



ures regarding the industry, which has attained an inter-related world-wide character, changes or technological advances being now instantly reflected in distant lands. Astounding progress has been made in the drilling methods, and wells are drilled to far greater depths than was formerly thought possible — one non-productive hole was carried to a depth of 21,482 feet. While there still remains a strong element of adventure and chance, the sciences of oil geology and petroleum engineering have yielded much new knowledge, enabling the initiated to avoid many a costly mistake. Improvements in methods of refining are constantly coming to light — refining itself being a gigantic industry, with its ever-increasing list of petroleum products, an amazing scene. The production of natural gas has attained enormous magnitude. The storage and protection of vast quantities of oil have their own special problems; and, closely allied, are the problems of transporting and marketing, both as to economic consideration and technique, involving fleets of tankers and intricate networks of piping. As a great natural resource, the residual supply remaining in the earth is a question for the statesman, who will also wisely consider the billions of tons of oil-bearing shale in California. He will be sobered by the reflection that one-half of all the petroleum consumed in all human history has been consumed in the last quarter-century alone! California leads the nation in the production of air-craft and the use of motor vehicles, and the chief fuel until now has been petroleum products. A momentous question for the future is this: will the ingenuity of scientists and the wisdom of statesmen, as the total supply of petroleum becomes depleted, enable us to switch smoothly to the common use of atomic energy and nuclear power, draw upon the ocean for future water supplies, and harvest the ocean itself for needed food?

These, and still other emerging problems give more than a hint of the decisive role of petroleum in the history and contemporary life of California. We must conclude that, speaking generically, the advent of oil has done much to transform — almost to revolutionize — our manner of life in a single generation; it must therefore be accorded a high place in the total annals of the commonwealth. As to the high place the petroleum industry, with its many ramifications, has attained in our modern life, these words from Cleland and Hardy are in point:

It is a truism to say that petroleum, as much as any other factor, is the controlling element in modern civilization and modern life. In the field of transportation it furnishes fuel for locomotives and drives great ships across the sea; it supplies power for automobiles

## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

and for the airplane wheeling in the sun; by its use man draws the four quarters of the earth closer to each other in his endless struggle to master time and space.

The industry has become a part of California's fabulous heritage; it "belongs to the state as naturally as gold and oranges and poppies and cloudless skies." If the historian were permitted to catch a glimpse of the future, he might discover that of the captivating story of petroleum in California the half has not even yet been told.

See Selected Bibliography, page 284

*(To Be Continued)*

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY —CHAPTER EIGHT

- Browne, J. Ross, *Report of the Debates in the Convention on the Formation of the State Constitution in September and October, 1849*; Washington, 1850.
- Cleland, Robert Glass, *From Wilderness to Empire* (Chap. 14).
- Colton, Walter, *Three Years in California*; New York and Cincinnati: Cleaves, McDonald & Co., 1850.
- Congressional Globe*, 1st Sess., 1849-50. (Vol. 22, Part I).
- Ellison, Joseph, (1) *California and the Nation 1850-1869*; Berkeley: Univ. of California Press, 1927. (2) "The Struggle for Civil Government in California, 1846-1850"; Calif. Hist. Soc'y. *Quarterly*, Vol. X (1931).
- Goodwin, Cardinal, *The Establishment of State Government in California, 1846-1850*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1914 (Part III).
- Hittell, Theodore H., *History of California*, Vol. II (Book VII).
- Hunt, Rockwell D., (1) "The Legal Status of California, 1846-1849," *Annals of the Amer. Acad. of Pol. and Social Science*, November 1898. (2) *California, an American Commonwealth* (Chap. XIX). (3) "1850 — A Year of Destiny," Research Lecture, Univ. of So. Calif., 1947.
- Scherer, James A. B., *Thirty-first Star*; New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1942.
- Tower, Grace E., "Sentiment in California for American Government and Admission into the Union." Hist. Soc. of So. Calif., *Annual Publications*, Los Angeles, 1925.
- Willey, Samuel H., *The Transition Period of California*; San Francisco: Whitaker and Ray Co., 1901.

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER NINE

- Bancroft, Hubert Howe, *History of California*, Vol VII (Chaps. XI-XII).
- Caughy, John Walton, *California* (Chap. 18).
- Clark, George T., *Leland Stanford, War Governor of California, Railroad Builder, and Founder of Stanford University*; Stanford University Press, 1931 (Chaps. IV-V).
- Davis, Winfield J., *History of Political Conventions in California, 1849-1892*; Sacramento: Pubs. of the California State Library, No. 1, 1893.
- Earle, John J., "Sentiment of the People of California with Respect to the Civil War." *Publications of the American Historical Association, 1907*, Vol. I.
- Eldredge, Zoeth Skinner, ed., *History of California*; Vol. IV (Chap. IV).
- Hunt, Rockwell D., *California, an American Commonwealth* (Chap. XXX).
- Kennedy, Elijah R., *The Contest for California in 1861*; Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1912.
- Records of California Men in the War of the Rebellion, 1861 to 1867*. Revised and compiled by Brig.-General Richard H. Orton, 1890; Sacramento: State Office, State Printer.
- Spaulding, Imogene, "The Attitude of California to the Civil War." *Annual Pubs. of Historical Society of So. Calif.*, Vol IX (1914).

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER TEN

- Davis, John P., "The Union Pacific Railway"; *Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Science*, No. 182; Philadelphia: American Academy, 1896.
- Haney, Lewis H., "A Congressional History of Railroads in the United States." *Bul. of the Univ. of Wisconsin*, No. 342, Madison, Wisconsin, 1908.
- Hunt, Rockwell D., and William Sheffield Ament, *Oxcart to Airplane*; Los Angeles: Powell Publishing Co., 1929 (Chap. VI).
- Judah, Theodore D., *A Practical Plan for Building the Pacific Railroad* (pamphlet); Washington, 1857.
- Lewis, Oscar, *The Big Four*; New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1938, 1941.
- Perkins, J. R., *Trails, Rails, and War*; Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Co., 1929.
- Riegel, Robert E., *America Moves West* (3rd edition); New York: Henry Holt & Co., 1956.
- Sabin, E. L., *Building the Pacific Railway*; Philadelphia and London: J. B. Lippincott Co., 1919.
- Warman, Cy., *The Story of the Railroad*; New York: D. Appleton Co., 1900.
- Wheat, Carl I., "A Sketch of the Life of Theodore D. Judah;" *California Historical Society Quarterly*, Vol. IV (1925).
- White, Henry Kirke, *History of the Union Pacific Railway*; Chicago: Univ. of Chicago Press, 1895.

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER ELEVEN

- Bailey, Gilbert E., *California, a Geologic Wonderland*; Los Angeles: Times-Mirror Press, 1924.
- California's Magazine* (single issue); San Francisco, 1915.
- California's Mineral Production: Annual Bulletin* (Beginning 1894).
- Caughey, John Walton, *California* (Chap. 27).
- Cleland, Robert Glass, *From Wilderness to Empire* (pp. 367 ff.).
- Cleland, Robert Glass, and Osgood Hardy, *March of Industry*; Los Angeles: Powell Publishing Co., 1929 (Chap VI).
- Hittell, John S., *Resources of California* (6th edition) (pp. 344-45) (Asphaltum).
- Hunt, Rockwell D., *California Firsts*; San Francisco: Fearon Pubs., 1957 (pp. 78-79).
- Latta, Frank F., *Black Gold in the Joaquin*; Caldwell, Idaho: The Caxton Printers, Ltd., 1949.
- Miller, William J., *California Through the Ages*; Los Angeles: Westernlore Press, 1957.
- O'Neill, Edmund, "The Development of the Petroleum Industry in California," in Eldredge (ed.) *History of California*, Vol. V (pp. 345-360).
- Willard, Daniel E., *Adventures in Scenery — A Popular Reader in California Geology*; Lancaster, Pennsylvania: The Jaques Press, 1942.



# Mining Camps of the Soledad

By Arthur B. Perkins

## PART II



AN FRANCISQUITO CANYON HAD BEEN THE “official” County Road since 1851. During the prosperous days of Soledad Mining Camp, the County apparently let a Turnpike Franchise to C. M. Benbrook & Co. The Toll Road undoubtedly eased some of the strain involved in getting traffic through the Narrows. The Franchise expired February 15th, 1870, and the Turnpike became part of the County road system.<sup>1</sup>

Opening the new year, Henry T. Hazard, later Mayor of Los Angeles, as Secretary of the “Los Angeles to Soledad Turnpike Company,” was advertising a stockholders assessment of \$1.25 per share.<sup>2</sup> This probably referred to the much talked about “road to the Pinerias,” a back door, much shorter route to Soledad Pass, which followed the approximate routing of today’s “Angeles Crest Highway.” Hazard was a strong backer of the project which was actually finally authorized in 1914. However, the authorization came too late. The changed status of Mint Canyon, through which the State Highway was then being constructed, siphoned off the Pinerias road appropriation.

The Mining Camp was dead, but not mining. Land Office records list several patent applications with familiar names appended, George Gleason, Sanford Lyon, Alexander DeWitt, George J. Clark, Christopher Leaming.

In May, a Ben Truman letter to the *Star* indicated profitable operation of the “Eclipse” and “Escondido” mines, the latter a venture of Andrés and Rómulo Pico.<sup>3</sup>

By 1871, Remi Nadeau was running 80 teams, 10 mules to a team, over the Soledad road to Cerro Gordo, and had 100 employees on the road.<sup>4</sup>

The Railroad announced its routing through Soledad Canyon

in 1872, and at this time the County formally recognized the Soledad road. No amount of money could overcome San Francisquito's natural handicaps as a road site.

Soledad was always a most interesting canyon. As a railroad route, it soon achieved notoriety for consistent seasonal "washouts" that distributed grades, rails and ties impartially over the canyon floor. At one time, four different sections of grade, paralleling each other, crowned by old ties, could be seen by the creek bed. It was just a lucky year that recorded no washouts. Finally the railroad gave up the expensive but futile struggle, and built the present grade well above stream bed, making lavish use of small tunnels.

That was the ultimate solution of County road troubles, although bridges have been lost almost before completion, by floods, within the past decade.

There used to be many mining mills along the Soledad creek, all of the way from Russ Siding to Soledad City, ruins of some of them still visible forty years ago.

John Lang developed "Lang's Station" at the sulphur springs, a one-time popular medicinal Spa, where he built a nice Hotel for his patrons. "In July, 1873, he killed . . . one of the grizzliest grizzlies ever seen on the coast, during an encounter that nearly cost him his life, before he finally shot him. The bear tipped the beam — forbid it that anyone should question the reading of the scales — at 2,350 lbs. . . . pelt was sold to Museum in Liverpool, England."<sup>5</sup>

This was the grizzly that terrorized the mountain area of the township for months. It was in Soledad today. Tomorrow it would kill a cow in San Francisquito. The next night, it would be terrorizing the farmers of the Bouquet.

While the railroad was building down the canyon, in 1875, Lang's Station was railhead for some months. Train passengers were staged from Lang's to Tunnel Station, on the San Fernando side of the hills, and re-embarked on the train for Los Angeles.

At Ravenna, "James O'Reilly, an Irishman . . . with reddish hair and a pug nose decidedly indented at the bridge . . . always slovenly . . . had a grocery, famed for a conglomeration of merchandise not at all improved by age and hard usage; this he sold to a none too fastidious clientele . . . cooked for himself, bragging he could throw a flap jack up the chimney and catch it outside the shanty on its flop . . . worked the New York and Parnell Mines, tribulations began . . . once ascribing debatable motives to a prowler he took aim — and shot off an ear."<sup>6</sup> As a mine operator, he was not too good. He may have acquired the New York mine by re-location in 1889. When the Gage interests took the property over, they

### *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

changed the mines to the "Governor" and were successful in their operations.

Tiburcio Vásquez achieved his notoriety in and around Monterey County. In 1873, after the Tres Piños affair, possibly searching for a cooler climate, Vásquez moved south, stopped for awhile at Elizabeth Lake, and moved from there to the Soledad, where for his last three years, he headquartered at today's Vásquez Rocks. His brother, Chico Vásquez, was then living at Soledad. Actually, Vásquez was not a bad neighbor. True, if you were a local rancher, your horses might be missing in the morning, or an equal number of worn-out animals grazing in your pasture. What of it? You could depend upon ultimate return of more and better stock, plus possibly a cash dividend from the transaction.

The nearby Mitchell ranch was exempt from these enforced but very profitable loans. As a matter of fact, Mitchell acted as a sort of securities' expert for Vásquez who could neither read nor write English. Gunny sacks stuffed with Bank or Mail robbery proceeds might land back of the Mitchell barn for examination and classification, separating the negotiables from the non-negotiables. Actually that was a mighty desirable act of Mitchell's as it avoided unnecessary destruction of documents that could only lead to the clouding of titles and the messing up of business by delaying check payments. Good or bad, Mitchell certainly had no choice in the matter — if he wanted to stay healthy and keep his ranch. Soledad was a long, long way from Los Angeles which couldn't protect its own citizens from highwaymen.<sup>7</sup> In 1873, Soledad was rather dull, and Vásquez may have been a conversation piece, especially his holdup of the Los Angeles and Owens River Stage Line, in February of 1874, and the Chávez attack at Willow Springs in November. Both Vásquez and his lieutenant, Chávez, terminated their careers in 1875.

In the canyon, a new industry was born and died. At Mill Canyon (originally Papermill), off Soledad, between Lang and Ravenna, a mill, designed to pulp and bale yucca was built. The product was shipped to Liverpool for use in paper making, but the end result was of too poor a grade for profitable operation.<sup>8</sup> Its failure was not too important (unless you had money invested in it) for the railroad construction crews were building down the wash. Possibly due to the near-by construction camps, the postoffice was re-established at "Ravenna," with Samuel Harper as Postmaster, December 17, 1875.<sup>9</sup>

In 1875, Paulson's Directory listed sixty-one male residents.<sup>10</sup> "At the head of the Santa Clara River, where is located the town



of Soledad, veins of gold-bearing quartz are being worked at a large profit. Copper-bearing veins are also numerous in this locality. The principal towns of Los Angeles County are Los Angeles, Anaheim, Wilmington, Downey City, Compton, Santa Monica, Soledad, El Monte, San Fernando, etc." 15 towns were listed.

Some of the names have individual interest. Could Borchard, the stockman, be progenitor of the Borchards of the Oxnard plain? John Lang is correctly listed as a dairyman. You have met the Mitchells. The family is still prominent in the township. J. F. Powell was the township Justice of the Peace for nearly forty years. He was first elected in 1875. The family would be prominent in Old Newhall affairs. Chico Vásquez was one of Newhall's earliest citizens. Dr. L. B. Lawrence must have been the first physician ever to practice in the area.

Only seventeen of the sixty-one men were ranchers. The rest were miners. Of course, the ranchers lived upon their ranches. The mining men lived in the vicinity of the mine prospects. A dozen cabins, some empty, couldn't have held sixty-one men plus families.

Soledad was thoroughly forgotten in 1876. True, the postoffice gained one "n" when its name was changed to "Ravenna." It didn't help. The office was discontinued January 30th, 1877.<sup>11</sup> The Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce failed to note, in their first publication supposedly covering the entire county, the existence of anything whatsoever north of the San Gabriel Mountains (the Santa Clara Divide).<sup>12</sup>

Quartz mining was now centered in the Cedar and Gleason mining districts at the head of the pass. As of 1880, the active producers included the New York, the Red Rover, and the Padre, on Mt. Gleason.<sup>13</sup> In 1889, the "Red Rover" was still working twelve men. E. B. Preston wrote "beyond Kent's Station the first quartz vein is near the mouth of Bear Canyon . . . the Providence Ledge . . . two miles further up is another . . . the mining district known as "St. George" . . . Recorder, G. Rehbert . . . Star of the West working."<sup>14</sup>

In 1892, W. H. Storms wrote "the Red Rover is the principal mine . . . other mines are the "Topeka," "Union," "Escondido," "King of the West" and "Santa Clara," each of which has seen better days . . . the first three have been large producers, now worked to water line . . . now a base ore proposition."<sup>15</sup>

In 1894, the "Padre," "Mt. Gleason," "Kelly," "Peerless" and "Casa Grande" were reported active. Down by Russ Siding, a small furnace had been installed to handle the ore from the nearby mag-

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

netite deposit. Abandonment of this project was attributed to the presence of titanium in the magnetite.

In 1895, eight quartz mines and three mills were active. At the "Red Rover," seventeen men were employed and the ten stamp mill was in steady operation. The "Buena," "Esperanza," "Cornet," "Eagle" and Whittier" were active.<sup>16</sup> The "New York" mine was acquired by the H. T. Gage Mining Company, and its name changed to the "Governor." When Gage worked mining properties, they were usually productive and profitable. These worked until about 1942, when Government wartime restrictions cut gold mining off, right at the neck.

Going up the Soledad Canyon with the *Travelers' Handbook* in 1904, one notes "three miles away is Placerita Canyon where hydraulic mining is still carried on" (if and when there was water).

At Lang, "not far from the Station is a group of ten white sulphur springs of great virtue" (At this date, it was "Slayton's ranch." Slayton was the railroad station agent). Ravenna was a "small village largely composed of Mexicans . . . log, sod and stone houses were the prevailing architecture." Acton was a "health resort . . . about 20 gold mines . . . many of them productive . . . gateway to resort on Mt. Gleason . . . Hotel Acton, rates \$1.50 per day or \$8.00 a week — F. E. West, Mgr." Vincent was a "way station, considerable farming, honey producing and mining."<sup>17</sup>

There was a different type of mining in Tick Canyon, just off the Soledad, where some 1200 acres was owned and operated by the Sterling Borax Company.<sup>18</sup> Their biggest year seems to have been 1914, when their deposit grossed a half million dollars. The camp was closed in 1922, many of its smaller buildings being moved down to Newhall for further use.

The original site of Soledad City was scenic and conveniently located on the creek banks. Unfortunately, quartz mining activity kept climbing upwards, as to altitude. The "New York" and "Red Rover" mines were two or three miles from the Soledad Canyon, and another two or three miles down canyon to camp. Miners drifted up the grade to be nearer their work. If you did not have a horse, you walked. An extra six miles a day traveling lacked humor. Gradually, cabins clustered at the new site, on the railroad, on the creek, and three miles closer to about everything.

Just who first called the new site "Acton," doesn't seem to be recorded. By December 13th, 1887, there were enough steady customers to warrant the opening of the Acton Postoffice.<sup>19</sup> Then the new brick grammar school was built, still the Soledad school in the

new location. Somebody put up a tourist hotel, the Hotel Acton. The first newspaper of the township came into being, the "Acton Rooster," which crowed valiantly for its habitat.

Today Acton is a scenic town, at the crest of Mint Canyon. It is just far enough away from Highway 6 to be restful, although plenty of cars come up the Soledad road.

### OLD NEWHALL

Difficulties attendant to getting over the Santa Clara Divide have previously been referred to. Their importance can hardly be overstressed. The divide might be said to be responsible for the development of two divergent cultures in the sparsely populated county which would last for seventy years. South of the divide, a rich agricultural economy was developing. The Los Angeles basin was beginning to be proud of its progress and cultural development. North of the divide was a primitive economy based upon livestock and gold dust. In the Soledad, Indian troubles were an ever present problem. The stages were pestered by highwaymen.

The divide was a veritable Chinese Wall six hundred feet high. It was a barrier reef cutting the Soledad Township off from the rest of the county. South of the divide, folks had no idea, and cared nothing about developments, if any, to the north. Merchants of the *pueblo* of course wanted any and all markets. The general public, generally speaking, had no knowledge of, and less interest in, anything that was happening over the divide. Probably many read of that area for the first time in the Truman and Clark letters to the *Tri-Weekly* or the *Star*. The hunters considered it the best field for hunting grizzlies, which can scarcely be considered a cultural achievement.<sup>20</sup>

The isolation lasted until 1920, when traffic began to filter through the Newhall Tunnel and up the well advertised scenic Ridge Route or the then new Mint Canyon Highway to the deserts. Thirty years more would pass before the Soledad would begin to catch up with the Los Angeles parade.

The divide helps to explain old Newhall's becoming a mining camp, instead of developing as a sort of manorial type of English village. Beale's Cut, of 1863, was a big step forward. After it opened, stage passengers hardly ever had to get out and walk up the still steep divide grade, or, frequently, get out and push. Insult added to injury when the driver warned passengers not to fall behind the walking group, because of the prevalence of bandits — or Indians.<sup>21</sup> Beale saved the freighting traffic from the mines, so important to



### *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

Los Angeles, by cutting a week's travel from the northern mines to the harbor.

The Railroad Tunnel "holed through" in 1876. Thereafter a passenger train and a freight train came daily down and through the Soledad. The stage lines quit operating. Soledad home folks must have missed their outside contact through those stages. The Ventura and Santa Barbara stages ran until 1886. Thereafter, only the Pico stage operated.

The motor age ended Beale's Cut. Grades and rocks made too tough traveling for motor cars in the early 1900's. By 1910, pressure from the rapidly growing motoring public substituted the Newhall highway tunnel for the cut. Its two lane width carried an ever increasing traffic volume, after 1920, for by then the Ridge Route and Mint Canyon roads were being paved and coming into general use. Before those roads opened, the motorist might as well have been on a dead end road, north of the tunnel. From 1920, the isolation of the Soledad became a memory. While it lasted, it had fostered personalities stemming from the Mountain Men. Not for nothing was Newhall later known as the "Last of the Old West."

Traffic increased constantly. In 1929, Highway 99 was built, aiding the traffic flow. It proved inadequate, and, in 1940, the tunnel, by then a terrific traffic bottle neck, was turned into today's open cut through the crest of the divide. In 1954 the Golden State Freeway connecting the Ridge Route, Sierra Highway, Foothill Blvd., Sepúlveda Blvd. and the San Fernando Road opened through the divide. Folks poured through the gap like water through a hole in a dam. Another decade, and all of the old placer fields will be covered with homes. Ratsburg is, and Placeritas is making headway. Sub-divisions, beautiful schools, parks and "city folks," attempting to escape from smog and traffic, will shortly submerge the past.

Today, in the Santa Clara Valley, just beyond the San Fernando Valley, between Highway 99 and State Highway 6, is the town of Newhall. It isn't the first Newhall, of which nothing is left. There was but little. Nor is it really the second Newhall of which remains only an empty square, and the long idle depot. The square faced Railroad Ave., between Market and Eighth Streets. In the eighties, it was called Main Street. The square was bounded on the east by the warehouses of the Pacific Coast Oil Company, which would become the Standard Oil Company of California; of Hardison and Stewart, shortly to join interests with T. R. Bard, in Ventura

County, and form the Union Oil Company; of the Newhall Land and Farming Company; and by the depot. Each projected heavily built loading platforms nearly to the rails.

The west side of the street was once solidly built with the false front, one story board and batt buildings common to mining camps. To the north was the Derrick Saloon. To the south was the town's glory, the Southern Hotel, finest hostelry between Los Angeles and San Francisco. The depot alone remains. Its cavernous freight room now houses vegetable packing devices, speeding up the running schedules of the big vegetable trucks.

Henry M. Newhall was a financial tycoon of San Francisco's great tycoon crop of forty-nine. His story was an Horatio Alger classic of rags to riches. He was one of eight children, living on a farm in Saugus, Massachusetts. In Saugus, one farmed in summer and cobbled in winter. That was the accepted pattern. It didn't please Newhall. He shipped out as a cabin boy, when thirteen. Thereafter, he was on his own. He didn't like a sailor's life either, so he tested life in Philadelphia, mastered the auction trade and, before his twentieth birthday, had his own firm, "Newhall and Baker," in Nashville, Tennessee.

In 1849, he profitably sold that business to join the gold rush. The rest of his life was spent in San Francisco, at the head of H. M. Newhall & Co., (at different times, different names) biggest and most prosperous of the city's auctioneers. In the San Francisco fifties, auctions were the accepted method of moving merchandise. Shiploads were auctioned by manifest, sometimes with ship included. The H. M. Newhall Co. advertisements in the *Alta* detail for sale practically everything: real estate, opium, dry goods, wet goods, or what have you.<sup>22</sup> The earned commissions of the city's most successful auctioneer must have been fabulous in amount.

In 1857, Mr. Newhall backed, by security or endorsement, a friend for some \$90,000. The transaction ultimately involved him in the building of the San Francisco and San José Railroad with Peter Donahue and Judge Timothy Dame, under a "turn-key," three year, \$2,000,000 contract. This was California's second railroad. Its tremendously profitable operation commenced in 1863. They controlled the best entrance route to San Francisco. Sale of the railroad in 1868 to the "Big Four" returned Newhall a reported net profit of a half million.

Loaded with money, pure velvet, and with faith in California, Newhall bought the Suey ranch, in San Luis Obispo and Santa Barbara Counties, the Piejo and San Miguelito grants in Monterey County, part of the Todos Santos and Santa Rita grants, in Santa

### *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

Barbara County and Rancho San Francisco, in Los Angeles and Ventura Counties.<sup>23</sup>

The Southern Pacific railhead was then at Caliente. Construction had started on the San Fernando Tunnel. As a railroad director, Newhall was fully cognizant of railroad plans, which included a townsite on the Rancho San Francisco. Across the crest of the San Fernando mountains, developed a whitish line, made up of canvas and dust clouds. Three camps were established on the projected route. From each camp, a 12 x 12 foot, 30° incline shaft was sunk to tunnel level. Plus the two portal camps, this made tunneling possible simultaneously at eight faces.

The tunnel cost over \$3,000,000 and daily presented problems to be solved by new techniques. The hill itself was a mass of slippery blue clay, sliding sands, saturated gravels.<sup>24</sup> The saturation was sometimes water, at other times oil. Slippage prevention alone necessitated nine steam pumps. Accidents and fatalities were high. Contemporary newspaper progress reports were punctuated with cave-ins, boiler explosions and mortality lists.<sup>25</sup>

Railheads always seemed to carry their "ragtowns" (businesses housed under canvas) with them. The tunnel was no exception. With a Chinese work force of a thousand and five hundred whites, the 1875 Directory, listing twenty eight names from Placeritas and Lyon Station, could not have been too valuable, after the 6,940 foot tunnel got under way.<sup>26</sup>

June 19th, 1874, a United States Postoffice had been opened in the general store as and at "Lyon Station." August 6th, 1875, the designation was changed to "Andrews Station," when Andrew Kraezynski moved the station a mile northerly for more convenient access to the coming rails.<sup>27</sup> Railhead moved down to Lang's Station, in the Soledad Canyon. From there, passengers were staged thru Beale's Cut to Tunnel Station, on the San Fernando side of the divide, and re-loaded on trains, or vice-versa.

There were personalized problems. "A group of Chinamen on Tunnel Camp, one drew pot, an opponent drew an eight-inch knife; party with pot drew out his mortal coil immediately thereafter."<sup>28</sup>

Sissen & Co. maintained a big commissary. Fifteen saloons are reported, just where located cannot be answered. 1876 enjoyed a very rainy season.

The Telegraph Line Stage from Lyon Station was upset while crossing the Sespe, Thursday morning . . . 2 bags of mail washed out and lost one, newspaper mail thoroughly soaked . . .<sup>29</sup>

The Santa Clara River and tributaries are so swelled by rain that stages from Los Angeles and Lyon Station failed to make connection



## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

with Ventura Sunday to Thursday . . . heavy driftwood along river banks.<sup>30</sup>

The name of San Fernando Postoffice, Los Angeles County, has been changed to "Tunnel" . . . bags of mail from capsized stage have been recovered, though very wet . . .<sup>31</sup>

Poles of both telegraph lines crossing Santa Clara river were washed out . . . new ones up.<sup>32</sup>

Rain Saturday night ruined road somewhere . . . Stages hours late.<sup>33</sup>

Mail route to Los Angeles discontinued . . . stock and large coaches transferred to Lyon Station . . . modification of time table so stage will leave Lyon Station immediately upon arrival of eastern mail . . . reaching here (Ventura) ten hours later . . . requiring night travel . . . County Supervisors of Los Angeles and Ventura Counties have agreed to considerably improve road.<sup>34</sup>

Road agents who got away with express box lately in stage robbery . . . were in Santa Paula, Sunday.<sup>35</sup>

Mr. Reese, who has contract for new stage stations Ventura and Lyon Station went up valley with large force . . .<sup>36</sup>

July 14th, 1876. Chinese in the railroad tunnel "holed through," automatically solving very serious problems of working conditions that had arisen as the tunnel sections lengthened. The first train passed through the tunnel August 12th.

September 5th, 1876, saw the driving of the Golden Spike, at a point near Lang's Station, in Soledad Canyon.

October 16, 1876, H. M. Newhall deeded 426.76 acres of land, adjacent to the tracks, to the Western Development Company, real estate subsidiary of the railroad.<sup>37</sup>

October 18th, the townsite of Newhall was opened, and November 1st, 1876, John T. Gifford, as Station Agent, opened the first "Newhall Depot" in a box car, side tracked at the mouth of the Soledad, townsite and station located at the junction of Soledad Canyon and the Santa Clara valley.<sup>38</sup> All traffic for placer or lode mining passed through or by the site, as well as the traffic for Ventura and the Coast.

How could the site be ill chosen? It was a true cross roads of coastal and inland routes. San Francisquito, Soledad, Dry Canyon and Bouquet placers and quartz mining camps converged at the site. Development of the Newhall Ranch, the old Rancho San Francisco, was promised. For the immediate present, there were stock ranches up, down, or around any of the neighboring canyons. True, slightly to the north, the scenery was slightly blotted with some sand dunes, lying between the Canyon of the Alamos (San Francisquito) and Castaic. There was some small scale successful oil production in the Pico Hills, but the oil business could never amount

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

to much. There was no future in petroleum. What would you use it for? You couldn't use a gallon of oil a year medicinally. Another five or ten gallons would take care of the lamps (and how they smelled, burning California oil!).

In sparsely settled Los Angeles County, a welcome might reasonably be expected for any new development, of any size or nature:

A new town has been laid out by the Southern Pacific Railroad near the mouth of Soledad Canyon called "Newhall" . . .

The town is situated at the head of the Santa Clara river and the object of its projectors is to tap the trade of our oil region and send it down the Santa Clara Valley to reach an ocean outlet at San Buena Ventura.

This move is calculated to divert from Los Angeles an important prospective trade and our people ought to awaken to the fact that they must do something more besides reposing in the fancied security of a superior geographical situation, or they will find other points on the coast successfully bidding for a commercial prize which ought to be theirs . . .

Within the past year, many successful developments have been made in that region . . . a character of oil far superior to that of the east is being refined from our flowing wells.

While Los Angeles has treated the enterprise of the men who have developed this important industry with neglect, the little town of Buena Ventura has given them a cordial and liberal welcome and is . . . now the center of refining works . . .

The Chamber of Commerce of this city should take immediate steps to counteract the effects that Newhall is intended to exert . . . secure to its natural outlet this important prospective trade . . .<sup>39</sup>

The railroad was busy building an honest to goodness depot in its new town. Mr. Newhall hired George Campton to act as Ranch Superintendent, and probably advanced the money for the building of Campton's general merchandise store.

The first shipment of oil from the refinery at Lyon Station was made, "50 bbls., and it is pronounced by competent judges to be equal to, if not superior, the petroleum of Pennsylvania."<sup>40</sup>

As the year came to an end, the Newhall-Ventura road was characterized as the "worst neglected piece of road in the state."

The litigious A. P. Moore, of Rancho Sespe, sued both T. R. Bard and Newhall for "fraudulently foreclosing mortgages on the Philadelphia and California Petroleum Company," in which concern Moore was a stockholder.<sup>41</sup>

Celebrating the New Year, on the 16th of January, 1877, the Newhall Postoffice, with George Campton as Postmaster, was opened, the office itself necessarily being in Campton's store.<sup>42</sup> The 27th,

the Ventura stage was held up, "three miles out of Newhall . . . Wells Fargo box taken . . . passengers contributed \$75.00 and three watches."<sup>43</sup>

There was some progress:

Stages between Andrews Station and Santa Barbara have dispensed with the old Wells Fargo and Company Express boxes, and have instead iron safes, with two locks, screwed down under the front seat of the stage, inside. The locks are manufactured in such a way that powder will not explode them, nor affect them in any way.<sup>44</sup>

May 10th, in response to petition signed by J. F. Powell and 47 others, Newhall School District was organized.<sup>45</sup> That action had nothing whatever to do with the new townsite, which was definitely not prospering. A Mrs. Harper, probably from Soledad, had put up a sort of boarding and rooming house. A chap named Wilson had a small saloon. Add a couple of board and batt shacks, you have the town.

Stage stations, now out of existence, included "López," or "20 Mile," near Mission San Fernando, "Lyon" or "Andrews," "More's" probably then better known as "Holland's" or "Hollandville." The stage line to Ventura alone was unaffected.

Taking away the 1500 man work force of the railroad tunnel must have left an unfillable gap. Many of the Chinese drifted into the nearby placer fields. Just north of Lyon Station had been the Chinese cemetery, decimated when the Tong fulfilled its contractual obligations of shipping all Chinese bodies to China for permanent burial.

The earliest railroad time tables show stations at Lancaster, Alpine, Ravenna (Soledad City), Lang and Newhall.

The general public, that it takes to make a town, had enthusiastically refrained from buying lots in Newhall townsite. From time to time, prospective lot buyers were brought to the townsite. There always seemed to be a sandstorm blowing. That would be that. Nobody bought. Nobody built.

By 1878, H. M. Newhall had had enough. He was not used to failure. It may have been the other fellow's townsite, but it had his name attached to it. It was impossible to sell wind and blowing sand.

So — again the railroad got a box car, stuck the telegraph instruments in one end, the Gifford family in the other end, and moved the box car three miles southerly to another side track. A new townsite got under way. Along with all the buildings, they also moved the name. The townsite became "Newhall," February



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

5th, 1878.<sup>46</sup> The name of "Old Town" stuck to the abandoned townsite for many years. On its time tables, the railroad called the old townsite "Kent." When finally the postoffice was re-established there, in 1891, it was called "Surrey." Not until 1915 was the post-office called "Saugus." Confusing, isn't it?

In the new location, both the flat lands and the rounded hills were covered with huge oaks. There was soil on the land surface, holding down the sand. Temporarily, the Giffords lived in their box car, while the old depot was moved and re-conditioned at its new location. There would be no chance of this "Newhall" failing.

Mr. Newhall was now 52 years of age. He had worked hard all of his life and accumulated great wealth. Probably it was as a hobby that he interested himself in his namesake town. He could afford any hobby, but he was unaccustomed to frivolous play. He had to be doing things. That was just what he did. He must have been a sentimentalist. The town bore his name. He had first met success in Old Philadelphia, when in his teens. Where he worked, the nearby streets bore these names, "Race," "Arch," "Chestnut," "Walnut," "Market," "Spruce" and "Pine."<sup>47</sup> Those were the street names of the new townsite. They still are. Incidentally, "Saugus" was the name of his Massachusetts birthplace.

One of Mr. Newhall's first jobs of permanency was the building of the Southern Hotel, to be the finest between Los Angeles and San José. During its decade, it was the center of the social, religious and economic life of the community. It opened in February, 1878, under management of Newhall's new superintendent, D. W. Fields.

Campton's Store had proved a big job for one man. The construction program started in 1877. During its course, the work crew lived under canvas. When practicable, Mr. Newhall himself was on "top of the job," also his 25 year old son, H. G. Newhall.

On the ranch, in 1878, five hundred acres was sown to wheat and barley which yielded 1,125 lbs. to the acre, considerably above expectations. Southerly from Castaic Junction was projected the "middle ranch." Barns, corrals, ranch buildings went up, close to the "Rancheria del Corral" camping place of Portolá's Sacred Expedition, under the shelf mesa that once held the *asistencia*. Here is was that Mr. Newhall, resenting the late starts of his men after breakfast, erected an eight sided sanitary establishment, which did away with waiting lines.

At Newhall, adjuncts to the Southern Hotel such as carriage sheds, livery stables, corrals and planted parks, took time. It was all worth while. Completed, the Southern had a reading room, parlour, a general store, large dining room utilized for the Saturday

night dances and an unbroken view of the beautiful oak covered rolling hills. It was staffed with Chinese.

The ranch itself now had under cultivation some 8,000 acres, at the upper ranch by the town. Over 6,000 tons of wheat were harvested in 1879. A further 4,000 acres, largely under irrigation, was planted to alfalfa. Grazing were about 1,400 head of cattle and several thousand sheep. H. G. Newhall had a personal additional acreage of 2,000 acres.

Near town, Sanford Lyon and Howe were farming 200 acres, just over the ranch line. John Mitchell had 600 colonies of bees in the Soledad Canyon. Most of the small local ranchers in the foothills and canyons roundabout stuck closely to dry farming, grazing live stock, and bees.<sup>48</sup>

In the town, J. O. Newhall, an eastern cousin of H. M. Newhall, opened a general store across Market Street from the Southern Hotel. This building may have been financed by H. M. Newhall, for at its occupancy the general store in the Southern gave way to D. R. Boynton's "genteel" Bar.

1879 was a big year. In March, the Andrews Station Postoffice was closed, its proximity to Newhall making it useless. A new school district was established at Sulphur Springs for convenience of the growing population thereabout of ranchers and stockmen of the canyon area.<sup>49</sup> On the northeast corner of Ninth and Walnut Streets was built the Newhall Grammar School, a gift from H. M. Newhall to his town. It was a two story frame structure, exceptionally good for that time. South of Campton's Store, on Main Street, Mike Powell built and operated his "Palace Saloon." The Derrick Saloon may have been built by Joe Leighton, at Eighth Street. Outside of Newhall's payroll, oil, in one phase or another, was the major contributor to the town's support.

A contemporary description of the new townsite calls attention to the "endless diversity of landscape, hill and dell constantly succeeding each other, the whole dotted with hundreds of venerable live oak trees — as beauteous in foliage and as stately in growth as the leafy patriarchs of many an English Park . . . but it is to the new proprietor that the San Francisco ranch owes its development; and to him alone the tiny settlement of Newhall owes both existence and continuance."<sup>50</sup>

Newhall was becoming a nice little town, precisely as its godfather intended. Streets around the square were dotted with small but comfortable little cottages, among them the Gifford's, Campton's, P. O. Newhall's, Powell's who had been presented building lots as inducement to move down from their Dry Canyon ranch

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

and bring the first Justice Court of Soledad Township with them. Earlier justices had represented Los Angeles Township. A few homes seem to have been built for employees by the Newhall ranch or one of the oil outfits which were increasing in number. Most of the store keepers lived in back rooms of their store buildings.

Daily monotony was broken by the arrival of the train — one each way a day — or the passage of the freight train, also one a day each way. The Ventura stage left from the Southern. There was also stage service to the oil fields in the Pico hills.

By and large, Saturday nights were the big nights. Lou Ledger has told in entertaining and uninhibited manner of the dances at the Southern — where, at least once, he collected a knife in his back, the work of a lady who felt slighted in the dance. Those dances brought together ranchers, stockmen, miners and oil workers of the township.<sup>51</sup>

At the election of 1880, Sanford Lyon was an unsuccessful candidate for County Supervisor. The Ventura road was still a problem. "Driver Butterfield got into the Santa Clara Creek on Saturday night last, while it was booming. The stage floated up and upset. The team went downstream and the lucky driver paddled ashore though the night was as dark as a pocket. One of the horses was drowned."<sup>52</sup>

It had rained. "At Newhall, over 8 inches of rain fell during the last storm, making over 12 inches for season."<sup>53</sup>

Newhall citizens seldom went to Los Angeles, unless they had railroad passes. As a matter of fact what could Los Angeles offer better than Newhall? When folks did go, they made an impression:

Mr. James Feore of Newhall returned home last night to complete arrangements to establish the Band of Holiness at that place. In this work, will establish a Band anyway, for he has engaged a brass band, a string band, and a contra-band to say nothing of the Band of Hope that grows indigenously in that part of the country . . . no collections to be taken.<sup>54</sup>

Mr. Feore, at that time was agent of the California Star Oil Works Company. The item indicates someone had had a very good time.

1882 was awful. Extreme drought forced sheep drives over tremendous distances. José López started with 17,600 sheep of Beale and Baker. 8,500 sheep survived the drive. Ruby Rivera drove 26,000 sheep to new grazing in Wyoming.

For the past few years, one of the commonest sights about the town had been that of Mr. and Mrs. Henry M. Newhall driving



behind a matched team of Spanish mules, beautiful animals, faun colored, with black ticking outline. To and from the ranch and thereabout, in and around the town, investigating, checking progress, planning new things that would make the town of Newhall a pleasanter, better place for folks to live; planting ornamental and rare trees, developing parks, new buildings, always something.

Mr. Newhall died March 13th, 1882. He had lived a wonderful life of achievement. He had married Miss Sarah Ann White in Nashville in October, 1849, just before joining the gold rush. They had three boys. After his wife's early death, he married Miss Margaret White, till then his sister-in-law. There were two more sons as a result of this marriage.

Testimonials included the Board of Trustees' of St. John's Presbyterian Church, the Board of Directors' of the Bank of California, and the Board of Directors' of the Southern Pacific Railroad. He had been an active member of the Howard Engine Co., No. 3, of California Commandery of the Knights Templar, the Royal Arch, the Masonic Blue Lodge and the Odd Fellows. He was a generous contributor to the Academy of Natural Sciences, and the Society of Territorial Pioneers. To his heirs had been left a most prosperous auctioneering and commission business, a large livestock business, much city real estate, and about 145,000 acres of California land. His estate was appraised at \$1,750,000.<sup>55</sup>

The Newhall family found it desirable to set up three distinct businesses, one to handle the commission (auction) business, to which was attached the necessary real estate and real properties; one for the holding and operation of real estate in cities and towns; one for the holding and operation of real estate in various counties. The necessary corporation, called the "Newhall Land and Farming Company" took over the management of the properties.<sup>56</sup>

How the town of Newhall came out, under the new management policies, may be inferred from the testimony of the late John Saunders:

I came in '78 for the Newhalls. They brought me down from the Suey ranch, in Santa Barbara County, and I helped haul the lumber for the old hotel.

Henry M. Newhall set out a row of elm trees down the present Newhall Avenue to the river, and he had a water wagon going down that line all the time. He died in '82, and they just turned cattle into the fields without protecting the trees.

The old man had great things planned for this valley.<sup>57</sup>

There were no further signs of interest by the Newhalls in Newhall townsite welfare for many years, unless for cash return.

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

The ranch was operated solely for profit. Even the wonderful oak trees that covered the land on the south side of the river were turned into charcoal for the Los Angeles industries (which is the reason the oaks around Newhall today are second growth).

They did not talk of ghost towns in the eighties. Maybe they were too common to notice. Locally, Lyon Station, Placeritas and Soledad had already blossomed and died. The little village was saved by a brand new industry. Then it was a first cousin of mining, rather puny, but destined to become the economic colossus.

This is the story of old Newhall, designed and planned by the late Henry M. Newhall to be a place for pleasant living, to be economically supported by planned natural developments, fostered by a god-father — one might have said “a Santa Claus.” At this point, the “English Village” idea became permanently derailed in favor of a typical California mining camp. Newhall’s story was thenceforth paralleled and interlaced with the discovery, development and utilization of oil, in all of its many facets.

Until comparatively recently, Newhall was always a mining camp. To a degree that might startle newcomers, it still is. Mining money, both oil and gold, carried the town through its first seventy-five years. During that time Newhall’s stores, businesses of any description, were dependent upon the trade of the oil men. Local ranchers were only able to exist because of seasonal payrolls at Pico, which paid off in cash weekly without regard to dry seasons. The gross income from both the gold miners and the ranchers could not support a village.

After Mr. Newhall’s passing, the large construction force theretofore maintained on the Newhall Ranch was no more. Old Newhall got a few buildings. The warehouses on the east of the square have been mentioned. There were two general merchandise stores, Campton’s and J. O. Newhall’s, some saloons and a few other small shacks. The Main Street frontage on the square was practically congested.

*(To Be Concluded)*

### NOTES

1. Los Angeles *Star*, Dec. 18th, 1869
2. *Ibid.*, Jan. 1st, 1870
3. *Ibid.*, June 4th, 1870
4. Ventura *Signal*, June 3rd, 1871
5. *Sixty Years in Southern California*, Newmark, p. 447
6. *Ibid.*, p. 475
7. Informant, Mr. Thomas Mitchell, of Newhall; for detail on capture of Vásquez, see Los Angeles *Herald*, May 16th, 1874
8. Ventura *Free Press*, Dec. 25th, 1875 — Los Angeles *Herald*, Apr. 18th, 1878
9. Archives of the Postoffice Department.

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

10. *Handbook and Directory*, see Note 26. The complete listing of Soledad names follows: W Stanley Arnold, Millwright — N. L. Apple, Carpenter — J. Atchison, Miner — James Barrett, Miner — J. W. Blanchard, Blacksmith — R. Blickensderfer, Civil Engineer — Borchard, Stockraiser — J. Burows, Laborer — José Bustamante, Laborer — M. A. Converse, Farmer — Jacob C. Toncres, Miner — Creviston, Miner — A. J. Vraine, Carpenter — Jacob Crusson, Miner — G. W. Donley, Miner — Henry J. Dull, Farmer — George Gibbons, Miner — George Gibson, Miner — Samuel Harper, Teamster — Samuel Harper, Stock — W. F. Henderson, Miner — Josiah W. Higgins, Printer — L. C. Huff, Farmer — W. Jameson, Laborer — F. Juarez, Mason — John Paul Kalka, Farmer — John Lang, Miner — J. Lang, Dairyman — D. J. LaRue, Miner — L. B. Lawrence, Physician — F. López, Ranchero — E. López — L. Marks, Merchant — J. D. McKean, Mechanic — T. F. Mitchell, Farmer — Thomas Mitchell, Stockraiser — J. P. Miller, Farmer — Francis Moore, Apiarist — G. Moulton, Mechanic — G. P. Newton, Miner — P. B. O'Neal, Farmer — M. Ortez, Farmer — F. Pina, Farmer — J. F. Powell, Farmer — M. A. Powell, Miner — J. Russell, Miner — P. Schneider, Blacksmith — J. W. Searles, Miner — A. S. Shaw, Contractor — E. M. Skillings, Teamster — G. Stevens, Miner — A. Taylor, Farmer — J. T. Taylor, Miner — J. M. Terrance, Laborer — Chico Vásquez, Stock — William A. Wall, Laborer — William Warter, Miner — J. Winters, Machinist — J. S. Wright, Carpenter — J. E. Yates, Miner.
11. Postoffice Dep't. Archives
12. *Progress and Advantages of Los Angeles City and County* by A. T. Hawley, Los Angeles, 1871
13. *Report of Calif. State Mineralogist* (1800-1882)
14. *Ibid.* (1889)
15. *Ibid.* (1892)
16. *Ibid.* (1895)
17. *Travelers' Handbook to Southern California* by George Wharton James, Pasadena, 1904, pp. 321-324
18. *Report of Calif. State Mineralogist* (1920)
19. Postoffice Department Archives
20. Unpublished personal letter Maj. F. R. Burnham
21. *Early Days of My Episcopate* by William Ingraham Kip, N.Y., 1892, p. 216. The reputation of the so-called Pass was horrible. See "By Ox Team from Salt Lake City to Los Angeles, 1850" *Hist. Soc. of So. Calif. Annual*, 1930
22. See advertising columns of the *Alta* such as Jan. 1, 1857, June 20, 1866, May 28, 1866, etc.
23. Newhall family papers in Bancroft Library, Berkeley, California
24. *Los Angeles Daily Herald*, Jan. 1, 1876
25. *Ibid.*, Nov. 28 - Dec. 2, 1875
26. Paulson's Directory and Handbook, see Note 10. The names listed under Lyons Station are as follows: J. G. Baker, Oil Refiner — M. Brophy, Stockraiser, 6 mis. west — Dolores Córdova, Farmer and Stock, Córdova Ranch, 5 mis. north — T. Drum, Tollgate Keeper, 2 mis. south — J. K. Ellis, Telegraph Operator — B. Gates, Stock, 4½ mis. west — Hancock, Laborer, 7 mis. north — M. Kraezynski, Prospector — A. J. Kraezynski, Hotel and Merchandise — C. Leaming, Mining Recorder — Joseph Leighton, Laborer, 7 mis. north — Lockwood, Laborer, 9 mis. north — A. Malezewski, Capitalist — James Marshall, Laborer, Temple Oil Wells, 7 mis. west — John Miller, Cook, Temple Oil Wells — Charles More, Station Keeper, More's Station, 6 mis. north — Scott and Baker, Refiners — D. C. Scott, Oil Refiner — W. H. Spangler, Sup't., Temple Oil Wells, 7 mis. west — William Wilkerson, Miner, 4 mis. northwest.
27. Postoffice Department Archives
28. *Ventura Weekly Free Press*, Dec. 25th, 1875
29. *Ibid.*, Jan. 22nd, 1876
30. *Ibid.*
31. *Ibid.*, Feb. 25th, 1876
32. *Ibid.*, Feb. 12th, 1876
33. *Ibid.*, Mar. 4th, 1876
34. *Ibid.*, June 17th, 1876
35. *Ibid.*
36. *Ibid.*
37. Records of Los Angeles County



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

38. Informant, Mrs. Mabel Gifford Taylor
39. *Los Angeles Evening Express*, July 6th, 1876
40. *Ventura Signal*, June 24th, 1876
41. *Ventura Weekly Free Press*, Jan. 25th, 1877
42. Postoffice Department Archives
43. *Ventura Weekly Free Press*, Jan 27th, 1877
44. *Los Angeles Evening Express*, Mar. 7th, 1877
45. Records of Los Angeles County Board of Education
46. Records of the Los Angeles County Surveyors Office
47. See map of "Old Philadelphia"
48. *History of Los Angeles County*, Thompson & West, Oakland, 1880
49. Records of Los Angeles County Board of Education
50. *History of Los Angeles County*
51. Informant, the late Mr. Lou Ledger. Mr. Ledger was foreman at the drying sheds
52. *Ventura Free Press*, Dec. 27th, 1879
53. *Ibid.*, Jan 3rd, 1880
54. *Los Angeles Commercial*, Mar 23rd, 1881
55. Newhall Family Papers, Bancroft Library, Berkeley, Calif.
56. *Ibid.*
57. Informant, the late Mr. John Saunders

### **ERRATA**

Author Perkins calls attention to two slight errors that appeared in PART I of this article, which appeared in the June, 1958, number:

On page 154 (line 17) the actual purchaser of the nugget was Cyrus Lyon, brother of Sanford.

On page 162 (lines 6, 15 and 24) the references to William J. Clark should have been spelled without the terminal "e."

# Book Reviews

THE NEWHALL RANCH — *The Story of the Newhall Land and Farming Company*, by Ruth Waldo Newhall. (Huntington Library, San Marino, 1958.) 120 pp., illustrated, end paper maps. \$4.00.

This is the story of Henry Mayo Newhall who rose from an auctioneer, with a starting capital of about \$300.00, in San Francisco — after spending fruitless weeks in the gold fields — to a fortune of three million dollars at his death in 1882. From auctioneering he branched out into railroading and spent ten years in that activity, selling out in the late sixties to the Southern Pacific Railroad Company.

Next his attention turned to the open ranges and by the end of another decade he had acquired 143,000 acres of black cattle land. With financial prosperity he built a large home in San Francisco and he became the father of a family of five boys. His early death in 1882, at age 56, left his large estate to his widow and the five sons.

The Newhall Land and Farming Company was organized and each son obtained 1,500 shares, their mother having 2,500. So the land passed on to the second generation. Ten years later each of three sons had five children and the original fortune now had to support 22 persons in five family establishments.

Quick troubles occurred in the first years of the corporation. Horses were raised in the early years for the best profits, other activities were not so successful. With several changes in management and the sale of much land to keep the coffers filled, the two older brothers passed on and the third generation was growing up. Oil became a factor in the company's fortunes. The Dam disaster of 1928 shook it noticeably and when Mayo, the last of the five boys, died in 1934 at the age of 80, following George's death, affairs had reached a bad stage. Happily, 1934 saw things on the upgrade. What was originally a business to support five boys and their mother now is shared by more than eighty people. In three generations the \$3,000,000 estate of the founder is now regarded to be worth, after all its sales and personnel changes, a similar amount. "The ranchos today, and the outlook for the future stand as a testimonial to the vision of a man who could see over the hills and into the fertile valleys beyond." — G. E. M.

## Book Reviews

THE STORY OF COMPANY L, "SANTA ANA'S OWN," by Charles D. Swanner. (Fraser Press, Claremont, 1958.) First edition limited to 1,000 copies. 90 pp., illus., end paper photographs. \$3.50.

The account, written by Lieutenant Swanner, tells the story of Company 'L' from its organization 68 years ago down to the present time. Several generations of the same families have served in Company 'L' and sons and grandsons of earlier members have appeared on the roster. The company has served through five war periods and two earthquakes. The photographs themselves tell the story of Company 'L' in action, service, in relaxation and in sports. Company rosters, at various periods, will interest all who have served or followed the fortunes of the company. — G. E. M.

LAKE TAHOE: *an illustrated guide and history*, by John and Ricky Warriner. (Fearon Publishers, San Francisco, 1958.) 60 pp., illus. \$1.75.

"And when before sunrise, we rolled out from under our blankets with the cloudless sky all around, it was to behold one of the most gorgeous sights in all wild nature, for there, a thousand feet below us, mottled in emerald green and azure blue, calm and unruffled, was Lake Tahoe . . . surrounded upon all sides with snowy mountains and shores fringed with . . . forest of huge pines, firs, spruce and tamarack . . . It was the first time I had ever seen it, and so unexpectedly, that its inspiration affixed in memory so glorious a picture that it will be retained to the end of time.' Though this was written in 1859, any traveler today will experience the same thrill."

The beauty of the lake is confirmed by many excellent photographs, and the physical characteristics of the locale, hotel accommodations and recreational facilities are also described. A discussion of the history of the lake and many historical photographs will be of interest. This book provides vicarious experience for those who remain at home and all the necessary information for vacationers.

— J. L. R.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE METROPOLITAN GOVERNMENT SYMPOSIUM — A compilation of all the papers read at the day-long *Metropolitan Government Symposium* held in Los Angeles on April 8, 1958. (Published by the State and Local Government Committee, Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce, 1958.) 114 pp., illus., with portraits of participants; appendix, including refold tabulation of *Services Rendered to Cities in Los Angeles County by Los Angeles County*; page size 6"x9"; paper cover. \$3.50.

One of the many civic functions of the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce is to receive and examine complaints, suggestions and ideas from the general public, and to sift them for their funda-



mental good and then to pass them on, let them pass away, or to take definite action.

The "high cost of government" is the most universal complaint that comes into the Chamber's Governmental Affairs Department. After many years of receiving this nearly universal complaint, the Chamber's *State and Local Government Committee*, chairmanned by James L. Beebe, took matters in hand to probe into the matter of "too much government, dispensing too much law through too many bureaus at too great a tax burden on the citizens of Los Angeles County."

Mr. Beebe's committee then, to bring these matters to public light, organized the *Metropolitan Government Symposium*. The roster of speakers obtained for the all-day meeting was imposing and authoritative. There were educators Dr. Winston W. Crouch, director of the Bureau of Governmental Research, *University of California at Los Angeles*, and Dr. Henry Reining, Jr., dean of the School of Public Administration, *University of Southern California*; there were Attorneys-at-Law James L. Beebe, Roger Arnebergh, *Los Angeles City Attorney*, and Harold Kennedy, *Los Angeles County Counsel*; there were Metropolitan Government Administrators Orvin W. Campbell, County Manager of the *Miami (Dade County)*, *Florida* experimental metropolitan government, and G. A. Lascelles, commissioner of finance for the *Municipality of Metropolitan Toronto*; representing *The League of California Cities* was Richard Carpenter, that organization's executive director and general counsel. In addition to these illustrious public servants there was Richard Winter, director of local activities for the *California Taxpayers' Association*. Each of the foregoing, except Mr. Beebe, who served as general chairman for the Symposium, were featured speakers at the event — which was attended by some 600 people — citizens and public officials. George B. Gose, Chamber president, Los Angeles Mayor Norris Poulson and County Supervisor Warren M. Dorn were scheduled at the luncheon session to extend greetings from their respective spheres of influence.

The text of this enlightening book is indeed food for the thoughts of all citizens who are concerned about the problems faced by governmental officials and taxpayers alike. To citizens who live in the complex of communities, towns and great cities that comprise Los Angeles County, this book brings great enlightenment to the causes of nearly unbearable tax rates. While the book, from speech to speech, carries the same theme and presents the same problems, common alike to Miami, Toronto and Los Angeles, the solutions presented vary with the laws of the three Metropolitan

### Book Reviews

Areas. Police problems, sanitation, health, safety, fire prevention and civic betterment all look the same on the surface but every problem in each one of the cities represented forces its own individual type of solution.

Examples pointed out and worth remembering were traffic and freeway-type arterial highways in Toronto; the adaptation of a new form of Metropolitan Government Constitution in Miami; and the "Lakewood Plan" in Los Angeles County. All these examples create problems of overlapping jurisdictions for corresponding inspection and regulation bureaus, police departments, fire departments, and tax collectors. In some instances speakers claimed (cautiously as is the wont of political office holders) that their solutions were the right solutions; others stated they thought their solutions were proper; while some were admittedly still experimental.

One thing definitely is pointed out in the *Proceedings*: there are too many "policemen," wearing the cloaks of inspectors, regulators and bureaucrats, on the public payrolls enforcing too many duplicated and, in this reviewer's opinion, unnecessary edicts, codes and regulations.

Whether the solution to all the problems-in-being of towns growing into cities and cities, in Los Angeles County, growing into each other, is one super metropolitan government over all, or whether our *status quo* of many small city governments is better, was left for the listeners (and the readers of the *Proceedings*) to decide.

In this book of 114 pages two outstanding quotations are well worth remembering:

The first is from Mr. Kennedy's speech. He issued the ultimatum: "We must choose between Metropolitan Government and taxation disaster!"

But Richard Carpenter, who was the selected citizen-taxpayer representative on the panel, answered the ultimatum on super-government by saying, in effect, "You have to show us more governmental efficiency at less cost before we, the taxpayers, will buy."

This book, "*Proceedings of the Metropolitan Government Symposium*," is well worth reading and should be in every library.

— I. L. M.

## *Activities of the Society*

July proved to be a quiet month with our minds turned toward September 4, the City's Birthday, the Butterfield Stage Caravan arrival on October 7, and the approaching Diamond Jubilee Celebration of our Society in November.

### MEETING OF MEMBERSHIP COMMITTEE

Pursuant to a call sent out to Director Carver's Membership Committee an almost full attendance gathered at headquarters on August 27. Complete cooperation was pledged by all to help set up and operate the booth of the Society on September 4 at the City's Birthday Celebration at the Plaza.

### LOS ANGELES BIRTHDAY CELEBRATION

At about 1:30 p.m. two station wagons left headquarters with exhibit materials, decorations, QUARTERLIES, et cetera, for the booth at the Plaza and by 2:30 p.m. operations were well advanced with the 16'x12' booth decorated, exhibits installed, the "Builders of Los Angeles" Plaques and Picture Panel having the best locations at left and right of the motion picture screen. All the material to be distributed was neatly arranged and the schedule of hours when committeemen and women would report was posted. The blue and gold scheme of decoration enlivened the scene. Lights were attached and all stood in readiness for the evening. President Arlt, in spite of his other duties, was much in evidence, showing great interest in the booth. The program of showing the slides and motion pictures started as soon as darkness fell. Hundreds of people and well-wishers came to see the pictures shown by Miss Ruth Mahood of the County Museum on the "Dioramas of the Museum"; Mr. Ed Hughes of the City Public Schools on the "Portolá Expedition," "Spanish American Heritage" and the "River in 1880"; and Mr.



## Activities of the Society



### LOS ANGELES CELEBRATES 177TH BIRTHDAY

*Dr. Gustave O. Arlt, president of the Historical Society of Southern California and general chairman of the Los Angeles Birthday Fiesta Committee, is shown here with Miss Jeanne Cagney as they left the old-time Southern Pacific steam train which conveyed the official party to the Old Plaza for the Birthday festivities.*

Ralph Hill of the Title Insurance and Trust Co. exhibiting a set of slides "Yesterday — Early Los Angeles Scenes."

Society members who served during the evening were: Chairman and Mrs. K. L. Carver. Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Northrop, Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison, Mr. and Mrs. Ernest Yorba. Joseph LaBarbera, Mrs. Thomas Workman, Mr. and Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman, George S. Swartz, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Mr. and Mrs. George S. Moffatt and Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion.

Those who signed the great register were Society members, guests and strangers from far and wide who visited the booth. The general comments of all were pleasing and many, after looking over the City Seals, rancho maps and our own publications, indicated their intention of joining our membership. More than 800 specially printed brochures descriptive of the Society were passed out during the evening.

Members and visitors who signed the register at the Booth were:



### HISTORICAL SOCIETY PARTICIPATES IN BIRTHDAY CELEBRATION

*Slide picture shows ran throughout the evening of September 4, 1958, in the Society's booth at the Old Plaza civic celebration of the City's 177th Birthday. The top photo shows a large group gathered around the booth watching one of the exhibits of slide pictures. The lower photo shows three Society members with the three people who alternately exhibited their slides. From left to right in the photo are: Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman; Mrs. K. L. Carver, Exhibitors Ralph Hill, Title Insurance and Trust Company; Miss Ruth I. Mahood, Chief Curator of History, Los Angeles County Museum; Ed Hughes, Los Angeles City Schools; and Mrs. Thomas E. Workman. Mesdames Chapman, Carver and Workman were among the eighteen Society members who manned the booth, which entertained some 800 people during the evening.*



\*Mr. and Mrs. Ernest J. Yorba  
 \*Mrs. Jean Hall Giles  
 \*Mr. Joseph LaBarbera  
 \*Mr. John W. Snyder  
 \*Mr. and Mrs. K. L. Carver  
 \*Mr. and Mrs. J. M. Northrop  
 Coby, Larry and Gary Northrop  
 \*Mrs. Thomas E. Workman  
 Mr. Thomas E. Workman, Jr.  
 \*Miss Ruth I. Mahood  
 Mrs. G. E. Ramey

Mr. Jack V. Jeffers  
 Miss Billie Howard  
 Mr. and Mrs. Otto Elselnach  
 \*Miss Mame E. Goodell  
 Mr. Larry Duncan  
 Miss Augustine Ott  
 Miss Adelaide Vadala  
 Mr. B. C. Krug  
 Miss Goldie Smith  
 Mrs. Florence Mayer  
 Mr. Wayne E. Peckett

\*Members of the Society



## *Activities of the Society*

Miss Anna Creason	Mr. Ralph J. Hill
Mr. Irwin Dempster	Mr. George C. Brimiger
Mrs. Rose Verdugo Olson	Mr. William M. Kimball
Mr. Oscar W. Olson	Miss Mary L. Sawyer
Miss Gladys E. Monlo	Miss Alfreda L. Clarke
Mr. and Mrs. Floyd Wohlwend	Mr. Jose Elias Pacheco
Mr. and Mrs. Mike Schuller	Mr. Pat Sullivan
Miss Hilda Garcia	Mr. Rex L. Baer
Mr. Manuel Guerrero	Mr. Robert Kimball
Mr. Signe L. Jenison	Mr. and Mrs. J. A. Main
Miss Grace L. Thorman	Mr. Eladio M. Pesqueria
Mr. Edw. H. Both	Miss Irene McKibben
*Mr. Frank B. Putnam	Miss Ethelwynne Fraisher
Mrs. Margaret Gilbert Higgins	Miss Gloria Leon
Mrs. C. J. Martin	Mr. and Mrs. Fred Garcia
Mrs. Robert M. Parker	Mr. Morris Schechter
Miss Helen Dusenberry	Mrs. Jewell Garver
Mr. George F. Shipley	Miss Donna Hartshorne
Miss Ruth Hughes	Mr. George Watson
Mr. Ramon Rodriguez	Mr. Thano Schermerhorn
Miss Florence E. Neill	Miss Cheryl Parker
Mr. H. M. Hamilton	Mr. and Mrs. Charles W. Clark
Mr. Claiborne M. Sanders	Mrs. Olga V. Wells
Miss Clara M. Schmatzer	Mr. Nicholas Kudosh
Miss Evelyn Collins	*Mr. Thomas Q. Lempertz
Miss Ruby Hermanson	*Mr. Frederick W. Nelson
*Mr. and Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman	Miss Mae Darling
Miss Ruth M. Copeland	*Mrs. Kate Darling Chapin
Mr. Richard L. Ryder	Mr. Theodore Chapin
Miss Virginia L. Chapman	Mr. Daniel M. Maher
Mr. Joe Silver	Mr. Robert T. Kettle
Miss Mary Speck	Mr. Jesus Juarez
Miss Thirza Schenk	*Mrs. Martha Gristock
Miss Jennie Passarelli	*Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison
Mr. Armand Kevin	*Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion

### *San Gabriel Mission Reception, September 7, 1958*

By invitation from Gabriela y Tomas Workman Temple, II, to attend the annual reception of the *Pioneer Families at the Mission in San Gabriel*, several Society members attended. The affair was very cordial and the musical entertainment was most pleasing, both orchestra and the Bob Mitchell Boys Choir. The Fiesta Queen, with her attending Princesses, added much to the occasion. Governor and Mrs. Goodwin Knight were special guests and the Governor spoke at some length about the religious background of this section of the country and how it influenced our present society. Two of our directors were present and several of our members from Pasadena and Los Angeles. It was a very charming occasion and the "*Patio de los Padres*" made a pretty scene. Father Michael Montoya gave a special greeting to the *Sons of the Immaculate Heart of Mary* (The Claretian Fathers) on this the Fiftieth Anniversary of their coming into his parish. This reception was in memory, at the 187th anniversary, of the founding of *San Gabriel Arcangel Mission* on September 8, 1771.



## *Gifts to the Society*

*In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.*

*The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.*

*Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.*

MARCO R. NEWMARK,  
*Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests*

LOS ANGELES CHAMBER OF COMMERCE: 1. (*As received from Clara Nelson Raab of Riverside*). Book of Coupons, No. 253088, used at Solomon's Penny Dance de Luxe, dated 1915 with 10 unused coupons. Solomon's and the United Loan and Jewelry Co. at 517 S. Main St., advertising in the cover, no longer exists. 2 (*As received from Mrs. H. L. [Frances Barrow] Jackson, Bowdon, Georgia*). An old tourist folder covering the "Balloon Route Excursion" (published about 1910 at 429 South Hill Street) which she obtained during a visit here that year.

STREETER BLAIR: A letter received by packet at Boston from Ireland in 1828. Written to a relative. (Forwarded by Los Angeles County Museum).

MRS. JOSEPH M. NORTHROP: 1. Program at dedication of William S. Hart Park, Newhall, September 20, 1958. 2. Copy of "Noticias" published by Santa Barbara Historical Society, August, 1958.

HARRY J. VOLK: Pamphlet "*Growth Pattern: the Dynamic Los Angeles Metropolitan Area*," by Robert R. Dockson (1958 edition). An economic study replete with charts, photographs and map.

## New Members

The President and Board of Directors take this opportunity to introduce the new members who joined the Society between July 1 and August 31, 1958, and to extend to them a cordial welcome.

### LIFE MEMBERS

<i>New Members</i>	<i>Proposed by</i>
MARY M. BAGLY .....	<i>Carver, de Packman</i>
FRED H. BIXBY .....	<i>Transferred from Active Membership</i>

### SUSTAINING MEMBERS

MR. AND MRS. JOHN J. TUTTLE .....	<i>Carver, de Packman</i>
-----------------------------------	---------------------------

### ACTIVE MEMBERS

WM. E. BLOOMFIELD .....	<i>Carver, Putnam</i>
JANET F. BROWN .....	<i>Carver, Ducommun</i>
JAMES S. CANTLEN .....	<i>Marion, Wright</i>
MRS. THEODORE CHAPIN .....	<i>Carver, Ducommun</i>
MR. AND MRS. FRED W. CLELAND .....	<i>Forsythe, Marion</i>
MRS. THELMA CRAIN .....	<i>Carver, Forsythe</i>
PAUL M. DEFALLA .....	<i>Directors</i>
GEORGE A. V. DUNNING .....	<i>Marion, Wolfskill</i>
MRS. AUGUSTA ENVOLDSEN .....	<i>Mr. and Mrs. Hager</i>
MRS. B. R. FORSYTHE .....	<i>Carver, Marion</i>
MAME E. GOODELL .....	<i>Directors</i>
JOAQUIN HERNANDEZ .....	<i>Arlt, Menton</i>
DR. MARTIN L. KRIEGER .....	<i>Marion, Peplow</i>
MR. AND MRS. O. D. LAND .....	<i>Marion, Morrison</i>
ERNEST G. MCCABE .....	<i>Marion, Morrison</i>
MRS. FRANK MELLUS .....	<i>Carver, de Packman</i>
JOHN J. O'MELVENY .....	<i>Carr, Clarke</i>
MRS. DIANA PEPLow .....	<i>Marion, de Packman</i>
CHARLES D. SWANNER .....	<i>Carver, Putnam</i>
MISS ADA M. YOUNG .....	<i>Bixby, Krythe</i>
MR. AND MRS. RICHARD ZOBELIN .....	<i>Carver, de Packman</i>

### INSTITUTIONAL MEMBERS

LOS ANGELES CITY COLLEGE  
BOWERS MEMORIAL MUSEUM

RIVERSIDE DAILY PRESS  
MT. SAN ANTONIO JR. COLLEGE

## *Notes from the Secretary*

### HONOR TO MARY E. FOY

As indicated in our June issue that Miss Foy was about to have a birthday in the nineties, July 12 found her at age 96 with the whole city taking note of it.

Mary Foy is a native daughter, born where the Los Angeles Terminal Annex now stands and moving to the residence at the corner of Seventh and Figueroa where the Statler-Hilton Hotel now occupies the site of her old home. She grew up here and graduated from the high school on Pound Cake Hill. Hardly had her school course been finished when Mayor Toberman offered her the post of first woman librarian for our city. She put in four years at the library and Charles F. Lummis, a later librarian, said of her "Miss Foy was the first person in this city to grasp the privileges and responsibilities of librarianship. So far as actual interest and use go, perhaps this public institution never had a more useful activity than it had in the hands of one who was a girl graduate from Los Angeles High School of that day." High praise indeed of her public service to our city.

On July 12 her present home at 1706 S. Menlo Avenue was overflowing with cards, wires, gifts and birthday cakes. As her own rule for successful living she says, "Keep mentally stimulated and keep the brain busy." If she follows the old Mexican soothsayer, who once said she would live to be 125, we may have many more years in which we can congratulate and honor her. Her cousin, Mrs. Ella Foy O'Gorman, also 96 years of age, screens the well-wishers and acts as her protector. Long live Mary Foy!

### OUR SOCIETY LIBRARY

Our library is now classified, catalogued and shelved. During recent months we have gone over our library — that is, so much of it as was available and not packed away in storage, and we have made a card catalog of all our active books and pamphlets. It looks



### *Notes from the Secretary*

good to see the books all numbered and re-arranged on the shelves and the pamphlets stored. This has been accomplished through the services of Miss Judy Rose of U.C.L.A. and U.S.C. who came to us last fall and stayed till August 15th last. The 3x5 card catalog, made up of mostly Library of Congress printed cards, along with certain items not available in Library of Congress cards, which she made here in the office on our typewriter, has already proved to be a real help. We can now check many subjects, authors and titles in the day's work as questions arise demanding research or letters arrive from parts far away seeking California information. This new aid should make our work much speedier, broader and more effective.

Miss Rose, whose reviews you have already read, signed J. L. R. in our Quarterly, was a real helper in our daily program — cooperative, accurate and good-spirited in all she did. Besides her work on the library she wrote all the letters of the secretary, made out record cards of individuals, filled orders for back numbers, and generally helped on all the office routine where necessary. She saw to it that new members joining from time to time received the Quarterlies to which they were entitled.

When we get new headquarters, and can get at the old records in storage, more cataloging will be in order and it will be possible to have the best historical library in this part of the state, replete with books, pictures, manuscripts and whatever goes into a successful library. This is our aim and with increased efficiency we believe added support will be forthcoming from our members.

### GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY

Long thought of as Mr. Newmark's special function the gift program will bear a little more thought. More gifts of a historical character should constantly pour in from members and friends of the Society. Have you looked over your attic recently? Or are attics a thing of the past and not really Californian in character? Perhaps our appeal should be to garages. Every garage has a few old shelves which might be looked over for items you no longer wish to house and yet do not want thrown away. Here is where you should think of your Society and at least give it a chance to be the repository for such things. In new quarters many items can be displayed to advantage and will help to create a real lively interest in our history. Remember that what may seem trivial to us today will be

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

history to the folks of fifty years from now. We should assume the responsibility for preserving that history.

### PUBLISHING ACTIVITIES

During recent months our Publications Committee has been expanded by the addition of more members, two sub-committees have been appointed, one editorial in purpose, the other publishing, to handle the business end of the different books to be published. Soon you will learn of new plans to be set in motion. Watch for the new moves.

### THE COMPLETE HAGER BIBLIOGRAPHY

As soon as this first item in our publishing program will be published we shall have a tool of reference on Southern California history, the like of which has not been available heretofore.

Imagine abstracts of every article we have ever published in seventy-five years, all combined in a fully indexed bibliography which can be bought in one volume. Mr. and Mrs. Hager of San Pedro have done the work to make this possible. Soon the Bibliography will be on sale. All hail to the Hagers! Think what this book will do for our completed set of bound volumes.

### OVERLAND MAIL CARAVAN

As we prepare these notes one subject seems to be foremost, namely, the Butterfield Stage Caravan celebrating its first visit 100 years ago when it arrived at the Bella Union Hotel, October 7th, 1858. This old hostelry was located on Main Street, north of Commercial. The caravan had its "corral" for Los Angeles in front of the Terminal Annex Post Office and a short program for the public was held from 7 to 9 p.m. The next morning the Caravan moved on to San Fernando Mission, Fort Tejón, Bakersfield, Porterville and on to San Francisco where the celebration ended October 10th. When you read this item, the Caravan will have come and gone but you may add to your philatelic collection an envelope bearing the Butterfield Stage cachet. And you may have enjoyed the view of the Caravan, its first Highway Post Office, the blacksmith shop, the Caravan chapel, the stage coach, oxen and other historical features of note.

## *Notes from the Secretary*

### OUR OWN SET OF SOCIETY PUBLICATIONS INCOMPLETE

Will some of our older members who have the earlier issues available in their bookcases, or elsewhere, come to the rescue of headquarters and fill up some of the gaps in our office set? Then we can have the whole set bound, volume by volume, and be able to serve all inquirers who want something in our old *Annals* and *Quarterlies*. Here are some of the copies badly wanted:

Year	Vol.	Part	Year	Vol.	Part
1884 .....	1	1	1937 .....	19	2
1886 .....	1	2	1940 .....	22	1
1887 .....	1	3	1940 .....	22	2
1888-1889 .....	1	4	1941 .....	23	2
1890 .....	1	5	1947 .....	29	1
1891 .....	1	6	1948 .....	30	1
1893 .....	3	1	1948 .....	30	2
1894 .....	3	2	1949 .....	31	1-2
1895 .....	3	3	1949 .....	31	4
1932 .....	15	2-3	1950 .....	32	1
1933 .....	15	4	1950 .....	32	4
1935 .....	17	2	1952 .....	34	2
1935 .....	17	3	1952 .....	42	2
1935 .....	17	4	1952 .....	34	4
1936 .....	18	1	1953 .....	35	4
1936 .....	18	2	1955 .....	37	2
1936 .....	18	3-4	1956 .....	38	1
1937 .....	19	1	1957 .....	39	2

With the whole set complete and barred from future borrowings, we can give better service.

### OTHER NOTES

“First Ladies” — Does this subject appeal to you? Read about Ellen Murphy Weber, Stockton’s first lady in the *Pacific Historian*, Volume II, No. 3, August, 1958.



EDITOR'S NOTE

This issue of the QUARTERLY is different from all other issues that have gone before it. We believe that you will like it and the stories and articles it contains. In that belief, we have had extra copies printed for those members of the Society who wish to have them for gifts to other members of their families and friends. The price is \$2.00 per copy to members of the Society; \$3.00 per copy to non-members of the Society. They may be ordered from Guy E. Marion, *Executive Secretary*, THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA, 1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California.

# PUBLICATIONS

*of the*

## *Historical Society of Southern California*

1909 South Western Avenue. Los Angeles 18, California  
Telephone REpublic 4-2823



1892 — Annual Containing the Suto  
Documents with translations . . . each \$3.00

1931 — One Hundred Fiftieth Anni-  
versary Special Publication  
(Annual for 1931) . . . . . each \$5.00

All other numbers of Annual  
Publications . . . . . each \$2.50

A limited number of sets of Annals  
(1892 - 1934, inclusive) are  
available . . . . . per set \$75.00

These sets do not include An-  
nals for 1895, 1924 or 1933,  
which are out of print.

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
members . . . . . per run \$8.00

Individual single numbers to  
members . . . . . each \$2.00

Individual double numbers to  
members . . . . . each \$3.00

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
non-members . . . . . per run \$10.00

Individual single numbers to  
non-members . . . . . each \$3.00

Individual double numbers to  
non-members . . . . . each \$4.00





December, 1958

Vol. XL — No. 4

1883 — Celebrating Our — 1958  
DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY YEAR

*The*

*Historical Society of Southern California*

# QUARTERLY



— From the Arthur B. Perkins collection

## PICTURE OF A PLAQUE

(See "Mining Camps of the Soledad"  
by Arthur B. Perkins — Page 373)

**T**HE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA was organized in 1883, and has enjoyed a record of continuous activity for three-quarters of a century. Commencing in 1886, and each year until 1935, the Society issued an Annual Publication. In 1935 the *Quarterly* was initiated. It is published each March, June, September and December.

It is the aim of the Editorial Board to make the *Quarterly* a publication of general historical interest. Suggestions and criticisms are always welcomed, and all persons, whether members of the Society or not, are invited to submit for the consideration of the editors original articles, old letters, documents, maps and other material bearing upon the history and development of this region.

*The Society's Purposes and Objectives are:*

- To sponsor and encourage observances of historic dates and anniversaries;
- To preserve and protect the archives and historic sites of the Southwest with particular stress on Southern California;
- To assist in the marking and restoration of landmarks which inspire interest and respect for events, persons and customs of the past;
- To promote activity in the conservation of public records, historical documents, newspapers, museum material and related Californiana;
- To preserve, as an aid to business and industry, business records, industrial and transportation history and the use of historic material in public relations;
- To encourage the increased use of history in the schools, to the end that there shall be developed a greater interest in, respect for, and loyalty to our American institutions;
- To publish material of permanent historic interest and significance;
- To assist and encourage all persons and organizations engaged in similar activities;
- To hold regular monthly meetings in Los Angeles (except during the summer months) at which persons of recognized authority in their respective subjects appear as guest speakers, followed by refreshments and a social hour;
- To gather at least once each year in a pilgrimage to some spot of historic significance.

*This Society is a public non-profit corporation. The principal sources of revenue for its operations and maintenance are from membership dues, contributions and bequests. It renders a needed public service and is worthy of your support.*

**MEMBERSHIP CLASSIFICATIONS:**

*(Dues include one subscription to the QUARTERLY)*

<i>Life Member</i> .....	\$200.00	<i>Sustaining Member</i> .....	\$ 25.00
<i>Patron Member</i> .....	100.00	<i>Active Member</i> .....	10.00

*Membership dues and contributions to the Society are deductible income tax items.*

*Articles, stories, books for review, and all material to appear in the QUARTERLY, and general society correspondence should be addressed to the temporary headquarters:*

**THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA**

GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary*

1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California

Telephone REpublic 4-2823

*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

# QUARTERLY

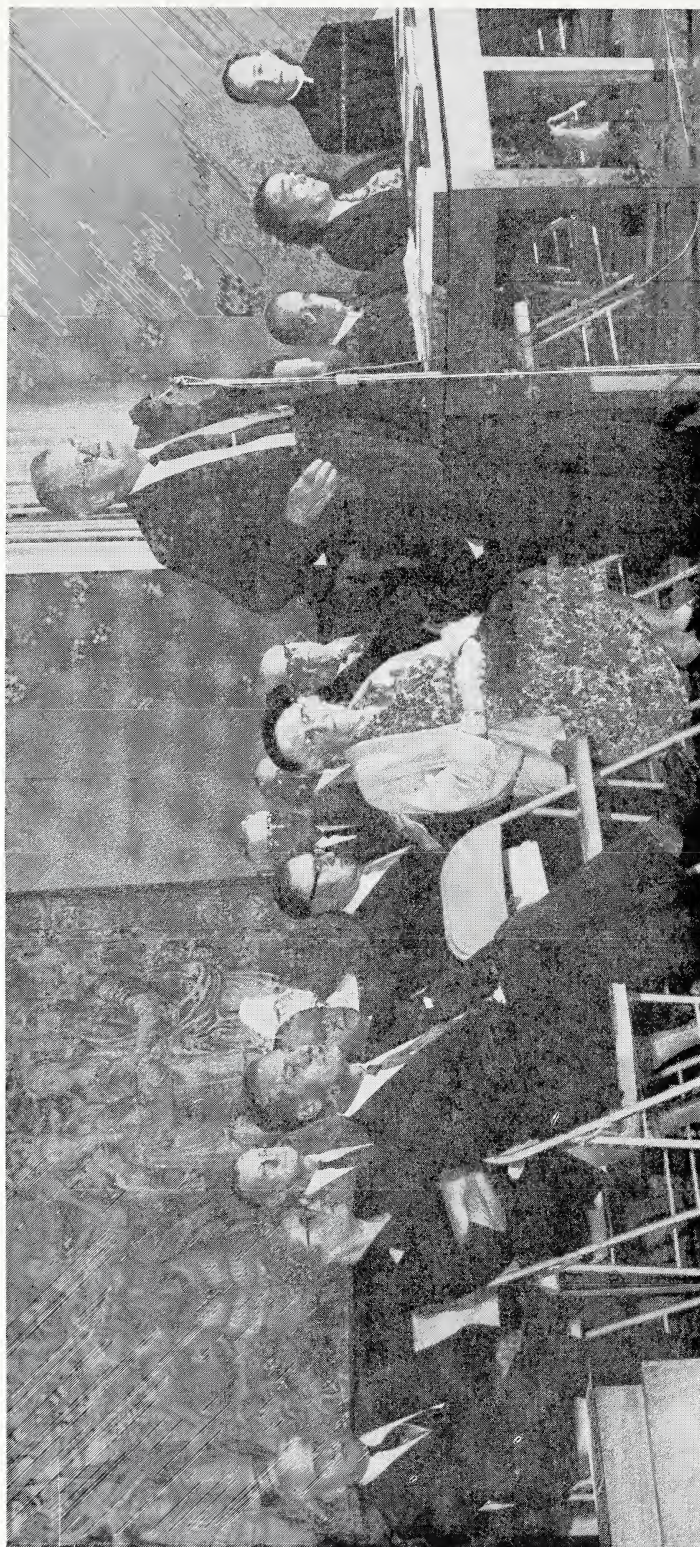


## CORRECTION, PLEASE!

A very curious error, made many years ago, was unhappily perpetuated on page 257 of the September, 1958, issue of the *QUARTERLY* in the description of the Society's coat-of-arms. The interpretation of the symbols and the Latin motto were copied just as they had originally appeared in 1891. Someone whose Latin education has apparently been neglected translated the words in the motto, *Carpere et Colligere* as "Together and to bind together." That, obviously, doesn't make any sense. The translation should have been "*To Gather and to Bind Together.*"

If your Editor may be permitted to be a little pedantic, the Latin word *Carpere* means "to pick, pluck, or gather flowers." The word *Colligere* is the ancestor of the English word "collect," and originally means "to preserve or to bind into a bouquet." This is obviously a beautiful and meaningful motto for a historical society, "*To Pluck the Flowers of History and to Preserve Them.*"





— Photo by Six Watson Bros. for the Society's collection

### SPEAKERS' PLATFORM AT THE SOCIETY'S DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY MEETING

On Friday evening, November 21, 1958, the *Historical Society of Southern California* celebrated its *Diamond Anniversary* with a special meeting held in the main auditorium of the Los Angeles County Museum. Pictured above is the speakers' platform with Society President Gustave O. Arlt standing at the microphone. Others pictured are, from left to right: Frank B. Putnam, Society Vice-President and Treasurer; Miss Ruth I. Mahood, chief curator of history, Los Angeles County Museum; Legory O'Loughlin, representing other historical societies of Los Angeles County; Los Angeles City Councilman Ed Roybal; and Society Directors W. W. Robinson, Miss Grace S. Stoermer, Justin G. Turner, who is also first vice-president, K. L. Carver, and Edmond F. Ducommun. Next is Miss Mabel Gunn, honored guest; Colin M. Gair, Society Director; Past President Rockwell D. Hunt, one of the speakers at the meeting, is not visible as he is sitting directly behind President Arlt. On the president's left are: Dr. Lawrence Clark Powell, Librarian, University of California at Los Angeles, who was the featured speaker of the evening; Miss Clementina de Forest Griffin, honored guest; and Father Philip Conneally, S.J., Loyola High School, who gave the benediction for the meeting.



*The*  
*Historical Society of Southern California*

**QUARTERLY**

---

VOLUME XL

December, 1958

NUMBER 4

---

CONTENTS:

THE SENSE OF THE PAST . . . . .	325
<i>By Lawrence Clark Powell</i>	
THE COMMODORE'S DECISION . . . . .	337
<i>By Lou Ann Garrett</i>	
FIFTEEN DECISIVE EVENTS OF CALIFORNIA HISTORY, PART IV (Conclusion)	353
<i>By Rockwell D. Hunt</i>	
MINING CAMPS OF THE SOLEDAD, PART III . . . . .	373
(Conclusion)	
<i>By Arthur B. Perkins</i>	
BOOK REVIEWS . . . . .	393
ACTIVITIES OF THE SOCIETY . . . . .	398
GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY . . . . .	407
NOTES FROM THE SECRETARY . . . . .	408
BUILDERS OF LOS ANGELES — <i>The Story of Our Plaque</i> . . . . .	409
<i>By Ana Begue de Packman</i>	
ROSTER OF MEMBERS . . . . .	413
INDEX TO VOLUME XL . . . . .	420
<i>By Carroll Spear Morrison</i>	

---

The HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA QUARTERLY, official publication of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, 1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California, is issued four times each year during the months of March, June, September and December. Annual membership \$10.00. Entered as Second Class Matter at the Post Office at Los Angeles, California.

---

# The Historical Society of Southern California

FOUNDED NOVEMBER 1, 1883

## *Officers, Directors and Committees for 1958*

### OFFICERS:

GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *President*  
JUSTIN G. TURNER, *First Vice-President*  
FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Second Vice-President and Treasurer*  
ANA BEGUE DE PACKMAN, *Secretary Emeritus*  
GUY E. MARION, *Executive Secretary and Curator*

### DIRECTORS:

Gustave O. Arlt	Mrs. J. M. Northrop
JOSEPH J. LA BARBERA	Ana Begue de Packman
K. L. Carver	Frank B. Putnam
Dwight L. Clarke	W. W. Robinson
Edmond F. Ducommun	Andrew F. Rolle
Colin M. Gair	Miss Grace S. Stoermer
Lorrin L. Morrison	Justin G. Turner
Marco R. Newmark	Mrs. Thomas E. Workman

### STANDING COMMITTEES:

*Executive Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; Edmond F. Ducommun, Justin G. Turner, Frank B. Putnam, W. W. Robinson.

*Program Committee:* FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Chairman*; Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan, Colin M. Gair, John Plummer, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Publication Committee:* GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Chairman*; W. W. Robinson, Justin G. Turner, K. L. Carver, Dwight L. Clarke, Edmond F. Ducommun, Lorrin L. Morrison, Andrew F. Rolle.

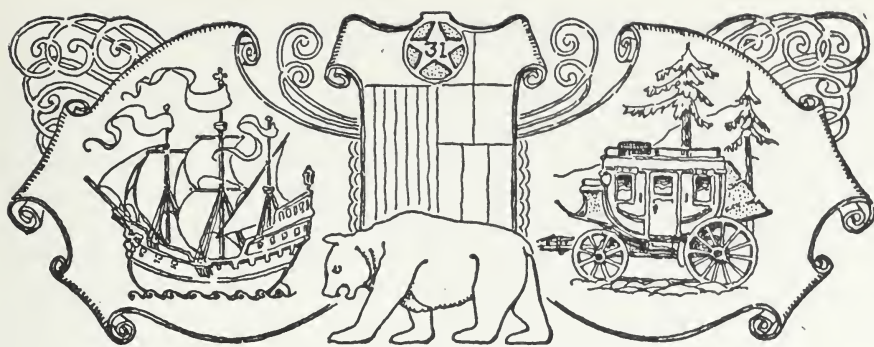
*Membership Committee:* K. L. CARVER, *Chairman*; Lorrin L. Morrison, Mrs. J. M. Northrop, Joseph J. La Barbera, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Harold Oswald, Frank B. Putnam, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman, George L. Swartz, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, George S. Moffatt, Andrew F. Rolle.

*Gifts Committee:* MARCO R. NEWMARK, *Chairman*; GUY E. MARION, *Curator*; Richard O'Neill, Jr., Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand, Mrs. Robert Tipton, Miss Marguerite Winston, H. H. West, Mrs. John C. Wolfskill.

*Landmarks Committee:* EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN, *Chairman*; Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, Edward P. Ripley, Robert Raphael, Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman, David I. Worsfold, Ernest Yorba, A. B. Perkins, Miss Ann Patton, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.

*Hostesses of the Social Hour:* MRS. EDMOND F. DUCOMMUN and MRS. BEATRICE SABICHI MITCHELL, *Co-chairmen*; Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, Mrs. Ernest Yorba, Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman.





GUSTAVE O. ARLT, *Editor*

MRS. STAFFORD L. WARREN, *Associate Editor*

FRANK B. PUTNAM, *Pictorial Editor*

---

*The Historical Society of Southern California* QUARTERLY for December, 1958

---

# The Sense of the Past

**By Lawrence Clark Powell**

*Librarian, University of California, Los Angeles*

An Address given at the seventy-fifth Anniversary Meeting  
of the *Historical Society of Southern California*,  
Los Angeles County Museum, November 21, 1958.

**I** DO NOT STAND ALONE TONIGHT, and though I shall speak personally, it will not be for myself alone. Our predecessors in this unending work of recording regional history stand with me and lend their voices to mine, as I shall do likewise in November, 1983, when the Society celebrates its centennial.

Among these friendly shades whom I sense at my shoulder are Colonel Warner, the founding president, whose inaugural address in 1908 was wrought of mingled despair and hope; and Robert Glass Cleland, who on the fiftieth anniversary in 1933 spoke eloquently of the power of historical knowledge to animate and people the landscape.

Now in November of 1958 has fallen to me the honor of speaking on the seventy-fifth anniversary of the founding of this Historical Society. I said I would speak personally, and those of you who know me, know me in no other role. It is what comes naturally, so bear with me, while I seek the sense of the past, hoping at the same time to make sense in the present.

I have been trying to recall when it was that I first got the sense of Southern California's past. Not while I was a boy. I grew up in South Pasadena, on the sunny side of the Raymond Hill, and my time was divided between reading books in the library and raising hell in school. I was an imaginative boy, and my reading led me to people the landscape with characters I was reading about. There was a Kentucky Scout named Henry Ware, and miscellaneous Texans, in the boys' books of Joseph Altscheler. When I came to Zane Grey, my hero was of course Lassiter of the Purple Sage. All through grammar school and high school I was unaware that Southern California had a past. My immediate environment of the Adobe Flores, the Old Mill, and the Frémont Oak on the bank of the Arroyo Seco were taken for granted as part of the present. In back of our house on Marengo Avenue the concrete ditch in which we played Texan Scout or Mormon Villain was known as "The Sanky." It wasn't until years later I learned that the word was a Yankee corruption of Zanja.

As lovingly good as my father and mother were, they gave me no sense of Southern California's past. My father was a horticultural scientist whose collecting embraced the records of Caruso, the rugs of Armenia, and the chairs of Windsor. Although my mother and her people were Hudson River Valley Quakers from way back, she spent most of her life here in Southern California, until her death last year at 87, being homesick for England; and when she went there for the first time in her middle-age, she never wanted to leave. And so she was always filling her shelves and mine with books of English literature and lore. The only thing she liked about Southern California was the climate — and we all know what happened to that. She had not the least interest in local history back of 1900, the year she first came to Southern California. Nor was my education at Occidental College any help, even though I took history from Robert Glass Cleland — English history.

And so, paradoxically, it was not until I went to France to study in the University of Dijon that I began to get some sense about Southern California's past — and then it was by way of literature and landscape, not history. I lived a romantic student life for two and a half years in the old ducal capital of Burgundy, two hundred miles southeast of Paris, studying the poetry of Byron and Shelley, Whitman and Robinson Jeffers, and writing a book about our great Carmel poet.

And then I discovered Dana — a grubby copy of *Two Years Before the Mast* bought for sixpence in a London bookstall, which made me homesick, reading it in a boarding house in the lee of

## *The Sense of the Past*

Primrose Hill, looking out on the rainy slope of London's only hilly park.

Dana was a lengthwise Californian, observing the harbors and the hills from San Diego and the point which bears his name to San Pedro, Santa Barbara, Monterey and Yerba Buena, and he described it miraculously in transparent prose of an enduring toughness. This is the gift all writers seek — to write language that incandesces, yet does not melt. There have been thousands of books about California, only a handful of which can stand with Dana. Why is this? Because the power to see, to sense, and to say is rarely united in a single writer in perfect proportions. It happened only once to Dana in this book of his springtime. He lived a long and useful life, but never again wrote anything to approach his California book. Let me read from it. But what to read in this altogether wonderful book whose every page is quotable? I have chosen the paragraph about Dana's first landing on the beach at Santa Barbara, perhaps because we now live above the beach on the Malibu, and nothing has changed in the century and a half since Dana saw and said:

"I shall never forget the impression which our first landing on the beach of California made upon me. The sun had just gone down; it was getting dusky; the damp night-wind was beginning to blow, and the heavy swell of the Pacific was setting in, and breaking in loud and high 'combers' upon the beach. We lay on our oars in the swell, just outside of the surf, waiting for a good chance to run in, when a boat, which had put off from the *Ayacucho* just after us, came alongside of us, with a crew of dusky Sandwich Islanders, talking and hallooing in their outlandish tongue. They knew that we were novices in this kind of boating, and waited to see us go in. The second mate, however, who steered our boat, determined to have the advantage of their experience, and would not go in first. Finding at length how matters stood, they gave a shout, and taking advantage of a great comber which came swelling in, rearing its head, and lifting up the stern of our boat nearly perpendicular, and again dropping it in the trough, they gave three or four long and strong pulls, and went in on top of the great wave, throwing their oars overboard and as far from the boat as they could throw them, and jumping out the instant that the boat touched the beach, and then seizing hold of her, and running her up high and dry upon the sand. We saw at once how it was to be done, and also the necessity of keeping the boat stern on to the sea; for the instant the sea should strike upon her broadside or quarter she would be driven up broadside on and capsized. We pulled strongly in, and as soon as we felt that the sea had got hold of us, and was carrying us in with the speed of a racehorse, we threw the oars as far from the boat as we could, and took hold of the gunwale, ready to spring out and seize her when she struck, the officer using his utmost strength to keep her stern on. We were shot upon the beach like



an arrow from a bow, and seizing the boat, ran her up high and dry and soon picked up our oars, and stood by her, ready for the captain to come down."

When after three years of absence I returned to California in the Depression, poor in purse and rich in spirit, I saw the landscape with new vision, both clearer and sharper. There was only one difficulty: when I was little, the big houses had dwarfed the newly planted neighborhood trees. Now that I was grown to manhood, the trees too had grown, and now they made the houses seem small. Today Southern California has kept a few great immemorial trees — the Ellwood Queen in Goleta, the Moreton Bay fig at the Southern Pacific Station in Santa Barbara, the Santa Rosa deodars in Altadena, the cathedral camphor in Pomona — which are natural shrines. In general, however, trees are having a hard time these days — trees and pedestrians, those vestiges of a vanishing way of life.

In 1933 distance and reading had combined to lend enchantment to California's past, of which I had grown up in ignorance. As a boy I had worked two summers on the vast Di Giorgio Ranch southeast of Bakersfield, unaware that the shades of Garces and of Beale were at my side. Then in Europe I read *The Flock* by Mary Austin, and henceforth the mountains of Tehachapi and the southern plain of the San Joaquin merged in my imagination, with no time-barrier between the *entrada* of Francisco Garces, the camels at the Fort in the time of General Beale, and my own rabbit-hunting boyhood in the Weed Patch.

Now I came downstate through the passes of Newhall and Cahuenga with Frémont; and it was the same throughout Southern California. No more Kentuckians and Texans. I had found that my own land had pioneers and heroes. Drake and Cabrillo had sailed its shores. Portolá and Anza, Garces and Serra had been lost in its mustard fields and suffered its chaparral. And everywhere I went, from the dunes at Yuma, near the site of Garces' martyrdom, to the dunes at Oceano and landmarks named by Portolá, across the fertile landscape where the foliage of pepper and olive trees streamed like smoke in the wind, in the sunlit valleys and the shadow of the Sierra Madre, everywhere I sensed their presences at my side. Through a reading of history and literature, I had gained a sense of the past, and now this past made sense to me. This was the land of my childhood and youth, this was the land I loved, and my roots sought the nourishment in its soil.

The Depression was a bad time, and yet good came of it. Prepared to teach, I found no teaching jobs, and so I went to work in

## *The Sense of the Past*

a bookshop on West Sixth Street in downtown Los Angeles. This move determined my future. The knowledge and experience I gained and the people I met led inevitably to the work I do now, as a librarian and writer.

This was the cultural heart of Los Angeles — public library, clubs, cafeterias, a park, the Philharmonic Auditorium, and the bookshops — what more could one ask? (Well, perhaps a river, which gives soul to a city). I came to know C. C. Parker and Ernest Dawson, Bishop Stevens, John I. Perkins, Elmer Belt and Donald Charnock, Bruce McCallister, Homer Crotty and W. W. Clary, Althea Warren, Phil Townsend Hanna, Ernest Carroll Moore, Henry R. Wagner, Robert Ernest Cowan, Frederick W. Hodge, Carl Wheat, J. Gregg Layne, W. W. Robinson, Paul Jordan-Smith, and my boss, Jake Zeitlin — all of whom, and many more, haunted the bookshops of that locale. The two years I spent on Sixth Street, and the earlier year on Colorado Street in Vroman's Bookstore of Pasadena, I count fully as important educationally as the years in college and university.

Chamber of Commerce literature measures the cultural level of a community by its churches, schools, libraries, and museums. Add bookshops. No city is civilized that does not support a variety of bookshops. The number and quality of bookshops in and around Los Angeles, as compared to those in the San Francisco Bay region, indicates to me that Los Angeles equals San Francisco as a center of civilization in California. One needs more strength to survive our centrifugal life here in Southern California, but from those strong survivors will come the children who will make the future. From our present dispersal of cultural centers — Santa Barbara and Ojai, Riverside, Claremont, Pasadena, San Diego, La Jolla, Laguna, Long Beach — will come eventual unification into one metropolis. Call it "urban sprawl," if you will. My imagination sees it as a kind of spiral nebula on earth, a vortex of actual power and potential beauty. Materially all we need will be abundant water and pure air. Spiritually we will need the inspired leadership of churches, schools, and civic groups.

And now I come at last to the Historical Society whose seventy-fifth anniversary we are celebrating tonight. What has the Society done in the region's growth to cultural maturity? What should it do in the years ahead? The first question can be answered by looking at the record; the second by looking at the radar screen of the future.

The "record" is a row of bound volumes which take up only a few feet on a library shelf. These in turn can be reduced to an

inch of microfilm. The founders of the Society, who met together for the first time on November 1, 1883, are long since departed this life. Much of what they and others wrote about — the landmarks of Southern California — have disappeared, bulldozed into oblivion, and those that are left will soon be gone. The Prudential Building and the Park La Brea Towers are the look of the future. To survive at all, the remaining landmarks of wood and adobe will need loving care.

For a month now I have lived with this short shelf of books, representing the *ANNUALS* and *QUARTERLIES* of this Society, published continuously since 1884, handling one or two before I went to work, and doing the same at night when I came home, sometimes just looking, skimming, sketching, other times reading an article clear through, and then leaning back and reflecting on what I read.

A strange, wonderful, rewarding experience it has been, as gradually my own life in Southern California since childhood was extended and enlarged to include all that the writers for our Society knew and were.

The history of these seventy-five years can be reduced to biography, to the biographies of a comparatively few thoughtful, persistent, dedicated men, who believed the work of the Society was worth doing.

No one of this great lineage is more heroic than the Society's first president, Colonel Jonathan Trumbull Warner, whose first two names gave the Spaniards trouble to pronounce, whereupon he changed them to Juan José. Colonel Warner stood six feet three, and his Spanish nickname was Juan Largo — Long John.

President Warner's inaugural address appears in the Society's first publication, which also includes the *Constitution*, *Standing Rules*, and *List of Officers and Members*. One of the primary purposes of the Society, seventy-five years ago, has pregnant meaning for us of this later age. Let me read President Warner's words,

"Just as we now eagerly prize the records of the early Colonial life and growth of our State and people, so will our successors prize the records which we shall preserve for them . . . This is the underlying principle to which we owe our origin . . . Here is a new and unoccupied field. It has been the home of the white man for more than a century, and now, in the midst of the inrushing flood of immigrants, old landmarks are rapidly disappearing. Things which are now common, in a few years will be rare; and, after a few years more, will cease to be."

Colonel Warner wrote this in the Boom of the Eighties. How would he have expressed his emotion during the Boom of the Twenties, or of the post-war Forties and Fifties?





— Photos by Six Watson Bros. for the Society's collection

## SOCIETY PRESIDENT PRESENTS HONORED GUESTS: PAST PRESIDENT RECALLS FIFTY YEARS OF SOCIETY SERVICE

The dignity and the proud record of the *Historical Society of Southern California's* community service for the last seventy-five years could not be better portrayed than in the group of pictures above. On the left, President Arlt introduces Miss Clementina de Forest Griffin, daughter of George Butler Griffin, Society president in 1891 and translator and editor of the "*Documents of the Sauto Collection*," which comprised the full text of the 214-page *ANSUAL* for 1891. In the center photograph Past President Rockwell D. Hunt is shown at the microphone giving a brief account of the Society during his one-half century of membership. On the right, President Arlt introduces Miss Mabel Guinn, daughter of James Miller Guinn, who was a founder-member of the Society. He was president in 1890 and secretary and curator from 1893 through 1918. Miss Guinn followed her father in the secretary's chair in which she served until 1923.

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA



— Photo by Six Watson Bros. for the Society's collection

## SPECIAL BOOK PUBLICATION PROGRAM ANNOUNCED

The year 1958 marked three major events in the life of the seventy-five-year-old *Historical Society of Southern California*. First event of importance was the memorable trek in June to historic points in Ventura County, highlighted by a stop to visit with venerated Adolfo Camarillo at his rancho. Second event of the year was the establishment of a *Special Book Publications* program. The Diamond Anniversary meeting at the Los Angeles County Museum was the third major event. Pictured above are Mr. and Mrs. Everett Gordon Hager, the authors and compilers of *The Historical Society of Southern California BIBLIOGRAPHY of All Published Works, 1884-1957*, the first book to be published by the Society since 1935. On the Hagers' right is Dr. Lawrence Clark Powell, the principal speaker at the Diamond Anniversary meeting, at which the BIBLIOGRAPHY received its first public showing, and on their left is Society President Gustave O. Arlt.



## *The Sense of the Past*

There is treasure locked in this file of our publications, and now at last it has been opened by the Bibliographical Abstracts and Index which Anna and Everett Hager have fashioned with love and skill. Throughout the first three decades it was James M. Guinn who nourished the *ANNUALS* with a hundred or more contributions, and also such stalwarts as H. D. Barrows, Laura Evertsen King, Rockwell D. Hunt, Edward A. Dickson, John C. Parish, Robert Glass Cleland, Owen Coy, Waldemar Westergaard, Carl Wheat, Marshall Stimson, Ana Packman, Marco Newmark, W. W. Robinson, Justin Turner, and Gustave Arlt; and from 1937 until his death in 1952, J. Gregg Layne, editor of the *QUARTERLY*, the staunchest supporter of the Society since the passing of James M. Guinn. There was no need for a machine to retrieve information rapidly as long as there was Gregg Layne. The man was a walking-talking encyclopedia of knowledge about the West, California, Southern California, and Los Angeles in particular. He knew the answers to all the W's: *Who, What, When, Where, and Why*, and the answers were yours for the asking. Layne's *Annals of Los Angeles* should be brought up to date and reissued.

One of Gregg Layne's greatest contributions to the preservation of our past was his flair for collecting and reproducing in the *QUARTERLY* photographs of early Southern California. At the rate we are urbanizing the land, there will soon remain only these photographs to recall the way it once was. Layne's collection of them, and all his books and pamphlets on our region, were acquired after his death by the UCLA Library where they joined the library of Robert Ernest Cowan to form one of the best of all collections of Californiana.

Time can be stopped by a watch, can be measured by a gauge, say those who would have it so; and these include Shakespeare, for did he not say

*And time, that takes survey of all the world, must have a stop.*

This should make it easy for the historian in search of the past, if History were only the past. How much time separates the future from the present, and the present from the past? The rhythm of history is the beating heart, and Time is the interval between each heart beat. Our past history here in Southern California, in the few years since man has kept records, has been preserved largely by the efforts of this Society, by the foresighted hindsight of its founders and chroniclers. Up to 1900 much is known. Since 1900, and particularly during the booms of the Twenties and Forties, history has been happening too fast to be handled. It has been piling up data too numerous for any single agency to accumulate.



No library has all the telephone directories of all the towns in Southern California since the telephone was introduced. There is not even one complete file of the *Times*. Where can one find all the colored postcards of Southern California scenes since the beginning? Or the books and pamphlets, circulars, handbills, tickets, and other printing ephemera. The Huntington Library has the best collection before 1900. About ten years ago the UCLA Library began to collect anything and everything printed in Southern California since 1900, regardless of what form it is in or what subject it is on. We placed standing orders with book-scouts to "bring 'em in alive" and in bulk — and in these ten years we have amassed nearly ten thousand pieces of printed Southern Californiana which we keep in chronological order. This is the cultural humus that will fertilize studies in history and literature.

This is good, but it is not good enough. We need to divide the responsibility for local newspapers, directories, documents, and other printed records, not to speak of manuscripts and business papers, among the local institutions. It is too enormous a job for anyone.

We need to focus historical studies on this more recent past, for with every heart-beat of time it recedes from us, buried deeper and deeper beneath the records of the vanishing present. We need more studies such as the recent ones by Donald Duke of the Pacific Electric and the Angel's Flight. Of Green and Green Pasadena bungalow architecture. Sunkist packing houses. The little red Santa Fé stations, the burnt ochre buildings of the Southern Pacific. The resort hotels, of which only the beautiful Coronado is left. Movie house stucco and studios. The Venice canals. Wooden oil derricks. Going, going, gone. We should employ a photographer to do nothing but photograph the local scene, day after day, up one street, down another, recording the present before it is lost to view. Southern California still has many beautiful backwaters, unknown to or disregarded by the Chamber of Commerce. Dare I speak of Bunker Hill?

Much is being done. Centers of study and publishing exist in the colleges and universities and museums. There are historical societies in the several counties. Magazines such as *Westways*. Newspapers.

The teaching of history in the primary and secondary schools should begin with the bright interval called the present and work back, rather than with the distant past, then come forward. By the first method, there is no break in the time-stream; one slips off the bank of the now and swims up stream against the gentle current.

## *The Sense of the Past*

A very few swimmers, called mystics — and we are said to have more of them, at least self-styled, in Southern California than anywhere outside of India — a true mystic can swim either way on the time-stream, which is without beginning or end.

The sense of the past must be part of a culture's common sense if a culture is to call itself civilized; and not merely the distant past which the popular mind tends to make more romantic than real. The earliest heroes of Southern California — Portolá, Anza, Serra, and the first Yankees, have served us well. Let us come down the years and assemble a hall of later ones.

It is not enough to write and talk about history, or to make and show pictures of it. Needed to excite the imagination are symbols of beauty and truth. Monuments such as the one in limestone of Garces which is Bakerfield's noblest sight; or the ones in obsidian by Donal Hord in San Diego to Montezuma and to Water; or the Pioneer Memorial Wall and Waterfall at Fort Moore Hill.

Here in this semi-arid land, whose lifeblood is the water we have and have not, every town should rear a monumental fountain to the water-gods. One of them was William Mulholland, and we have honored him with a fountain on Riverside Drive. This is only a start. We should be inspired by St. Louis which commissioned Carl Milles to create the monumental fountain called *The Meeting of the Waters*, to symbolize the river union which takes place there, where the Missouri and the Mississippi flow together.

This Historical Society, allied with the County Art Institute, should take the lead in this. We have our own Millard Sheets who does not back away from monumental projects. And we have had public officials such as John Anson Ford who spoke the word *Beauty* without apology to the voters. Give us more of such!

I would hope that in the years to come this Society will increasingly assume the role of conscience of the community, of the region's self respect, of spokesman for survival. What other group is there without self interest? We have few or no material possessions. In the eternity of future-present-past we have the stability of mobility. As a group we are timeless, unhampered, unhindered, free. All the land we can claim as ours, all of nature's beauty, and man's ambivalent struggle to build and to destroy. I do not despair of the troubles that presently beset us because of industrialized over-expansion. We have the drive to catch up with ourselves, and when we find ways of curbing our aggressive vitality, then will we flower and fruit with great works.

In addition to preserving the Missions, we should not neglect the few remaining old California ranchos, taking as our model the

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Rancho Los Cerritos, so beautifully restored by the City of Long Beach and operated as a cultural center by the Public Library. The Casa de Adobe at the Southwest Museum is likewise an oasis in the urban wilderness. The Arboretum and the Casa Lucky Baldwin at Santa Anita are monuments to Supervisor Ford and his profound sense of the past. When form follows function, as it did in the Missions and the Ranchos, then a truly native architecture results. The Landmarks and the Pilgrimages conducted by our Society are works of piety to be maintained and increased.


From the farthest southeastern corner, where the Colorado drops the last load of silt into the Gulf, to that wavering boundary-line where wind and weather, landscape and flora, tell us that Southern California ends — all of this changed and changing region is our responsibility, to observe and report on man's transforming acts, to preserve the records, to fend off ruination and oblivion, and to imbue the people with *the sense of the past* in every meaning of the phrase. Only in this way will we keep faith with our founders. Colonel Warner had this long view — recall his nickname — and I end with his words, spoken seventy-five years ago:

"THIS SOCIETY MAY, VERY WISELY, LOOK FORWARD TO THE TIME WHEN IT SHALL HAVE A BUILDING AND LIBRARY AND ARCHIVES OF ITS OWN; BUT, FOR THIS END WE NEED NOT MAKE HASTE. WE MAY BE AN ENERGETIC AND USEFUL SOCIETY AND HAVE NONE OF THESE, OR WE MAY HAVE THEM ALL AND NOTHING MORE, THE FORM BUT NOT THE LIFE OF A SOCIETY. IF WE CAN CATCH THE RIGHT SPIRIT, PERSUADE OURSELVES THAT WE HAVE Banded TOGETHER FOR ACCOMPLISHING RESULTS BENEFICIAL IN THE FUTURE, WHEN WE SHALL BE AT REST, AND ARE NOT WORKING FOR THE POPULAR APPLAUSE; WE SHALL THEN, IN MY OPINION, HAVE MADE THE RIGHT START; AND MAY COUNT UPON A USEFUL CAREER, WHICH SHALL WIN THE LAUDABLE VERDICT, NOT OF THE DAILY NEWSPAPER, BUT OF THE FUTURE HISTORIAN, WHO WILL THANK US, WHEN WE ARE NOT HERE TO RECEIVE HIS THANKS, FOR PLANNING AND FOR EXECUTING SO WISELY."



# The Commodore's Decision

By Lou Ann Garrett

T WAS A LATE SUMMER EVENING in 1842 when the Pacific Squadron sailed into Callao, Peru, routine stop for ships plying the sea lanes of the China Coast and Sandwich Islands. The frigate, *United States*, flagship of the fleet, proudly dropped anchor to leeward of the English Fleet of the Pacific, and the four remaining American vessels followed suit. Immediately salutes and courtesies were exchanged between the fleets, while on deck the Yankee seamen prepared to scrub and polish their vessels.

Thomas Ap Catesby Jones, Commodore of the Pacific Fleet, was known as a strict disciplinarian with a magnetic eye for dust and tarnish; an intrepid sea-officer; a man of heroism and bravery in the finest Navy tradition (witness his burned and withered right hand, a souvenir of 1814), and for hot-tempered stubbornness, as his recent four-year inactive stretch attested. This lay-off had resulted from one run-in too many with the Secretary of the Navy.<sup>1</sup>

This night, after exchanging the usual greetings with Vice-Admiral Thomas of the English Fleet, the commodore retired to his cabin, neither strict nor stubborn. He was consumed with worry. Shoving aside a half-finished letter to his wife, Jones painfully maneuvered a secret lock on his desk and extracted an official letter, obviously re-read many times, and stamped with the seal of approval of the President of the United States.

He began reading the now-familiar words:

The primary objects in maintaining a naval force in the Pacific have always been and still are the protection of commerce and the improvement of discipline . . . the unsettled state of the nations bordering on the coast included within your command renders it, in the first instance, necessary to protect the interest of the U. S. in that quarter . . . there be vigilant and keep moving. Nothing but the necessity of prompt and effectual protection to the honor and interests of the United States will justify you in either provoking hostility or invoking an act of hostility, and more especially in a state with which our country is at peace . . .<sup>2</sup>

The letter, addressed to his confidential attention, was signed by Secretary of the Navy A. P. Upshur and dated December tenth, 1841.

In casual conversation Vice-Admiral Thomas only an hour before, had mentioned that the French Fleet, consisting of eight vessels and 242 guns, had sailed away in the blackness of the night before, her destination unannounced and unknown.<sup>3</sup>

In the next few days, there followed the usual round of social activities between the two fleets, their respective consulates and the Peruvian government, with Jones ever alert. Of medium height and sandy complexion, the naval officer possessed a spontaneous geniality and wit at such functions. But long after the last harbor light had flickered out and the lapping water had lulled the ships' men to sleep, the commodore's desk lamp burned.

The Admiral's mention of the Mexican debt situation bothered him and he was at a loss to understand the full meaning of it. Had England been negotiating with Mexico; was she still; was Mexico at war with the United States, and if so, what was the situation as far as California was concerned? If war was here, surely the British Fleet would eye California, providing the French weren't already there! Something was happening and Jones knew it would take weeks to find it out from this far-away outpost.

The situation which bothered Jones culminated on the fifth day after his arrival in Callao. At daybreak he was informed that the English Fleet had secretly sailed forth in the night, her destination unannounced and unknown.<sup>4</sup>

Ordering a boat lowered, and without pausing for breakfast, Jones gathered his confidential papers and headed for the home of the United States Consul, a short distance from the harbor.

Arousing the sleepy-eyed diplomat, Jones explained that he felt the situation alarming enough to merit his immediate attention, then added his opinions and his suspicions as far as the movements of the two fleets were concerned.

Upon producing his confidential instructions, Jones in turn, received the full confidence of the official, who produced a letter received but the afternoon before. It was a communiqué from the consul in Mazatlan, John Parrott, dated June 22, which stressed the imminence of war between Mexico and the United States. Two newspapers had been included in the same pouch. The first proved to be a copy of the Mexican *El Cosmopolita* of June 4. In scathing words, the Mexican Minister of Relations, Bocanegra, assailed the United States over the Texas question, writing in terms of open insult and challenge. The tone was "highly belligerent," and the

### *The Commodore's Decision*

declaration was addressed to the United States Secretary of State, Daniel Webster.

The other, a copy of the *N. O. Advertiser* of April 19, a Boston journal, contained an item stating that Mexico had ceded California to England for the payment of \$7,000,000!<sup>5</sup>

Thousands of miles from American civilization, weeks from any official line of communication, the two bewildered men faced each other, the diplomat, Pickett, and the military officer, Jones, the former entrusted with the security and best interests of his government, and the latter on tour of the Pacific, months from home base, sworn into a confidential government mission to uphold and maintain the Monroe Doctrine and a sacred duty beyond the routine responsibilities of the military forces.<sup>6</sup>

Jones was sure that Thomas must have received intelligence from someone on the Hudson's Bay clipper that took on supplies the day before and then immediately put out to sea, that he had known the situation when they had been together last evening and duped him.<sup>7</sup> The two men understood each other, and Mr. Pickett must have said a prayer and a blessing to himself as he shook hands and bid good-bye to the commodore.

Despite immediate orders and activity, supervised by the bewildered officers and crew, it was late in the day before the ships of the Pacific Squadron were loaded and secured, and the moon was well into the sky when they weighed anchor.

On the seventh of September, at a few minutes before midnight, the U.S. Fleet sailed out of Callao, secret destination: California.

When the ships were two days at sea, Commodore Jones ordered a meeting of the ships' commanders. Gravely, withholding nothing, Thomas Ap Catesby Jones laid the evidence before his men, concluding with, "and so, gentlemen, it is my firm conviction that Mexico and the United States are at war and that the British vice-admiral left Callao for the sole purpose of occupying California as a military coup. It is my intention, subject to your approval, to proceed full sail toward Panama. There, I shall dispatch part of the fleet to get the true information and to carry my message to the proper authorities in the States. I shall proceed without delay with the *United States* and the *Cyane* to California."<sup>8</sup>

In complete unity the officers agreed with their commodore's deductions and plans. Captain Armstrong, of the *United States*, whose judgment was highly respected, went further.

"Sir, if the two countries are at war, it is our bounden duty to seize and hold every point and port!"<sup>9</sup>



The veteran seaman went on:

"In accordance with the Monroe Doctrine, the military occupation of California by any European power, but more particularly by our great commercial rival, England, would be an act so decidedly hostile as not only to warrant but to make it our duty to forestall the design of Thomas if possible by supplanting the Mexican flag with that of the United States at Monterey, San Francisco and other tenable points within the territory said to have been recently ceded to England by secret treaty."<sup>10</sup>

Jumping to their feet, the men cheered Armstrong, and for the first time, Jones relaxed.

All the next day Jones kept to his cabin, writing. The letters, long and precise, were addressed to the Secretary of the Navy, and they explained Jones' conclusions and actions, and the reasons for the course he was about to take. He concluded with:

The Creole affair, the question of the right to search, the mission of Lord Ashburton, the sailing of a strong squadron from France under sealed orders . . . new difficulties between the U. S. and Mexico, the well-founded rumor of a cession of the Californias, and lastly the secret movement of the English naval force in this quarter . . . having all occurred since the date of your last orders to me . . . Consequently I am without instructions, or the slightest intimations of your views and wishes upon what I consider a vital question to the U. S.: The occupation of California by England under a secret treaty with Mexico.<sup>11</sup>

Jones stared at the sword of honor hanging above his desk, bestowed upon him by the state of Virginia for heroic services in the War of 1812 and his mind raced back to that moment of heavy decision at Lake Borgne.<sup>12</sup>

His command had included five gunboats and two small schooners, and every man aboard then, himself included, was war-weary and tense. Intelligence had just revealed that Vice-Admiral Cochrane's fleet was sailing for the entrance to the lake, transporting Pakenham's army to charge against New Orleans. With no hope of relief or reinforcements of any kind, Jones had made the decision, an almost suicidal one, but one which perceptibly shortened the war and swung the pendulum of victory to the American side. He had commanded his small fleet to block the narrow entrance to the lake at all cost. Their task, so carried out, had proven successful though costly, with Jones himself seriously wounded in the three-day stand against staggering odds.

Resuming the writing, Jones paused for a second time, his attention diverted as always by his ugly, almost useless hand, his battle souvenir, an awkward handicap in letter-writing, and then finished the letter with:

### *The Commodore's Decision*

In this dilemma, all that I can promise is a faithful and a zealous application of my best abilities to promote and sustain the honor and the welfare of my country.<sup>13</sup>

Squaring his shoulders, he signed and sealed the dispatches and then called for the courier from the *Dale*. He instructed him to tell Captain Dornin to give this personally to the attaché in Panama with orders for that person to proceed at once, by the fastest possible route, to Washington and deliver this dispatch to the Secretary of the Navy.<sup>14</sup>

On September thirteen, the vessels parted company. Bravely the frigate, *United States*, and the sloop, *Cyane*, set their sails for the coastal winds of the Californias, and for the unknown.

Not a sail was sighted on the horizon as the days sped by and the two vessels made their way toward their destination. On board, the men prepared for battle action, examining and cleaning all cannon and weapons, readying powder and cannonball, holding battle drills. Jones, having made the decision, appeared to relax. The officers' mess, once again, became a genial gathering place.<sup>15</sup>

To Richard Maxwell, the ship's youthful surgeon, he recounted the California situation. Jones told of the long history of neglect and disinterest in the Mexican departments of Alta and Baja California by the mother country, and of the apathetic attitude of the California subjects as a result. Then he read the June newspapers to him, telling that Juan Alvarado was about to be replaced as governor by one General Manuel Micheltorena, who was to land in San Diego with an army of one hundred fifty Mexicans and march to the capital of Alta California, the town of Monterey. There he was to dispossess the stubborn Alvarado and assume the reins as Governor, Comandante-General and Inspector of the Department.

According to Jones' calculations, the general should still be down in the southern portion, and should the British not have entered the picture as yet, the Americans would be able to sail into the port of Monterey, which was the political and commercial core of the department, seize the town and any existing fortifications, and be well intrenched before the general made his appearance. Thus, even with an army, he would be at a distinct disadvantage.<sup>16</sup>

The commodore, eyeing the array of maps and military dispatches, books and newspapers strewn about his desk and tables, must have thought:

What I would not give for a miraculous method of communication whereby I would be able to tell just how far our country has entered into the California situation! Unfortunately, I must prepare for anything and everything, including the damn British!

Maxwell well knew of the Commodore's great antipathy for England. Twice he had fought against her, first in real battle, and then in 1825, when he had visited the Sandwich Islands and discovered the British in a scheme to claim the islands for debts. That time the battle had been verbal but just as belligerently delivered and fought, and the taste of victory had been as sweet.

The doctor eyed his friend and commanding officer, and thought of the great military tradition inherent in the man named Jones. A descendant of the Virginia governor after whom the great John Paul Jones was said to have named himself, the Commodore's brother, Roger, also served his country well, rising in the Army to the rank of Brigadier-General. He, too, had seen heroic service, in the battles of Chippewa and Lundy's Lane.<sup>17</sup> Indeed, Maxwell could have no qualms about the Commodore's decision, nor had a man-jack in the entire squadron.

The night of October eighteenth not a man on board either vessel slept well, for all knew land had been sighted and the next day would be the fateful one. On board the *United States*, Captain Armstrong tossed and muttered on his bunk, and Samjy Culverwell, the freckle-faced powder boy, trembled in his hammock as he digested the words of the special orders issued by the Commodore that evening to all hands:<sup>18</sup> Formally but forcefully written, they gave instructions of behaviour, forbidding under severe penalties all plunder, insult or excesses on shore in the stirring action that might soon be expected, and ended with,

During the battle and strife every man must do his utmost to take and destroy, but when the flag is struck all hostility must cease, you must then even become the protectors of all and not the oppressors of any.<sup>19</sup>

The dawn was bright with brilliant flashes of orange in the sky as the vessels rounded Point Piños. The Commodore beamed perceptibly. Not an English craft was in sight! He ordered the British colors raised in subterfuge, as was the customary battle practice, and pointed the ships toward the tiny port of Monterey, and, particularly, to a Mexican bark which was just seen emerging for the open seas.<sup>20</sup>

"Fire a shot across her bow and order her to stand by to be boarded."

Jones noted that she was the *Joven Guipuzcoana*, a former British commercial vessel converted into a government ship by Mexico. On shore, he could distinguish much activity, with people running to and fro and gathering in groups near a building which was obviously a military fort or presidio.



### *The Commodore's Decision*

With a search of the ship revealing nothing pertinent to the situation and the captain obviously ignorant of the matter at hand, Jones ordered the bark to precede them into port and then to stand by for further instructions. Upon returning to his vessel, the commodore ordered their true colors run up on both ships.

It was mid-afternoon when the three vessels anchored as close to the fort as the depth of water permitted, and soon the commodore received on board the master of the *Fama*, an American whaler lying in port for repairs.

Impressed by the dignity and rank of the officer, the seaman stuttered and stammered while addressing him but managed to get out the fact that he had just returned from a run to the Sandwich Islands and that war talk was definitely prevalent there. He added that right here in Monterey he had heard that the British were coming to claim the territory.<sup>21</sup>

At this, Jones and Armstrong nodded to one another. This, along with the general excitement noticeable on shore, and the fact that no Americans had come on board from the town, substantiated their theory.

"The time for action had now arrived," wrote the Commodore later in his report of the day to the Secretary of the Navy, adding:

Whilst nothing had occurred to shake my belief in the certainty of hostilities with Mexico, the reiterated rumored cession of California to England was strengthened by what I have already related. Hence, no time was to be lost, as another day might bring Admiral Thomas with a superior force to take possession in the name of his sovereign; General Micheltorena, the new governor-general of California, might appear to defend his capital, since he is said to be three-days' march from here.<sup>22</sup>

If I took possession of the country and held it by right of conquest in war, and there was war with Mexico, all would be right; then if the English should come and claim under a treaty of cession, as such treaties do not give title till possession is had, I should have established a legal claim for my country to conquered territory, and at least have placed her on strong grounds for forcible retention or amicable negotiations, as after-circumstances might dictate.<sup>23</sup>

Continuing with a logic born of a lifetime of naval and political service to his country, Jones wrote on:

If Admiral Thomas should afterwards arrive and attempt to supplant our flag on shore, the marines of the squadron to man the guns of the fort without weakening our ships would insure us the victory, and the responsibility would rest on the English commander. On the other hand, if it should turn out that amicable relations had been restored between the United States and Mexico, that Mexico had not parted with the Californias, and that at the time I de-

manded and took possession of Monterey there was no war, the responsibility at first might seem to rest on me, certainly not on our government, who gave no orders upon the subject.

But I may be wrong, *toto coelo*, in all my deductions and conclusions. If so, I may forfeit my commission and all that I have acquired in seven and thirty years' devotion to my country's service. Terrible as such a consequence would be to me and my family, it will not be sufficient to deter me from doing what I believe to be my duty, when a concatenation of unforeseen and unforeseeable events require prompt and energetic action for the honor and interests of my country.<sup>24</sup>

At four that afternoon, Jones ordered a boat lowered for his emissary, Captain Armstrong, and four aides, to proceed ashore under a flag of truce and demand a surrender of the post to the United States, "to avoid the sacrifice of human life and the horrors of war." They were to contact the military and civil governors of the department present, and give them until ten the next morning to make their surrender.<sup>25</sup>

After the little craft pulled away, Jones began an impatient two-hour vigil, first scanning the horizon for the truant English fleet, then looking to shore for any signs of increased activity or hostility, and his men.

Shortly after six the men returned to the flagship, bursting with news. They had delivered the papers, but to a Captain Mariano Silva, since Alvarado was absent.

Then Armstrong told of the confused state of affairs on shore. It appeared that Alvarado, having been theoretically deposed as governor, quickly retired to his Alisal Rancho, some forty miles inland, with a full retinue, having no desire to do battle against the United States. A former supercargo, now a merchant of Monterey, Thomas Larkin by name, eagerly consented to act as interpreter for the commodore.<sup>26</sup> In reply to the officer's query concerning the existing defense power of the town, Armstrong gave his report:

I asked each of my men to scan the town defenses carefully but completely. Putting it all together, I can say that Monterey does not appear to have more than sixty professional soldiers and no weapons worth mentioning, despite eleven cannon, all covered with rust or partially dismantled.<sup>27</sup>

Armstrong concluded that the place looked like anything but a town girded for war.

In digesting this piece of news, Jones rationalized that even if Alvarado had been clever enough to have concealed forces hidden in the surrounding hills, he would not allow his cannon power to

### *The Commodore's Decision*

remain in utter disuse. No, a *comandante* would certainly maintain his weapons in fighting condition, even under the guise of routine maneuvers. Something was wrong, and Jones felt it in his very bones.

Shortly before midnight, as the crew manned their battle watch, a light was seen off shore, and shortly a boat appeared alongside the *United States*. Captain Armstrong received the three men and presented them to the Commodore in his quarters. They were Captain Pedro Narvaez, representing the military authority. José Abrego, the civil representative,<sup>28</sup> both of whom spoke no English, and their translator, Thomas Larkin. Bowing stiffly to the Californians, the officer extended his hand in welcome to Larkin and then quickly turned to the business at hand. He began a carefully-worded recitation of the situation so that Larkin could translate precisely, and when he mentioned the probable state of war between Mexico and the United States, all three men started with surprise.

Both Narvaez and Abrego professed complete ignorance of the entire situation, including the rumored Mexican cession of the Californias, supposedly a *fait accompli* by now, to Britain, but their remarks and attitude were at no time hostile.

"These gentlemen agree to sign the Articles of Capitulation, at least to the extent of their somewhat questionable power, since Micheltorena has not yet arrived and Alvarado's duties have taken him into the interior for the present," Larkin explained, as he finished reviewing the terms of surrender to the two men.<sup>29</sup>

After a few polite remarks, the Californians, apparently satisfied, left, but at Jones' request, Larkin remained on board and the two talked through the night, exploring the situation from all angles and possibilities.

Jones learned that Mexico had been guilty of criminal neglect as far as this territory was concerned and had alienated the loyalty of most of her subjects, Spanish, Mexican, and Indian. Even now, the average Californio was looking longingly at the United States. The Russians had finally given up their feeble attempt at conquest as a hopeless dream, as had the French, but not so the British! They were only too well aware of the tremendous potentialities in this fertile country. They had consistently sent over commissions and expeditions and had their secret agents planted over the entire area, from San Diego to Sonoma.<sup>30</sup>

Both men were in agreement on the entire situation as it now stood, or as they felt it stood to the best of their knowledge.

It was an impressive sight which the natives of Monterey be-



held the next morning. Promptly at eleven o'clock, one hundred and fifty men, marines and sailors from the two vessels, put out to shore, in full battle regalia, under Commander Stribling.

As they formed battle ranks on shore, the Mexican garrison marched out of the fort with colors flying and gave up their arms at the government house near the landing. In a matter of minutes the American forces had marched on the now-abandoned fort, their quick pace in time with a military march played by the company's band from the moment forces had landed on the beach. Soon the Mexican tricolor was seen fluttering to the ground. Not a resident or even an Indian could be seen and the only sound to accompany the band and the slap of muskets in unison was the screech of a flock of wheeling seagulls overhead.

As the Stars and Stripes was hoisted, the band broke into a stirring musical salute. A few minutes before noon a salute was exchanged between the guns of the fleet and those now commanded by the Yankees within the fort. Within the space of an hour the formalities were over, with not a shot fired save in salute. The United States had conquered and now claimed possession of the land known as the Mexican Department of Alta California.<sup>31</sup>

Jones, however, was still perturbed.<sup>32</sup> The fact that the entire campaign was carried out with no loss of life, without, in fact, a single belligerent moment, was extremely gratifying to the man who had seen the real and awful horror of combat. And certainly the sight of his country's flag flying for the first time over a new territory on this far-western reach of the continent was a thrilling sight to this patriotic commander.

But where was the British fleet? It was a reckless, radical step this man had taken. Now it was done. But he must still look for evidence to press his claim.

On shore, the people could be seen gathering and discussing the copies of the proclamation which had been issued. Besides guaranteeing their present rights and privileges, Jones had proclaimed:

Although I came in arms as the representative of a powerful nation, upon whom the central government of Mexico has waged war, I come not to spread desolation among California's peaceful inhabitants. It is against the armed enemies of my country, banded and arrayed under the flag of Mexico that war and its dread consequences will be enforced . . . you have only to remain in your homes in pursuit of peaceful vocations to insure security of life, person and property from the consequences of an unjust war, into which Mexico has plunged you . . . those Stars and Stripes, infallible emblems of civil liberty, now float triumphantly before

## *The Commodore's Decision*

you, and henceforth and forever will give protection and security to you, to your children and to unborn countless thousands . . .<sup>33</sup>

(Signed) Thomas Ap Catesby Jones, Commodore, U.S. Navy  
Acting Military and Civil Administrator

The rest of the day proved uneventful. The blue-jackets paraded and took formal possession of the various government buildings and strategic points in the vicinity, always careful to avoid any altercation or embarrassment with the residents. Having been severely lectured on the subject, the men refrained from loitering, entering private dwellings or pilfering of any kind. As a matter of fact, their very business-like air first puzzled and then pleased the Californios. Those Americanos! So efficient!

And so handsome in their uniforms! Although doors remained tightly barred as night approached, many a *señorita* peered through shutter slats at the marching Yanquis, and her heart skipped a beat. Already news had spread of the safety of the passengers on the *Joven Guipuzcoana*, including the beautiful Señorita Estudillo and her aunt. Already they planned excitedly that one day soon there would be a grand military *baile*, a *merienda*, a *fiesta*, *si*?<sup>34</sup>

The morning sun of Monterey was dazzling when Commodore Jones set foot on the shore. In full military regalia, he and Armstrong joined Larkin on the beach, and as they marched toward their headquarters, set up in the Mexican Customs House, the brilliance of the sun caused Jones to blink and turn his head away from the reflection caused by his sword. The beauty and apparent fertility of this country amazed him, and he plied Larkin with questions about terrain, agriculture, water, trails, and other data of importance to Washington. A great sense of excitement filled him, and his faith in California's future was to be evidenced a few years later when he invested heavily in its real estate.<sup>35</sup>

After a tour of the area and a pleasant and enlightening conversation with the trader, Larkin, Jones acknowledged a messenger, sent to him from the fort, with papers and dispatches they had found. Asking Larkin to translate them, they proceeded to the merchant's store and fell to the task at once. Both men were shaken by the contents.

Here was a Mexican newspaper, dated August 4. It clearly indicated that relations with the United States were friendly up to that date. Another document, an official communiqué, gave evidence that the rumor of California's cession to England was just that and no more. A rumor. A third paper, a Mexican journal, cited the Monroe Doctrine as a chief obstacle of such a cession should it ever be desired by Mexico!<sup>36</sup>

Commodore Thomas Ap Catesby Jones had feared this; since the moment his fleet had weighed anchor at Callao he had felt a gnawing distrust of his own judgment, of his own conclusions. As he pondered the situation, another report came, this one from Captain Armstrong, stating that an American merchant ship had just put into port, and her captain, a trusted and reliable American, definitely reported passing the English Fleet of the Pacific well on its way to the Sandwich Islands!<sup>37</sup>

At length, Jones decreed:

In my opinion, the motives and only justifiable grounds for demanding a surrender of this territory have been removed, or at least rendered so doubtful as to make it my duty to restore things as I found them with the least possible delay.<sup>38</sup>

Never was Larkin to forget the courage with which the Commodore spoke as he thus admitted his great error in judgment, and announced his decision to remedy the situation immediately.<sup>39</sup>

A misty fog had blotted out the last rays of sun and white caps churned in the bay when Jones and Larkin came alongside the flagship, and soon they were seated at the conference table with the other ships' officers, who had been urgently summoned, and who had quickly arrived with grave and puzzled faces.

Carefully, explicitly, Jones addressed his colleagues, presenting the newly-found data and evidence supporting his drastic new decision, and his final proclamation of restoration of Monterey to Governor Alvarado and Captain Silva.

The men were astounded and wholeheartedly in favor of holding California anyway, particularly in view of the apparent dislike its citizens felt for their new general, Micheltorena.<sup>39</sup>

Meantime, according to the best intelligence Jones could muster, the new *comandante*, together with an army of over a hundred *cholos* imported from Mexico, had left the south supposedly intent upon forcibly deposing Alvarado and had proceeded as far as the mission of San Fernando when the messenger reached him with the news of the fall of Monterey to the *Americanos*. Turning back to Los Angeles in full and hasty retreat, he commenced issuing commands and battle communiqués to all the *alcaldes* and *comandantes* from Arguello in San Diego to Vallejo in Sonoma, to rally to the cause. Safely ensconced in the southern pueblo, he poured forth messages and instructions, flowery and magniloquent.

"Would that I were a thunderbolt to fly and annihilate the invaders," he wrote to Vallejo. He ordered a march on Monterey from the north and a quick rout of the enemy. He, Micheltorena, was sorry he could not run up himself but he felt his first duty was



### *The Commodore's Decision*

to establish headquarters in Los Angeles and to "arrange operations of a war so just, so holy, so national," and protect his supply of arms and ammunition in the pueblo!<sup>40</sup>

However, he added, "triumph is certain; with my present force I would not hesitate to attack but it is just that all share in the pleasure of victory, since we are all Mexicans."

To Alvarado he wrote:

"Are there Mexican bosoms which do not feel themselves boil with valour at seeing this effort to rob us of our territory?"<sup>41</sup>

Despite the illogical and precarious political situation that apparently prevailed throughout California, the Commodore was convinced that his course was clear. After dispatching a letter to Alvarado by way of Silva, announcing the new state of affairs and the Commodore's desire to return the capital to the exact status of October nineteenth, he instructed his men to set about making the necessary preparations for the ceremony. Nothing would be spared. He insisted upon giving all due honor and courtesy to Alta California, a country in which he now considered himself a guest or an intruder, depending upon the reactions to the ensuing events.<sup>42</sup>

It was nearly six o'clock when Commodore Jones, his captains, and aides stepped ashore near the Customs House. Standing at rigid attention, the officers watched the American garrison march from the fort with the precision of troops on review, keeping step with the band music. After the last man had embarked and left the fort, a special squadron at the Presidio hauled down the Stars and Stripes. A minute later the Mexican colors went up, and as they caught the ocean breeze, the awesome silence around the plaza of Monterey was shattered by the cannon of the Pacific Squadron of the United States saluting the flag of Mexico.

Jones and his officers saluted, and as they boarded their small boat an eerie orange light enveloped them and the entire beach. Far out on the horizon the dazzling sun seemed suspended for an instant over the point, then plunged into the quiet sea.

With the soft purple of dusk, the liberation of Monterey and of California was completed.

Perhaps it was the smart precision and gentlemanly conduct of the Yanqui forces, or perhaps the knowledge that they, the Californians, were right back where they had been, under the thumb of an incompetent, greedy master whose only interest in them was revenues and taxes. At any rate, before Jones had come alongside his flagship, the whole market place was swarming with people, discussing and arguing, and many a true Californian openly showed

his regret at the sudden turn of events, laughing sarcastically about the "liberation of our country from invaders."<sup>43</sup>

From the safety of his inland ranch, Alvarado wrote to Micheltorena, rivalling the new *comandante* in eloquence, that "My heart bounds with joy in my bosom . . . the joy of my people is complete!"<sup>44</sup>

To Vallejo he addressed similar phrases, reporting the sequence of the events of the day, carefully refraining from revealing his true sentiments in the whole matter, now that the tide had turned. Vallejo received this letter just as he was about to march on Monterey at the head of a hastily-assembled army of soldiers, friendly Indians, and citizens of Sonoma. Returning to his home, Vallejo entered the contest of words, a correspondence that lasted through several months. President Tyler of the United States, Secretary Daniel Webster, Ambassador to Mexico Waddy Thompson, all were targets of the enraged Vallejo's pen.<sup>45</sup> Perhaps the proud Californian resented his own very minor role in the Monterey events far more than the actual "ignominious acts" of which he wrote. Perhaps he resented the more important role played by his nephew, Alvarado.

And what of "The Enemy?"

Jones set to work at once, writing voluminous letters and dispatches, apologies and explanations. However, though wordy, these reports were factual and sincere, for the Commodore felt it his bounden duty to set the records straight as quickly as possible.<sup>45</sup>

Although the American commodore and his ships stayed in California waters for some time, most of the people were quick to forgive if there had been any bitterness, and quick to entertain. Up and down the coast, in every port, the people vied with each other to see who could give the grandest *baile*, the most spectacular *fiesta* for the Yanqui "visitors." Even Micheltorena, now that he had bombastically asserted himself, became the gracious host and when the men put into the southern port of San Pedro, he invited them to a true "gala" of which natives spoke for generations to come.<sup>46</sup>

Nationally and internationally, however, reverberations of the event were seriously felt and in Washington Jones became a *cause célèbre*. To appease Mexico, the Commodore was ordered relieved of his command and to proceed to Washington. On January 24, Naval Secretary Upshur sent the following communiqué to Jones:

In adopting this course, it is not designed to prejudice the case, nor even to indicate an opinion as to the propriety or impropriety of your conduct in the matter allured to. This will of course be made the subject of proper inquiry after your return to the United States.<sup>47</sup>

## *The Commodore's Decision*

The order went, albeit with tongue in cheek:

The present order only has reference to the just claims of Mexico on this government, for such a disavowal of the attack on Monterey as will fully recognize the rights of Mexico and at the same time place the conduct of the government in a proper light before the nations of the world. Commander Dallas will relieve you as soon as he can conveniently reach the station; and you will return to the United States in such mode as may be most convenient and agreeable to yourself.

The latter sentence was the key to an ostensible order to stand before a court martial. Correctly interpreting the face-saving measure, Jones obeyed the command, managing to find a circuitous two-year route "the most agreeable and convenient mode."<sup>48</sup>

While Congress ordered an investigation, Jones sailed on.

By the time he presented himself in Washington, everyone had simmered down, from the President to Daniel Webster. Even the Mexican representatives had been somewhat appeased. More important current affairs were at hand, and eventually Thomas Ap Catesby Jones was commended, decorated, and requested to resume his former command.<sup>49</sup>

Jones was pleased to receive the following letter, just before returning to Washington:

It gives me pleasure to assure you that your remaining without employment since your return to the United States has not been the result of any displeasure of the President of the United States or of this department. The President has authorized me to say to you that in those circumstances of your conduct while in command of the Pacific Squadron, which induced your recall, on explanation, he perceives evidence of an ardent zeal in the service of your country, and devotion to what you deemed to be your duty, regardless of personal consequences, which entitle you to anything but censure from your government . . .

(Signed) Secretary of the Navy Upshur<sup>50</sup>

Without a doubt, Jones proved himself a true patriot when he faced the greatest risk an American officer can be party to — declaring war upon a country and seizing its territory — all without authority or intelligence of any official merit, and with only his devout patriotism and astuteness to guide him.

## NOTES

1. Melville, Herman, *Journal of a Cruise to The Pacific Ocean, 1842-44*, edited by C. R. Anderson (Duke U. Press, Durham, 1937), p. 40.
2. "Taking Possession of Monterey," a Message from the President of the United States in reply to a resolution of the House of Representatives of February 22 re Commodore Jones. 27th Congress, 3rd Session, Doc. No. 166, dated February 22, 1843. Hereinafter referred to as P. R., pp. 46-50.



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

3. P. R., pp 66-67.
4. P. R., p. 68.
5. P. R., p. 86.
6. Bancroft, Hubert Howe, *History of California*, Vol. IV (San Francisco, 1886), p. 301.
7. P. R., p. 68.
8. P. R., p. 85.
9. Bancroft, p. 303.
10. *Ibid.*
11. P. R., p. 69.
12. *Dictionary of American Biography*, D. Malone, Ed., Vol. X, p. 200.
13. P. R., p. 69.
14. P. R., p. 73.
15. Maxwell, Dr. Richard T., *Visit to Monterey in 1842* (L.A. 1955), p. 17.
16. *Ibid.*
17. Appleton's *Cyclopedia of American Biography* (1892).
18. Bancroft, p. 303.
19. Melville's *Journal*, p. 41.
20. Bancroft, p. 305.
21. *Ibid.*
22. P. R., p. 69.
23. *Ibid.*
24. P. R., p. 70-74.
25. *Ibid.*
26. Underhill, Reuben L., *From Cowhides to Golden Fleece* (Palo Alto, 1939), p. 80.
27. P. R., pp. 72-73.
28. *Ibid.*
29. Bancroft, p. 307.
30. Caughey, John Walton, *California* (New York, 1940), pp 266-67.
31. P. R., pp. 71-73.
32. *Ibid.*
33. P. R., pp. 79-80.
34. Underhill, p. 80.
35. Underhill, p. 229.
36. P. R., p. 72.
37. *Ibid.*
38. Hittell, Theo. H., *History of California*, Vol. II (San Francisco, 1898) p. 320.
39. Underhill, p. 83.
40. P. R., p. 81.
41. *Ibid.*
42. Bancroft, p. 311.
43. Kelsey, Rayner, "The U.S. Consulate in California," unpub. thesis, p. 45.
44. P. R., p. 81.
45. *Ibid.*
46. Dakin, Susanna Bryant, *A Scotch Paisano* (Berkeley, 1939), p. 102.
47. P. R., p. 67.
48. *Ibid.*
49. Melville's *Journal*, p. 101.
50. *Ibid.*

# Fifteen Decisive Events *of* California History

*By*  
Rockwell D. Hunt



## Part IV (*Conclusion*)

EDITOR'S NOTE: This book, which has run serially through the four Numbers of Volume XL in the *QUARTERLY* has been named as a selection for publishing in fully-bound format by *The Historical Society of Southern California* BOOK CLUB. It will be published in the Spring of 1959. Society members who have not as yet joined the BOOK CLUB as *Founder-Members* are urged to do so immediately. In that manner they will be enabled to receive a first edition copy of "Fifteen Decisive Events of California History" at reduced cost as soon as it is off the press.

*Chapter Twelve*

## **Election of Hiram W. Johnson As Governor, 1910**



THE POLITICAL HISTORY OF CALIFORNIA during the final years of the nineteenth century and the opening years of the twentieth was on the whole rather drab. James H. Budd, Democrat, was succeeded by Henry T. Gage, Republican, in 1899, who in turn was followed by George C. Pardee, then James N. Gillett, both Republicans. The Republicans were, with slight exception, in the ascendant during several decades both in the governorship and in the United States Senate. Little of exceptional character marked the period, one way or another.

But just a little later the truth of the old saying was vindicated — “The old order changeth, yielding place to the new.” Social and industrial changes had been taking place — unobserved for the most part — but politics was lagging behind. Laws that served well enough in early farming communities ceased to be adequate under the changed conditions. Powerful economic forces were using old freedoms and old laws unfairly, to their own commercial advantage — sometimes flouting the law with impunity. Advancing civilization and dynamic society, at such a time, demand a keener sense of awareness and greater facility in adjustment than had been shown by the political leaders of the time.

It had come to be the popular belief that the real party in power was not the Republican Party nor the Democratic Party, but the Southern Pacific railroad corporation — to the “S. P. Machine” the party labels and shibboleths had ceased to be meaningful. Its actual influence was enormous, its political power well-nigh irresistible, and there seemed to be a widespread feeling that nothing could be done about it. The chief attorney for the Southern Pacific in San Francisco was William F. Herrin; second to him, in Los Angeles, was Walter Parker. Together they held almost unprecedented power. The election of Hiram W. Johnson as governor of California in 1910 was the resounding signal for a drastic change, long overdue. From his inauguration day, the 3rd of January, 1911, the political history of the state was anything but drab.

Let us note the antecedents of this decisive change, then briefly describe the chief alterations and transformations that were brought



### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

about during the Johnson régime. The organization of the Lincoln-Roosevelt League has been called "the high-water mark in California's record of political achievement." Fifteen leaders met in Levy's Café in Los Angeles, on the 21st of May, 1907. There it was that the League was actually launched, following a vow made by two stalwart progressive newspaper men to clean up what they called a political mess and "try to restore the plundered government to the people of the state." The two men were Chester H. Rowell of the *Fresno Republican* and Edward A. Dickson of the *Los Angeles Express*, both of them conspicuous admirers of Theodore Roosevelt and ardent advocates of his political principles. In Los Angeles Dickson associated with himself three young men, alert, capable, and fearless — Russ Avery, Marshall Stimson, and Meyer Lissner — thus providing a leadership, as Gregg Layne so well expressed it, "of rare courage and honesty of purpose, combined with political wisdom and sagacity." At the organization meeting, Frank Devlin was elected president of the League, and it was there that the veteran progressive leader Dr. John R. Haynes boldly declared for the adoption in the state of California of the Initiative, Referendum, and Recall.

The principles of the Lincoln-Roosevelt League were not long in receiving the hearty support of many newspapers: the movement gained strength rapidly over the state — the people were sick and tired of the Southern Pacific domination; the graft prosecution cases in San Francisco, following the great earthquake and fire of 1906, were actively in mind. But it was necessary to implement the principles and to make concrete the rising tide of reform sentiment, to give them effectiveness: that called loudly for the utmost care in the selection of a ticket for the gubernatorial election of 1910, headed by a candidate of forthright courage, dedication to the high purposes of political reform, and an unquenchable enthusiasm to translate the noble ideals into political actualities.

After a painstaking canvass and much serious thinking, Hiram W. Johnson, who had become a prominent lawyer of San Francisco, after having been called in to continue the prosecution of graft cases following the wounding of Francis J. Heney in the courtroom, was selected to stand for the governorship; Alfred J. Wallace, a prominent leader in Los Angeles, and widely known in church circles, was put forward for lieutenant governor; and John D. Works, an experienced jurist, also of Los Angeles, for United States senator. Among other names considered for the governorship were Francis J. Heney, Harris Weinstock, and Charles M. Belshaw. The conser-

vative Republicans considered included Charles F. Curry, Alden Anderson, Phil Stanton, and Nathan Ellery. But it became apparent that their forces were badly divided, which greatly enhanced the chances of the league candidates. The Democratic nominee was Theodore Bell, and J. Stitt Wilson was standard-bearer for the Socialists. The highly dramatic campaign was one of the most vigorous ever seen in California. It is safe to say there had never been a campaign in California like that of 1910. For his dynamic quality and indefatigable energy, his platform oratory, with its powerful invective, his keen sense of humor, and the sincerity of his appeal, Johnson won a place among the very best campaigners in the nation. He seemed to be everywhere — and everywhere he was effective. Not only was Johnson elected by a good majority over Bell, but by dint of the valiant activity of the Progressive-Republican leaders a majority of "Reform" members were elected to both houses of the state legislature. What neither Republicans nor Democrats had been able to accomplish in a generation, the Lincoln-Roosevelt League succeeded in doing almost instantly. Within thirty days after the new governor took office every Herrin adherent and every office-holder who had not shown convincing allegiance to the people had been thrown out of office. The machinery of government was quickly set up to put into actual effect the principles so warmly espoused. The forces of reform were now in a position to go forward, led by the irresistible governor, Hiram W. Johnson. He was young, courageous to the point of daring boldness, even pugnacious in his double-fisted manner, and militant to a degree, with strong political heritage from his father, Grove L. Johnson. The political power of the Southern Pacific was completely destroyed — indeed, clearly seeing the signs of the times, on its own initiative the scope of its political activities had been greatly narrowed, and it was stated that the corporation had taken no actual part in the campaign of 1910.

Such a scene had never been enacted on the stage of California politics! In it all, the electrifying influence of Theodore Roosevelt, the "bull-mooser," was distinctly felt — Hiram Johnson's explosive, tradition-defying appearance in California was like Teddy's in the nation, "an earthquake in the national conscience."

Prominent among the achievements of the Johnson administration was the noteworthy enactment of social legislation, including the Initiative, Referendum, and Recall. The right of equal suffrage was granted to women in 1911. Under the plan of the Initiative, when a petition was presented signed by the qualified electors of the state equal to eight per cent of the votes cast for all candidates

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

for governor, any proposed law must be submitted directly to the electors for their votes. Similarly, the Referendum provided that under prescribed conditions a proposed act must be referred to popular vote before becoming valid law. The Recall gave opportunity to remove an officer from his office by means of a popular petition presented by the requisite number of electors, under conditions specified. Other notable accomplishments included, among still others, the following: the Railroad Commission, with powers to establish freight and passenger rates; the "Blue Sky Law," bringing promotional concerns under rigid control; the State Board of Control, to establish the budget and provide a business-like administration; extension of Civil Service throughout the state government; suppression of race-track gambling; Old Age Pensions; Employers' Liability; Minimum Wage for women; Direct Primary; and reform of Criminal Procedure. The enactment of these provisions placed California in the forefront of the ranks of the states in the matter of direct and social legislation. As an illustration of just how social legislation functioned from 1912 to 1922, in the California *Blue Book* for 1924 appears a brief history specifying the measures in which the new methods were invoked, giving the total affirmative and negative votes on each issue. For example, in November, 1914, seventeen initiative measures were submitted — eight of them proposed constitutional amendments, nine adding to the penal code and statutes: six were adopted, eleven rejected.

Governor Johnson continued in office as governor from January 3, 1911, to March 15, 1917, when he became United States Senator, amounting to one full term and a half. It was a period of intense activity. Never had there been such a thorough overhauling in the political arena of California. It was during his administration that through the use of the Initiative, the poll (head) tax was abolished (November 3, 1914). The attitude toward organized labor was friendly: unquestionably the administration wooed the American Federation of Labor. After almost a generation of debate and agitation the Political Code of the state was amended to permit the election of United States senators by popular vote. The first use of this privilege occurred in the November, 1914 election, when James D. Phelan of San Francisco, a Democrat, defeated Francis J. Heney, Progressive, and Joseph R. Knowland, Republican.

Johnson himself was United States Senator for five terms, from 1917 to 1947. He had been nominee for the vice-presidency in 1912 on the Progressive Party ticket. No attempt is here made to record the achievements of the period, or to argue the merits and disad-



vantages of any particular measures. The groundwork having been laid by the Lincoln-Roosevelt League, it was the capable, energetic, and devoted work of a real hard-hitting crusader, Hiram W. Johnson, that was able to bring these things to pass. So pronounced were his personal achievements, so far-reaching their effect upon the entire commonwealth, that it is only just to conclude, his election in 1910 was one of the decisive events in the history of California; and there can be no doubt that it had political repercussions of a national character that were of no slight significance. "Almost overnight," wrote J. Gregg Layne, "California became the foremost commonwealth in the nation for progressive and humanitarian legislation."

**See Selected Bibliography, page 371**

## Completion of the Panama Canal, 1914

**T**HE GEOGRAPHICAL REMOTENESS OF PANAMA from California cannot be held as a reason to minimize the importance of the completion of the Panama Canal in the current of California history. The significant event may be compared to the vital relationship of Don José de Gálvez, visitor-general of New Spain, in a much earlier time, to the Spanish occupation of Alta California, though Gálvez himself never even set foot on the soil of California. He must be accounted a chief factor in California's occupation as a Spanish colony in 1769; and the completion of the canal, bringing the Pacific nearer to the Atlantic, must be pronounced a highly significant event in the political and economic history of the state of California.

There was intermittent talk about a waterway between the Atlantic and Pacific even from the time of Balboa's dramatic discovery, in 1513. It remained a dream for centuries. Very early transportation across the isthmus was by land; later the portion of the journey between Cruces and the seaport, often was made by water. Not Spain alone, but different European nations interested themselves in a practical route. Approximately a score of different routes received consideration. Not only Panama, but various parts of Central America, especially Nicaragua, came in for careful study — and there was no end of wishful thinking. Negotiations between Central American governments were started several times, invariably to come to naught.

In 1850 an agreement was reached between the United States and Great Britain, known as the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty, relating to the establishing of communication between the two oceans by means of a ship canal across Nicaragua, and forbidding the exclusive control by either nation. The treaty contemplated immediate construction of a canal; but probably no one at that time had any conception of the real magnitude of the task or of the huge difficulties involved. There were claims and counterclaims, plenty of talk, but no practical actions commensurate to the enterprise to be undertaken. For years the respective merits of the routes through Nicaragua and Panama were debated — it seemed virtually impossible to discover a basis for general agreement. With the long-drawn-out discussions, controversial aspects, national and interna-

tional complications involved, we have no concern here — except to recognize that all of them contributed in some measure to form the background of the total picture, the setting for the real drama of the construction of the Panama Canal when the time came.

Between 1850 and 1855 the first Panama Railroad was built, from Aspinwall (now Colon) to Panama. This proved to be very beneficial; but it was not sufficient — the need for a canal was still felt. Following the Civil War the United States gave consideration to several projects, and surveys were made. But before actual plans materialized the French government gained the center of the stage, and M. de Lesseps made his dramatic appearance. He formed the Universal Interoceanic Canal Company in 1880 and expressed himself in favor of a sea-level canal. Under a concession from the Colombian government, the canal was to be constructed and opened by March 3, 1892. The colossal difficulties and unanticipated problems that faced de Lesseps and the French government are familiar history — likewise the melancholy failure in the end.

In March, 1899, the United States Congress empowered the president "to make full and complete investigation of the Isthmus of Panama with a view to the construction of a canal." In January, 1902, Congress passed the "Spooner Act," empowering the president to proceed with construction under stipulated conditions. The terms demanded by the French were met, a treaty was agreed upon, and ratified by the Senate, but it was finally rejected by Colombia, in 1903. Then follow the dramatic secession, the recognition by the United States of the newly-formed Republic of Panama, and agreements with Panama for the actual construction of the canal. The final decision was against a sea-level canal: hence the extensive lock system, which experience has proved to have been best.

George Washington Goethals was head engineer. There is no question that President Theodore Roosevelt expedited the actual construction by virtue of his driving determination, aggressive activity, and sheer force of personality. The canal runs in south and southeast direction from Limon Bay at Colon on the Atlantic end to the Bay of Panama at Balboa, on the Pacific, a distance of slightly more than forty miles. Because of the axis of the isthmus, the Atlantic end is twenty-seven miles west of the Pacific end! A revised estimate brings the total cost of construction to close to 300 million dollars. One of the finest features of the entire enterprise — if only a by-product — was the remarkable achievement of sanitation, so urgently needed. The giant project was finally completed, on territory leased in perpetuity from the Republic of Panama, in 1914 —



### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

a thousand dreams extending over four centuries of time, had become a glorious reality. On the first day of August, 1914, the *S. S. Ancon* passed through the Culebra Cut at Cucaracha Slide and thus was the first ocean-going steamer to navigate the Panama Canal — its formal opening.

"The completion of the Panama-Pacific Canal," declared Henry Morse Stephens, "opens the fourth chapter in the history of the Pacific Ocean." When it was desired to design a suitable memorial the Isthmian Canal Commission agreed upon "a medal of the size of a silver dollar, with portrait of President Roosevelt on one side, and on the other a bird's-eye view of Culebra Cut, . . . with a ship passing through, and the motto of the seal 'The Land Divided, the World United,' inscribed above it." Theodore Roosevelt, the bold champion of the canal, referred to the project as "one of the giant feats of the ages." Speaking of current malicious criticism, he said:

The outrageous accusations of these slanderers constitute a gross libel upon a body of public servants who, for trained intelligence, expert ability, and high character and devotion, have never been excelled anywhere.

The completion of the Panama Canal was a truly monumental event in engineering history. The achievement of complete sanitation in that tropical pestilential area — the eradication of yellow fever and malarial diseases that had plagued it for centuries — was monumental. But overshadowing everything else are the vast commercial and economic consequences, destined to be perpetual, accruing not only to California but to the entire world. Today, as someone has said, "Panama, exciting crossroads of sea, land, and air, greets travelers from everywhere."

In commemoration of the historic event, the Panama-Pacific International Exposition, after years of careful preparation, was formally opened in San Francisco, February 20, 1915, when President Woodrow Wilson at the wireless station at Arlington, Virginia, touched the key that closed a circuit. Here was an announcement to all nations that California was freed from her state of isolation. The memorable Exposition became the theater of a notable series of conferences, congresses, and conventions — dealing with an exceptionally wide range of subjects, from agriculture to literature, from labor to religion.

Also the attractive Panama-California Exposition, held in beautiful Balboa Park, San Diego, and remaining open during 1916, not only fittingly celebrated the completion of the Canal, but justi-

fied the claim of the southern city to the title "Jewel City of California." The two great expositions, in San Francisco and San Diego, respectively, were themselves noteworthy events in the history of California. Referring to the Panama-Pacific International Exposition, its president, Charles C. Moore said:

In its field, it is, indeed, an accomplishment as monumental as the event it commemorates — the completion of the Panama Canal, not only man's greatest engineering achievement, but the most helpful single accomplishment of its kind in the world's history.

It would be difficult to overestimate the significance to California — and indeed to the nations and the world — of the completion of the Panama Canal, wholly controlled by the United States. Its commercial importance is readily illustrated by the increased magnitude of shipping at the ports of San Diego, Los Angeles, and San Francisco. Its strategic value as a military post is almost incomprehensible.

We must agree with Professor Stephens when he stated;

The Panama Canal indicates how strongly the face of mankind is turning to the greatest of oceans, on the shores of which with its adjoining seas more than half of the human race already resides.

Here was an event that contributed to bring to realization the famous utterance of William H. Seward, in 1852; "the Pacific Ocean, its shores, its islands, and the vast region beyond will become the chief theater of events in the world's great hereafter." Two further quotations from eminent authorities, though scarcely needed, may be employed to confirm the completion of the Panama Canal in 1914 as decisive to California, with its thousand-mile coastline facing the greatest of the seven seas. Chester H. Rowell, one of our most prescient publicists, spoke these words, almost a generation ago:

We need to become more Pacific-minded . . . The story of the future is that East which is just westward of our West. It will be an increasingly important fact in our lives, and perhaps the determining one in the lives of our children.

Theodore Roosevelt, shortly before his death, with the vision of a true sage, reminded us all:

The Mediterranean era died with the discovery of America; the Atlantic era is now at the height of its development. The Pacific era, destined to be the greatest of all, is just at the dawn.

See Selected Bibliography, page 371

## Passage by Congress of the Immigration Act of 1924



WHILE THE FACT MAY NOT BE GENERALLY RECOGNIZED, the far-Eastern nations of Asia bore a significant relationship to the course of history in California — a statement that applies more particularly — though not exclusively — to China and Japan. In one form or another, the “Chinese question” was a factor whose beginnings appeared even before the coming of California to statehood: for many years it commanded more attention, caused greater agitation — economic and political — than any other single problem before the people. Following the Congressional anti-immigration act of 1882 the problem was not so acute; but the dominant sentiment was still very pronounced against the immigration of Chinese labor.

The early Japanese immigrants in California inherited much of the feeling of hostility that had been engendered against the Chinese. Their numbers did not exceed 1,000 in any one year before 1891; but within the single decade that followed the total number of Japanese population had mounted to approximately 72,000. In the light of the past, and considered as a threat for the future, that was a condition that Californians viewed as alarming.

No serious opposition to Japanese immigration had been expressed until the beginning of the twentieth century. It was not until 1905 that the problem was brought into clear focus in San Francisco, largely through the appearance in the *Chronicle* newspaper of a series of articles, critical of the presence of older Japanese boys with younger American children in the public schools of elementary grades. About that same time the Asiatic Exclusion League was organized by trade union leaders.

When the San Francisco Board of Education declared for the establishment of separate schools for Chinese and Japanese pupils, and later passed an order transferring them to the Oriental Schools, immediate formal protest was made by the Japanese government to our federal government. The tension was temporarily relieved by the prompt action of President Theodore Roosevelt, resulting in the rescinding of the objectionable order before it was carried into actual effect. But by no means did that end the matter. In the light of



the longer perspective, it is now clear that the Japanese government was supersensitive, and on the other hand that the Californians were at times super-apprehensive.

However that may be, the problem of the immigration of Japanese laborers became an absorbing topic in California, with its economic and political aspects and with wider social implications; in fact, the story of the Japanese problem constitutes a noteworthy chapter in our state history, which the historian cannot ignore. A few of the highlights may be briefly sketched here. While at the time the federal government had little sympathy or understanding with the prevailing attitude of the Californians, the Congress did, in 1907, start legislation against the admission of Japanese from Canada, Mexico, and our island possessions in the Pacific — this became effective in 1908.

But with the increasing influx of Japanese laborers the crusade against their admission rapidly mounted. Organized opposition that was particularly intense and vehement was from leaders of organized labor, American farmers, especially the members of the Grange, and the dominant factor of the Native Sons of the Golden West. The "Gentlemen's Agreement" proved to be only a mild palliative. Renewed agitation led up to the California Land Alien Law of 1913, enacted by the California State Legislature. This was clearly aimed to prevent aliens, ineligible to American citizenship, from holding land. The drastic measure, known as the Webb Act, produced a storm of protest of real magnitude. From the national standpoint, there was genuine fear of jeopardizing our cordial relations with Japan, a friendly nation. The issue was so urgent that President Woodrow Wilson dispatched Secretary of State William Jennings Bryan to Sacramento, to counsel with the legislators and assist "in the framing of a law which would meet the views of the people of the State, and yet leave untouched the international obligations of the United States." Nevertheless, so insistent were the local legislators that the bill, in all its essentials, was passed by overwhelming vote and was approved by Governor Hiram Johnson. The effect of Bryan's visit seemed to be precisely the opposite from that intended. Naturally, the Japanese government was far from satisfied. The Webb Act, it may now be reported, was belatedly — in 1952 — ruled unconstitutional, by the Supreme Court of California.

Reasons for the strong opposition to the immigration of Japanese laborers fall under three main heads, economic, political, and social. On the surface, the economic grounds were clearly apparent

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

— the Japanese willingly worked for lower wages and displayed special aptitude for farming and truck gardening. In 1919 Senator J. M. Inman claimed that the Japanese “control almost 92 percent of the bean crops . . . 90 percent of the celery, 82 percent of the asparagus crop . . . 63 percent of the cantaloupes . . .”

Politically, the eligibility of Japanese to American citizenship had some possible basis on the report that a score of them had actually been admitted; but the general dictum was understood to be that persons of the Japanese race were ineligible. Still there was grave apprehension on the part of some Californians because of an alleged penetration into the American Republic, “determined to win California for the Yamato race.” “The right to penetration is the only thing that will satisfy Japan,” said a writer in the *Fresno Republican*, “because it wishes to find foreign territory for its surplus population and is willing to take chances . . .” Resolutions were adopted opposing their admission to citizenship, and protesting vigorously against the presence of numerous persons ineligible to citizenship.

A third and very broad ground of opposition to Japanese immigration may be called the social aspect. This was quite surely the most fundamental and far-reaching of all, though perhaps the most difficult of accurate definition. In many minds it resolved itself into the question of race amalgamation. If that is undesirable and impracticable, it was argued, then the presence of a large population of unassimilables in the United States must inevitably constitute another serious race problem, possibly even more difficult of solution than the negro problem. The issue was further complicated by the introduction of the “picture brides.” Nearly 7,000 picture brides are reported to have come to the Pacific Coast alone. This was a matter of far more than local concern. There was ceaseless clamor.

To ardent advocates for exclusion it was not a question of denouncing the Japanese as an inferior race: the issue of superiority was really not involved: it was rather a matter of difference. The economic competition, while severe, could be met; political aspects, while perhaps a problem for grave concern in themselves, were not an insoluble difficulty: the real crux of the matter, reduced to its lowest terms, was this — “We must keep California white.”

Reports of various methods of evasion of the Alien Land Law of 1913, to say nothing of the weakness of the “Gentlemen’s Agreement” and the introduction of the “picture brides” — these fanned

the flames of the agitation against the presence of the Japanese in California and the prospects for a continuing tide of immigration. Early in the year 1924, the whole immigration policy of the United States came up in Congress for a thorough over-hauling and final consideration. The pressure from California had been unremitting. However the struggle may be viewed in retrospect, after the tragic events of the Second World War, with the revolutionary changes of recent years, it must be conceded that the deep-seated and persistent opposition to Japanese immigration in California was based on a very concrete situation. At the critical time when the passage of the 1924 bill was impending Ambassador Hanihara, not questioning the "inherent sovereign power of each State to limit and control immigration to its own domains," deplored what he regarded as evident injustice to a foreign power "in disregard of its proper self-respect, of international understandings, or of ordinary rules of comity." But the ambassador's use of the words "grave consequences" had the opposite effect to that desired — this "veiled threat" sped the passage of the measure through Congress, which was given approval by President Coolidge.

The final passage of the comprehensive law of 1924 was undoubtedly intended to deal with the question of Japanese immigration, although the Japanese were not specifically mentioned by name. Section 13, subdivision C provides:

No alien ineligible to citizenship shall be admitted to the United States unless such alien is admitted as a non-quota immigrant under the provisions of the law which relates to students, teachers, ministers, government officials, missionaries, artists, merchants, travelers, and others.

Section 28, subdivision C provides:

The term "ineligible to citizenship" when used in any reference to any individual includes an individual who is debarred from becoming a citizen under Section 2169 of the Revised Statutes, or under Section 14 of the Chinese Exclusion Act of 1882.

The section here referred to provides that only "white persons or persons of African nativity or African descent" are eligible to citizenship by naturalization. During the years immediately following 1924 the departure of Japanese from California considerably exceeded the entrants; but those in the state continued to increase in number, especially when the *Nisei* (of second generation) are included.

Japan has always been a proud nation. Convinced that the Act of 1924 was aimed at her, her feeling of resentment was deep — she



### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

could not continue in the friendship of America that had been traditional before the Japanese question in California had arisen. Year after year the resentment continued. Finally, when the global upheaval known as World War II cast its dark shadow across the human horizon, Japan entered the conflict on the side of Germany; and soon the United States was at war against a friend of an earlier day. While this regrettable situation came as a shock to many Americans, it can hardly be called a surprise to the thoughtful student of California history. There is no known calculus by which to measure the actual influence of the passage of the Act of 1924 upon the course pursued by Japan; but that the Act, as the culmination of a long series of events and disturbing forces, was decisive not only in California but in the United States, with world-wide repercussions, there is no room for reasonable doubt.

At long last, it is pleasant to record that by some strange nemesis of history the great war was instrumental in solving the grave problems that had vexed the people of California, that the apparently irreconcilable conflict between the races has been dissolved, and that once again the Japanese government has become friendly to America and has taken its place among the free nations of the world.

**See Selected Bibliography, page 372**

*Chapter Fifteen*

## Drafting of the United Nations Charter At San Francisco, 1945



SO HIGHLY IMPORTANT WAS THE HISTORIC CONFERENCE held in San Francisco in 1945, that in referring to it Norman Angell made this trenchant statement: "What comes out of San Francisco will be the real test of whether or not the war has been fought in vain." He noted the incredible rapidity with which the whole world situation may change. While the drafting of the Charter for the United Nations is in the perspective of history a very recent event, we are assured it will take rank as one of the most important events in the entire history of California.

The sessions of the historic Conference continued from April 25 to June 26, 1945. It was at the Yalta Meeting (February 4 to 11, 1945) that it was decided to hold this founding conference in the city of San Francisco, during the ensuing spring. President Franklin D. Roosevelt, while deplorably absent from the meeting, had already expressed its underlying purpose quite simply, "to assure the blessings of peace."

The selection of San Francisco, among all the cities of the world, as the place of meeting, was a significant recognition of the strategic position of the City by the Golden Gate, and of the location of the Golden State in reference to world affairs. It is the city that had been threatened in December, 1941, of which Pearl Harbor may be called the outpost on the ocean. The people of San Francisco and of California were deeply appreciative of the distinguished honor of serving as host to the memorable conference. The cordiality of the people of San Francisco and their great enthusiasm deeply impressed the attending delegates and their friends, who had come from the ends of the earth. Their demonstration of interest in the high aims and purposes of the meeting were a source of encouragement to those who had come great distances. San Francisco took on the aspect of a capital of the world and played its part well.

Forty-six nations were represented by their respective delegations, each group including official delegates and special advisers. The high caliber of the participants is made immediately apparent by mere mention of the names of a few; Jan Christian Smuts of South Africa, Anthony Eden of Great Britain, Arthur H. Vandenberg of the United States, L. McKenzie King of Canada, T. V.

### *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

Soong of the Republic of China, and Henri Bonnet of France. Other interested persons and visitors, besides official participants, were attracted to San Francisco, in considerable numbers, from all over the world. San Francisco was host to a remarkable gathering of distinguished guests. Never had there been such a conference of comparable international personnel in California. For, as L. Larry Leonard has said, "the infant United Nations has a genealogy; it has inherited traits as though transmitted by chromosomes . . ."

The prestige of the League of Nations, of which the United States was never a member, though President Woodrow Wilson had given his life to the cause it represented, was low and the exigencies of World War II brought that noble enterprise to a melancholy end. California now took sincere pride in being host to the founding conference of the United Nations Organization. It was at Yalta, as already noted, that the decision was reached to hold the founding conference in the City of San Francisco.

The sessions of the conference continued from April 25 to the last week of June. No attempt is made here to present a complete narration of the almost super-human task of framing a charter that could be expected to meet the approval of all the signatories; but fortunately the complete record of the entire proceedings is available to the student as well as to the statesman.

Edward R. Stettinius, Secretary of State for the United States, at length presented the preliminary draft of the charter. "Oh, what a great day this can be in history!" exclaimed President Truman to the delegates as they were signing the charter in San Francisco. It provides for four major organs: (1) General Assembly; (2) Security Council; (3) Economic and Social Council; (4) International Court of Justice. The administrative work was to be done by the General Secretariat, headed by the Secretary-General. The first holder of this highly important post was Trygve Lie; the present incumbent is Dag Hammarskjöld, recently elected unanimously for a second five-year term. Few among us even today have any adequate conception of the scope of the work undertaken by the United Nations. It embraces wide political and security aspects, the high function to improve economic and social conditions, remove the barriers to world trade, reduce and eradicate specific social evils (as harmful narcotic drugs), bring about improvement in non-self-governing territories, promote the progressive development of international law, and still others — an impressive list, indeed.

It would be exceedingly difficult, perhaps impossible, to single out any specific provision of the charter as the most important.



However, the work of the Commission on Human Rights sets up a significant milestone in the annals of mankind. A drafting committee was established whose function it was to prepare the preliminary draft of an International Bill of Human Rights. This committee consisted of Australia, Chile, France, Lebanon, Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, United Kingdom, and the United States. Late in 1947 the Commission on Human Rights at Geneva reached an agreement on the text of a draft "Declaration" and a draft "Covenant." The declaration of human rights included 33 articles, some of the most important being; the right to life, liberty and personal security; freedom from arbitrary arrest; a fair trial; to own property; freedom of thought, conscience, and expression; freedom of worship; right to work, to education, and to social security; right to a nationality.

The San Francisco Conference had been an industrious body of resourceful workers. Officials in San Francisco had extended themselves to afford every needed facility, such as library service and accommodations for the numerous representatives of the press. In addition to all this the City by the Golden Gate proved her traditional hospitality by providing a wide variety of entertainment for the distinguished visitors — in short, she demonstrated Western hospitality at its best.

One of the most vexing problems arising in connection with international organization is that of sovereignty. It is stated in the United Nations Charter, "The organization is based on the principle of the sovereign equality of all the Members." It is the old American question of States Rights *versus* Federal Control (centrifugal *versus* centripetal forces) now raised to world scope. Sovereignty is something to juggle with, it savors of mysticism, in the words of J. W. Fulbright, "one of those esoteric, untouchable principles . . . which common mortals do not question or discuss without suspicion of sacrilege or treason." Since the time of Hugo Grotius (1583-1645), known as "the father of international law," the concept of sovereignty has undergone a number of distinct phases; and it is safe to say that what we call the sovereign state will in the future undergo still further metamorphosis. We live in a highly dynamic age, and being committed to world organization, our spirit of nationalism must necessarily be reconcilable to world collaboration—the national interest must be harmonized or identified with that of the member states in their collective capacity. Inevitably it follows that concession and adjustment must be made in the interest of all.

Since 1945 membership in the United Nations has increased

## *Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*

to more than 80 — still other nation-states are eager to become members. The end of the first decade was fittingly celebrated in San Francisco, where a note of hope and optimism was evident. The most crucial test of the organization's strength and stability came in connection with the crisis in the Middle East in 1956-57, particularly the threatening trouble precipitated by President Nasser of Egypt over the control of the Suez Canal and related questions, and the interposition of military force by Britain, France, and Israel. With admirable skill and restraint Secretary-General Hammarskjöld achieved almost incredible results. His unanimous re-election is indeed a good omen for the durability of the United Nations.

The great steel-and-glass skyscraper that stands majestically on the banks of the East River in New York City is the great heart and center of the United Nations. It is there, with distinguished delegates from all over the world, that the charter, established in San Francisco in 1945, is operating and making history. Loyal Americans everywhere are awakened and thrilled by their national participation in this grand international organization, the mainstay of the world, which points hopefully to the dawn of an era of lasting universal peace.

See Selected Bibliography, page 372

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER TWELVE

- Cleland, Robert Glass, *California in Our Time, 1900-1940*; New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1947 (Chaps. 2-4)  
Davis, Winfield J., *History of Political Conventions in California, 1849-1892*; Sacramento, 1893 (Pub. by Trustees of Calif. State Library)  
Hichborn, Franklin, *Story of the Session of the California Legislature of 1909* (also 1911, 1913); San Francisco: Press of James H. Barry Co.  
Hunt, Rockwell D., *California, an American Commonwealth* (Chap. XXXVII)  
Layne, J. Gregg, *The Lincoln-Roosevelt League*. Reprint of Historical Society of So. Calif. Quarterly, Vol. XXV, No. 3 (September, 1943), Los Angeles  
Leech, F. A., *"The System" as Uncovered by the San Francisco Graft Prosecution*. San Francisco, 1915  
Lewis, Oscar, *The Big Four . . .*; New York and London: Alfred A. Knopf, 1941  
Mowry, George E., *The California Progressives*; Berkeley: Univ. of California Press, 1951  
Norris, Frank, *The Octopus: A Story of California*; New York: A. Wessels Co., 1906  
Older, Frémont, *My Story*. San Francisco, 1925 (Privately printed, small edition)

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER THIRTEEN

- Annual Reports of the Governor of the Panama Canal*; Washington, D.C., 1915 -  
Bishop, Joseph Bucklin, *The Panama Gateway*, (new and revised edition); New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1917  
*California's Magazine* (single issue, July, 1915). Series of articles by John Barrett, Benj. I. Wheeler, Jos. R. Knowland, and others.  
Cleland, Robert Glass, and Osgood Hardy, *March of Industry*; Los Angeles: Powell Publishing Co., 1929 (See Index)  
Goethals, S. W., *The Panama Canal*, 2 vols. Washington, D.C., 1911  
Hodges, Henry F., "The Panama Canal," in Eldredge, ed., *History of California* (Vol. V, pp 525 ff.)  
Hunt, Rockwell D., and William Sheffield Ament, *Ozcart to Airplane*; Los Angeles: Powell Pub. Co., 1929 (Part II)

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

- James, George Wharton, *California, Romantic and Beautiful*; Boston: The Page Co., 1914 (Chap. VII)
- Pacific Ocean in History, The*, Papers and addresses prepared at the Panama-Pacific Historical Conference at San Francisco, Berkeley, and Palo Alto, July 9-23, 1915. Edited by Henry Morse Stephens and Herbert E. Bolton. New York: 1917
- Todd, Frank Morton, *The Story of the Exposition*, (International Celebration at San Francisco, 1915, in 5 vols.). New York and London: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1921

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER FOURTEEN

- Buell, Raymond Leslie, "Japanese Immigration." *World Peace Foundation Pamphs.*, Vol. VII, Nos. 5-16; Boston, 1924
- California Council on Oriental Relations*. Reports and Bulletins; Berkeley, 1932-1933
- "California and the Oriental, Japanese and Hindus," *Report of State Board of Control to Gov. Wm. D. Stephens*; Sacramento: State Printing Office, 1920
- "Chinese and Japanese in America." *Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Science*, Vol. XXXIV, No. 2 (September, 1909): Philadelphia, 1909
- Gulick, Sidney L., *The American-Japanese Problem*; New York: Chas. Scribner's Sons, 1914
- Ichihashi, Yamato, (1) *Japanese Immigration: Its Status in California*; San Francisco: Japanese Association in America; San Francisco: 1913 (2) *Japanese in the United States . . .*; Palo Alto: Stanford Univ. Press, 1932
- Iyenaga, T., and K. Sato, *Japan and the California Problem*; New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1921
- Jordan, David Starr, "The Japanese Problem in California," in *Out West*, Vol. XXIV, No. 3 (March, 1907)
- Kawakami, K. K. (ed.), "The Japanese Problem: A Symposium." Pub. by *The Japanese-American News*, San Francisco
- McClatchy, V. S., (1) "Japanese Immigration and Colonization" (Brief prepared for consideration of State Dept. of Education, 2nd. ed. Oct. 1, 1921) (2) "The Japanese in California"; in *Overland Monthly*, San Francisco, March, 1924
- Nitobe, Inazo, (Ota), *Intercourse between the United States and Japan*; Extra Vol. VIII, Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press (1904)
- Paul, R. W., *The Abrogation of the Gentlemen's Agreement*; Cambridge: Harvard Univ. Press, 1936
- Tupper, Eleanor R., and G. E. McReynolds, *Japan in American Public Opinion*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1937

### SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY — CHAPTER FIFTEEN


- Arne, Sigrid, *United Nations Primer*, revised ed.; New York and Toronto: Rinehart & Co., Inc., c. 1948.
- Dulles, John Foster, *War or Peace*; New York: The Macmillan Co., 1950
- Evatt, Herbert Vere, *The United Nations*; Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1948
- Everyman's United Nations*, Introduction by Trygve Lie. Prepared and published for the Dept. of Public Information of U. N., New York: Funk & Wagnalls Co., 1948
- Free World*, Vol. IX, No. 6 (June, 1945). "San Francisco and World Organization" — a group of articles
- Harley, J. Eugene, *Documentary Textbook on the United Nations*; Los Angeles: Center for International Understanding, 1950
- Leonard, L. Larry, *International Organization*; New York: McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc., 1951
- "Symposium on World Organizations," *Yale Law Journal*; New Haven, Conn., Vol. LV, No. 5 (August, 1946)
- "*The United Nations at Work: Basic Documents*"; Boston: World Peace Foundation, 1947
- United Nations Chronology, January, 1942-April, 1947*; Lake Success, 1947
- United Nations, a Handbook of the U. N.*, Columbus, Ohio and New York: Charles E. Merrill Co. (c.1946)
- United Nations News*, Vol. I, No. 1 (April, 1946); London: U. N. Associated Monthly
- United Nations World*, Vol I, No. 1 (February, 1947); New York: U. N. World, Inc. (monthly)
- Vandenberg, A. H., Jr., ed., *The Private Papers of Senator Vandenberg*; Boston: Houghton Mifflin Co., 1952
- Wilson, Clara O., *Working Together in the United Nations*; Lincoln and New York: The University Pub. Co. (c. 1947)



# Mining Camps *of the* Soledad

By Arthur B. Perkins

## PART III

N 1886, THE RAILROAD STARTED ITS LONG DISCUSSED BRANCH LINE down the Santa Clara Valley to Ventura, from a point "just north of the cattle pens" at Newhall, close to Ninth Street. At that time, there was an old adobe residence at about Eleventh and Chestnut Streets. It was feared the vibration from the trains would disintegrate the mud bricks. To avoid argument, the railroad company thought twice.

Newhall town lots were about sold out and the town was still existent. Possibly putting a railroad junction point, originally planned for Newhall, by the original townsite near Soledad Canyon's mouth would float a second townsite. So the branch railroad, starting from today's Saugus, was open to traffic by February 8th, 1887. It reached Ventura May 18th, Carpinteria July first, and Santa Barbara August 19th.

There was a not too severe earthquake. The adobe responsible for the re-routing of the railroad branch collapsed. The Ventura Stage lines also ended.

The year of 1887 was disastrous for the little mining town. In October, the Southern Hotel went up in flames. It was never rebuilt. Shortly afterwards the Grammar School, then taught by George Larkey, burned.

The corporation that had succeeded the late Mr. Newhall may not have been too well sold on their Los Angeles County lands. They sold nothing from the "lower ranch" by Ventura County and the Camulos ranch. That was already highly cultivated. Apparently they welcomed sales prospects from the easterly end of their lands, farthest from the flow of the Santa Clara river.

ST. JOHN'S SUBDIVISION

In 1886, "Colonization" was very popular. (It is called "subdividing" today.) Anaheim was a successful colony of German artisans turned vineyardists. Whittier was a "colonization" of Quakers. Lompoc and Compton were Prohibitionist colonies.

The Good Templars were then a virile organization, a popular catch-all for folks with a trend to a radical outlet. Governor John P. St. John, of Kansas, was then the national Prohibitionist leader. Jesse Yarnell was a successful land operator in Los Angeles, interested in the Porter Land Company at nearby San Fernando, and an ardent Prohibitionist. George B. Katzenstein was a capitalist of Sacramento. The trio dealt with the Newhall Land and Farming Co. for purchase and subdivision of acreage lying, very roughly, between Saugus and the southerly extremities of the ranch, some ten thousand acres in extent. This was for the purpose of promoting a Prohibitionist colony. It was mapped in 1887 as "St. John's Subdivision."

One clause in the tract deeds is "that no distilled or alcoholic liquors, or malt, beer, intoxicating liquors whatsoever shall be manufactured, sold, or offered for sale, or kept in storage, made or used as a beverage upon the premises hereby or any part thereof, by party of the second part, or any person holding under him."<sup>1</sup> The deed being subject to enforcement of this clause, it may reasonably be assumed the subdividers planned their colony primarily for purity.

To assure success of the project, in 1889, St. John sent west as "Superintendent of the St. John subdivision of the San Francisco Rancho," Henry Clay Needham. Needham has been educated at Hamilton College, Elizabethtown, Kentucky. He had taught school, prior to acquiring experience in selling land as a Kansas "Boomer," also in raising livestock and general farming. He had served as mayor of Arcadia, Kansas, where he had a successful lumber and hardware business.<sup>2</sup> Needham was very active within the Prohibitionist circles, establishing contacts with the movement in Los Angeles. He also promoted a local Good Templar Lodge. Their hall stood on Pine Street.

One of Mr. Needham's first Newhall land sales was to a fellow Arcadian, John W. Buchert, first to re-subdivide under the St. John's tract, also first extension of the townsite. The next group of Newhall street names came straight from Kansas, being Kansas, Arcadia, Oak and Hill Streets. There were only occasional sales of isolated five or ten acre parcels in the St. John Tract.

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

The Boom of the Eighties had busted. At Newhall, things were worse. The railroad had started a competitive town three miles away. Beale's Cut was now a county road and a tough pull, even for mules. Railroads were not set up for the convenience of little mining camps. There was a twice-a-day stage to Pico and a once-a-day train north and south. Most of the homesteaders weren't losing. Part time work in the oil fields carried them through. The nearest lode mining was up in the hills, by Acton. Oil, only, was getting to be more and more.

It is surprising how many local families, still resident in the township, came in the Eighteen Sixties or earlier. They include the Mitchells, Ruiz, Raggios, Jenkins, Carmichaels, Powells, Lyons, Mores, Cordovas, Suraccos, Delanos, Olmes, Giffords.

A side activity of the town was fruit drying. The Earl Fruit Company of Los Angeles, Fleming & Fontana of San Francisco and Visalia, and other similar operators, utilized the broad flat east of the tracks for fruit drying. Even after mechanical dehydration had come into use in the dried fruit industry, it was not uncommon for fruit dryers to burn out or be stymied by machiney breakdowns. At those times, Newhall picked up a temporary payroll.

One of those days when the entire flat was well covered by trays of cut and drying fruit, a "twister" (similar to the twister that deroofed the local ice plant in 1955) came shooting down the valley. Trays and apricots, trays and apricots, rained heavily for some time.<sup>3</sup>

At the drying sheds, the cutters were all Chinese. The foremen were Americans and they were instructed by the Chinese Tong leader, acting as Padrone, to fire employees every week or so. The leader got \$1.00 per head for furnishing new employees.<sup>4</sup>

In 1889 Needham opened his lumber yard and hardware store. It was across Market Street, facing Pine Street. The old store was later remodeled into an existing residential rental. About this time, Ed Pardee, one of the Pennsylvania oil men brought out by Schofield about 1880, decided to make a change. He came down from Pico and started a livery barn in a shed adjacent to Smith's Blacksmith shop on the west side of Spruce Street, north of Market Street. Blacksmiths were mighty important people in the camps of those days. Drills had to be hand sharpened. Tools and repairs were both hand jobs, whether for mining, oil well drilling, or farming. If anything broke — and what didn't — you fixed it. If you couldn't fix it, you just kept on walking.



The Newhall Land and Farming Company had apparently crossed off the Upper Ranch from any future plans when they contracted its acreage sale with the St. John group. H. M. Newhall's Hotel, his school house, and many of his other buildings had burned. The corporation held no sentimental attachment to anything remaining in the little village. The working stock, implements, all of the equipment used in working the Upper Ranch were sold off. Even Mr. Newhall's favorite Spanish mules were sold. Ed Pardee bought them and shortly afterwards built the Pardee Livery Stables on the northeast corner of Market and Spuce. Pardee also acquired the second "Southern Hotel." Pardee probably didn't particularly want that but he had loaned a Mr. Loudon the money necessary to remodel the old hotel harness shed into a small hotel. Taking over the building was the only way he could get any of his money back.

In 1890, John Haskell, a pioneer, bought the Haskell Canyon ranch. This same year, the Lewmans came to town, attracted by the stories of Ratsburg. They later took up a ranch at San Martinez Chiquito Canyon. Since the burning of Newhall's gift Grammar School, the children had been attending a makeshift in one of the old board and batt shacks on Spruce Street, just north of today's 24313 San Fernando Road. Replacement of the old school, on the original site, built to the original design, was opened this year. It would be Newhall's fourth grammar school building.

In 1879, a small group of local families started joining in Sunday Meetings, originally held at the Southern Hotel. After the Southern burned, the group held together, meeting here and there, ending up in the new grammar school in 1888. August 4th, 1891, the Rev. W. D. Seward organized a "little church" class, of which the original families, the Drews, Gavins, Fields, and Giffords made up all but two of the charter members. In 1893, they again organized, this time as the Community Presbyterian Church, and with a few others, built their first church upon Newhall Avenue lots donated to them by Mrs. H. M. Newhall. Today's Community Presbyterian Church stands on the same site.<sup>5</sup>

Surrey postoffice, at Saugus Junction, was established August 5th, 1891. In 1894, the first Castaic postoffice was opened September 15th, but was suspended the following August.<sup>6</sup> A school district had been organized at Castaic as of March 25th, 1889.<sup>7</sup>

The Nineties was a lugubrious decade. Practically nothing happened. A few land patents sifted through in 1897, covering the

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

homesteads of Thomas B. Walker, Joseph Reynier, and G. H. Thompson in the Placeritas Canyon, William Bailey in the San Francisquito, and John Whitney in the Whitney Canyon.

The federal census of 1900 listed 442 people from Newhall, apparently including the folks from Pico and the township canyons. The thermal springs at Lang and Newhall were becoming known, and the area was being recommended for invalids and general health conditions. Lang had erected a hotel by his sulphur springs, in the Soledad Canyon. A spa had also been promoted in the Ellesmere.<sup>8</sup> Less and less gold dust was coming from the placers. Fortunately, more was coming from oil. Industrial communities are built upon a base of cheap fuel. The local oil production made possible a Los Angeles fuel cost competitive with coal at \$2.80 a ton. Prices of 1890!

Newhall looked like even less than it had looked. The Southern Hotel was only a memory. The little local camp businesses were certainly no bigger. Water, or rather the lack of water, was a major problem. On the square, Nick Rivera's saloon drew water through a half-mile of  $\frac{3}{4}$ -inch pipe, meandering westerly to a spring, long dry, back of the Market Street spur. T. M. Frew had taken the blacksmith shop over from Sam Smith in 1900, as well as the J. O. Newhall home next door. He had about  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a mile of 1-inch pipe running to a still active spring by the railroad tracks. The railroad got its water from wells by Saugus Junction. The Newhall Ranch had originally installed a 2-inch pipe line, running about a mile between the Southern Hotel and its outbuildings and a spring in the Railroad Canyon by the oil refinery. The ranch was broad-minded on the question of water. Local buildings without previously mentioned water sources could use water from the ranch line if, as, and when, the line happened to have surplus water in it, which was when no one else wanted water either.

There was also a slight local problem of general business. Campton's and Gulley's Newhall stores were still running. Gold scales were still standard equipment in any place of business. There was a little payroll from Newhall ranch, a much better payroll from Pico. The square was quite like a deserted village excepting, possibly, Saturday nights when, by tradition, the wild wolves from Bitter Creek were supposed to howl.

Beale's Cut, the lifesaver of 1863, was now throttling the area. It had become a county road at expiration of the toll road franchise. Maintenance was not too good. If a wagon track ran to a known

point, and you could see a half mile over the so-called road, it was considered in good condition. Worse, motor cars were now coming into use. The small farmsteads at the top of the Divide were eating off folks who over-estimated the capabilities of their motor cars and had to have mules to get over the Cut.

The century's first decade was a trial and tribulation until the City of Los Angeles commenced construction of the Los Angeles Aqueduct, with a resultant consistent demand for both labor and mules. For many years, each harvest season had seen the Swall Harvester brought down from the Antelope Valley, manned by Jake Swall and his three boys, Albert C., Henry, and Jake, Jr. Harvesting was hard labor. Feeling that there must be some easier way of making a living, in 1904, Albert left the harvester crew and started a little meat market next to the Derrick Saloon at the end of the square.

Successful in his first venture, he joined his cousin, James Gullely, in operation of the old Newhall General Merchandise Store at the other end of the square, in 1906, and shortly took over the Gullely interest. Next came landlord trouble. The landlord's estimate of the location on the square, based probably on no vacancies, differed widely from Swall's valuation. The only available building in town was the second Southern Hotel, now property of Ed Pardee, the constable and owner of most of the loose property off Main Street. Swall paid Pardee \$5,000 for Block 31. This was an undivided block, originally reserved by H. M. Newhall for his hotel and other enterprises. The building faced the back street (now San Fernando Road). Swall put his general store and postoffice on the ground floor, thus accommodating both hotel and store patrons.<sup>9</sup>

If that old register still existed (it burned, with the building, in 1917), it would have patterned the early history of the movies. Newhall was then a favorite location for films. Also, getting back to the City, during location, was something to be taken seriously. Everybody but Mary Pickford stayed at Swall's Hotel. On the register were Harry Carey, Cecil deMille, Dustin Farnum. Those early "Greats," "The Virginians" and "The Light of the Eastern Star" were filmed on the Lassalle Ranch and the Sanborn Ranch. Mary Pickford and William S. Hart filmed "Rags" at the old Newhall Land and Farming Company's deserted warehouse on the square. Charles Chaplin used the old Presbyterian Chapel as a favorite location up to the time it was moved and turned into a rental duplex, making room for the Community Presbyterian Church. Tom Mix lived in a little outbuilding of the Pardee home for years, filming



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

hereabout. Incidentally, to this day, plenty of local folks supplement their annual incomes with "extra" checks. Before being wrecked or just naturally falling down, the old buildings on the square were assured of quite a little money each year as location. As for the old chapel, it has been claimed that the location checks for films in some years exceeded the local contributions for the pastor.

The Newhall Land and Farming Company was very unhappy. The St. John subdivision had been a horrible flop. The Land Company was forced to take the land back. Even worse, a few parcels had been sold but they were scattered widely over the extensive ranch acreage south of the Pico Road, with the result that several thousand acres were not available for farming or grazing without tremendous fencing costs incurred for access to the sold parcels.

Their feelings were known to Mr. Needham who had been having a bad time due to losses in oil and mining ventures. Needham went over the hills to a fellow Prohibitionist, one H. W. Atwood, for financial backing, which he got. Needham and Atwood then contracted for the unsold ranch lands south of the Pico Road. The only money ever advanced by Atwood was the first payment to bind the contract.<sup>10</sup> The partnership land sales came fast enough to meet all necessary payments, including the cost of installation of Newhall's first water system. With the water mains, folks first moved into the Happy Valley.

At about this time, around 1910, the County of Los Angeles listened to the shrieks of anguished motorists and replaced the facilities of Beale's Cut with the bored Newhall tunnel. Actually, the state had entered the picture. Need of through highways was beginning to be felt. The tunnel was only one item. The Highway Commission disliked the two fifty-foot jogs at the railroad depot right of way, on the existing road, but were unable to make arrangements with the necessary property owners to eliminate the jogs.

Aware of the disagreement and wanting the highway frontage as a business facility, Swall went to Ed Pardee, T. M. Frew, and other property owners facing the back street (San Fernando Road of today), made up a purse, bought fee title to Block Nine of the townsite at Tenth Street, and told the State Highway Commission to run the right of way through the block, as they might wish, at no cost to the state, which re-routed their proposed improvements. Instead of a highway on Railroad Avenue (Main Street), the road improvements went down the despised back

street, curving through Block Nine well beyond the disputed original routing.<sup>11</sup>

Things were really changing. In 1908, Saugus had organized its own school district. By 1913, local growth necessitated a school district at Mint Canyon, superinduced by the Mint Canyon road which had pulled traffic, and resultant settlers, up the new routing.<sup>12</sup> General traffic conditions had been greatly improved when Beale's Cut was abandoned for the new highway Newhall tunnel in 1910. The local grammar school suffered from the passage of the years. On the west side, the two-story structure was propped up close to plumb by long timbers, a glance at which would bring up questions. In 1911, Buchert filed a re-subdivision of Lot 16, of St. John's subdivision, setting aside Lots 1, 2, 13 and 14 for school purposes. The new building came into use about 1914.

Moving from the square started about 1913. Emil Chaix then picked up the Derrick saloon and shoved it over to the southwest corner of San Fernando road, Spruce and Eighth Streets.<sup>13</sup> Charles Conrad built a new dancehall in 1914, on the new road, just across from the present Ford garage. It was a social center for a decade — every Saturday night. The payroll at the Sterling Borax Works in Tick Canyon, off Soledad, inspired homesteading thereabout.

On the new highway, Swall struck again, building his two-story brick hotel building just across from his second Southern Hotel, which unfortunately burned a little later, the heat being so great that the windows in Swall's Hotel across the street broke whenever water hit them.

The old mining camp couldn't take this sort of punishment. In fact, there was practically no more mining. The bloom was off the rose at Pico. There was no hope excepting traffic, and that had been definitely diverted. Main Street, the square, Railroad Avenue, were deserted. Any buildings on the square capable of withstanding vibration were skidded backwards on the "back street" frontage. The warehouses were razed for salvage. By 1920, nothing remained in or of old Newhall. Starting afresh on the new highway, the town of Newhall was already sprouting pin feathers, preparing for flights in a not too distant future.

### Pico

Driving out the old San Fernando Road and turning west at Tenth Street in the middle of Newhall, three blocks only will bring you to Newhall Avenue. There the street name will change to Lyons

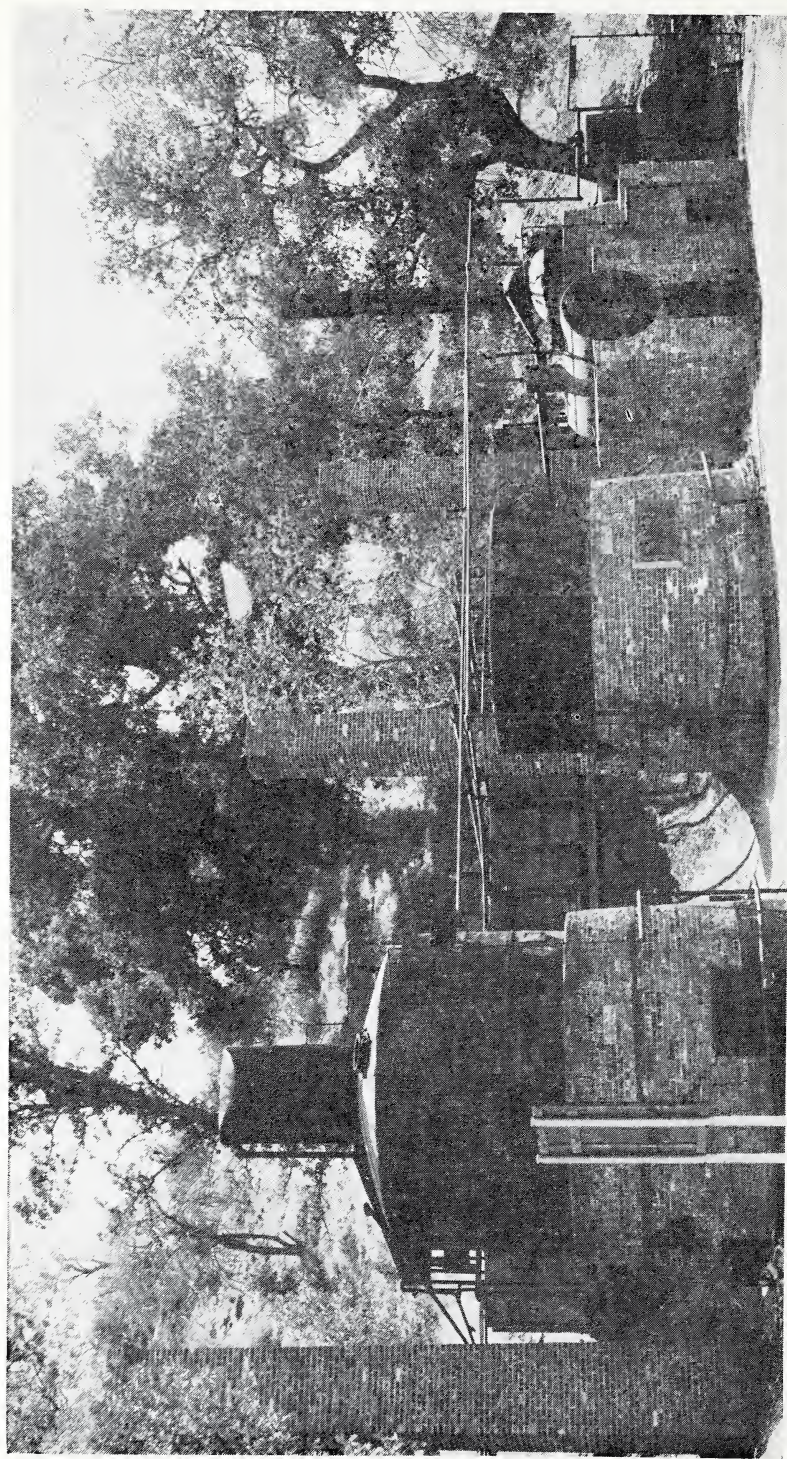


— From the Arthur B. Perkins collection

### THE SOUTHERN HOTEL IN OLD NEWHALL

This famous old hostelry, reputed to be the finest hotel between Los Angeles and San Francisco, was built in 1877 by Henry M. Newhall. In 1887 the hotel was so badly damaged by a disastrous fire that it was never rebuilt. It was at the corner of Market and Main Streets (now Railroad Avenue).





— From the Arthur B. Perkins collection

### CALIFORNIA'S FIRST OIL REFINERY

The first successful commercial oil refinery erected in California was located in Newhall. This photograph was made at the time the refinery received its historical marker.



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

Avenue, but pay no attention, keep going till you pass Highway 99, then you will be on the Pico Road. Why the name changes? The county road department is very unhappy as long as a road name means something, like honoring a local pioneer. Actually, all the way you have been following the old stage road to Pico (although it was christened Mentryville) which had been known as the Pico Road since 1884.

When you reach a Y, westerly of 99, turn to the left on the lesser used road, unless you wish to see the Potrero oil field of Sunray-Midcontinent. Shortly, you will come to a gate. If you have no permit from the Standard Oil Company of California, there you will stop, permanently. On the far side of the gate lies what is left of Pico, the first commercially successful oil field of the West. The superintendent's big house, just beyond the gate, in the Eighties and Nineties entertained the prospective stock buyers of the Pacific Coast Oil Company. It is now occupied by a caretaker.

California Star Oil Company's Well No. 4, California's first successful commercial oil well, on production since September, 1876, dedicated and properly plaqued as such but today slightly incongruous with its modern pump, daily producing its mite of oil, is a little further up the road. Back of No. 4 rises "Christian Hill," the name reminding the observer of that great oil pioneer, Lyman Stewart, who, after five failures on his Pico Canyon lease, finally brought in the well whose sale to the Pacific Coast Oil Company financed the Hardison and Stewart move to Santa Paula and the forming of the Union Oil Company of California, when Hardison and Stewart joined their interests with those of Thomas R. Bard. However, the Union Oil Company is more properly a Santa Paula story. You are looking at the "home" field of the Pacific Coast Oil Company, and that was the start of the Standard Oil Company of California.

Let's back track and start at the beginning. No one ever "discovered" California oil. The Indians knew and used oil seepages of the Pico hills, west of Newhall, as well as those of Sulphur Mountain, near Ojai. The Carpinteria ocean oil seeps had been noted by the earliest Spanish explorers of the California coast. California's first settlers used the seeps for water-proofing basketry, caulking Indian boats of the Santa Barbara channel, as an adherent for setting arrow or spear points, joining the stone bases and side wall basketry of the basket mortars, or as a base for ornamentation. It was used externally and internally medicinally. All Californians knew about oil. Fray Crespi reported La Brea pit seepages in 1769.

In Pennsylvania there were also oil seepages. Their product was "rock oil," commanding high prices for medicinal use. In 1859, Drake's Well at Titusville, Pennsylvania, was successfully drilled. Its oil sold for \$1.50 a gallon. The first oil boom started. The market for oil for medicinal use was limited and quickly saturated. Then chemists found a new use for the product as an illuminant. Profit was now balanced upon a see-saw of supply and demand. A highly speculative new industry came into being, alternately booming and collapsing, never monotonous, sometimes so profitable that it gobbled the lion's share of speculative publicity.

At first, the whole idea seemed indigenous to Pennsylvania. Even casual readers of California history encounter the story of Andrés Pico distilling illuminating oil at San Fernando Mission (then his home) in 1855. The story may well be true. Possibly a new name should be added to that small mid-century group who sponsored an idea of a new industry in California. In 1855, trained doctors of medicine were scarce. Medicine was one of very few science majors. Its graduates were doctors, surgeons, pharmacists, and chemists, all in one package.

Dr. Vincent Gelcich had been born in 1829.<sup>14</sup> He became an army contract surgeon and may have had a Pennsylvania assignment before coming west. He knew something about oil. If oil was distilled at San Fernando Mission, it would have been distilled by Gelcich. Mrs. Gelcich was a daughter of General Andrés Pico. Why would they not be visiting at the Mission? Someone knew something about oil even in the early Sixties when the first claims were filed. Who filed? Gelcich's father-in-law, Andrés Pico, for one; H. C. Wiley, husband of Mrs. Gelcich's sister, for another; and, of course, Gelcich filed. Other filings were those of Christopher Leaming, recorder of the San Fernando Petroleum Mining District; Sanford Lyon, both intimate friends of Gelcich; Beale and Baker (catch E. F. Beale being left out of anything anywhere) and a man named Rice. Their filings covered adjacent canyons in the Pico hills which still bear their respective names. Who had the faith in the basic idea? Well, Dr. Gelcich shortly bought the claims of Rice and Leaming.

Folks probably considered Dr. Gelcich slightly "teched." If you had to have oil (but why should you?), the accepted technique was to skim one of the many seepages in the hills. Sanford Lyon was one of the locals who did just that, in spare moments. The Lyon ranch was primarily a sheep ranch, at the foot of the Pico hills. In idle times — and there were such — Lyon mined, placered, ran



## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

stock, or skimmed or dug oil for the quick cash San Francisco market.

In 1864, Benjamin Silliman, Jr., chemistry professor at Yale University, examined the Sulphur Mountain seepages near the Ojai and reported too optimistically on the "rivers of oil"<sup>15</sup> there to Thomas Scott who had already made one oil fortune in the Pennsylvania oil fields.

With visions of another oil fortune, the next year Scott sent his nephew, Thomas R. Bard, westward to investigate and carry out grandiose plans of a prospective oil empire by acquisition of California land grants then on the market. Those plans, however, affected neither Pico nor Newhall, excepting Scott's futile attempt to move the boundaries of Rancho San Francisco and thereby acquire the Pico hills. That has been fully detailed elsewhere.

Quoting an 1866 news item:

I first visited the springs of Mssrs. Poci, Beale and Baker, situated in a northeasterly direction from the San Fernando mountains, 12 miles distant. There are ten springs, or rather holes in the shale rock into which the oil and water is continually running from little seams and crevices in the side of the mountain. Mr. S. Lyon is busy dipping the oil from the holes . . . the process of removing oil from water is to put them into an ordinary barrel with a tap in the bottom. In six or eight hours, the water is all at the bottom, and the spigot is opened permitting the water to run out. Result, 8 or 12 barrels of No. 1 green oil a week.<sup>16</sup>

The reader now knows the oil business from production through refining — as of that year.

As usual, "getting rich quick" turned out to be a slow and painful process. Not until 1870 were there any particularly encouraging results in the attempts to develop oil. In that year, Sanford Lyon, working with a spring pole rig, punched down a hole at the head of Pico Canyon and got oil.<sup>17</sup> As that well is accepted by both Standard Oil and Union Oil biographers as the first successful attempt to make an oil well, it may be assumed to be a factual statement. Actually, the gallonage results weren't much ahead of those obtained by skimming seepages.

D. G. Scofield was a graduate of the Pennsylvania oil boom. In 1870 he came to San Francisco and joined F. B. Taylor & Co., lubricating, lighting, and painting supplies. Tales of the southland oil fields drifted north. Scofield came to Newhall to investigate for himself.<sup>18</sup>

Local oilfield techniques of production were simple. Seepages were skimmed. Seepages were dug out to improve the flow. Tunnels were run under seepages. Theoretically, oil would flow to the tunnel mouth for convenient packaging — if the tunnel workers didn't blow the place up. They were all good ideas even if they didn't work.

Then came the spring pole drilling.

Let the late John Saunders, employed at Pico for the first decades of oil development, describe, in his own words, the spring pole rig.

In 1881, I remember seeing Jack Lynch, Mike Crane, and a third man whose name I can't remember, working a spring pole rig up in the Towsley (canyon) about a quarter of a mile above the narrows, on the left side going up. They had a tripod for a derrick, and a hand windlass to handle the casing. The spring pole is something like a teeter-totter horse, such as they have on the school grounds. You kick and jump off, thus letting the tools drop at the other end. It took some kick to work it. I've seen them worked by hand also, the weight equalized on the spring pole, and a man standing, working it up and down.

Sanford Lyon and Louis Hanscomb drilled the first two wells at Pico with a spring pole. The spring pole method of drilling comes from China where it was used hundreds of years ago. One of those wells, drilled in 1870, is supposed to have been at the same location as the C. S. O. Well No. 4, of 1875. Lyon is credited with a ten-barrel well in 1870.<sup>19</sup>

Walling says:

The first oil well is accredited to Sanford Lyon, who drilled a spring pole hole 140 feet deep in 1869 near the seepages. There was no further drilling in Pico Canyon until 1875, but the seepage oil was collected and sold to the Polhemus Refinery in Los Angeles, and the Metropolitan Gas Works in San Francisco.<sup>20</sup>

By 1866, the California oil boom — the promotion — was out of hand. Booms are always paid for by innocent stock investors. This boom was no exception. Booms are always followed by busts. This one was no exception.

After the Civil War, kerosene from the East fell to fifty-seven cents a gallon, F.O.B. San Francisco. So far, no one had produced it at that price locally.

About this time, D. G. Scofield seemed to be about the only person still optimistic over oil in Pico. In 1873, the Port of Wil-

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

mington exported ninety-seven barrels of crude oil. The industry still had far to go.

Back in Venango, Pennsylvania, Scofield had known C. A. Mentry, who had started in oil at Oil Creek, grown with the industry and become a successful drilling contractor. Scofield's optimism was contagious and Mentry came to California in 1873. Mentry first drilled a 470-foot duster in Grapevine Canyon for the Los Angeles Oil Company. He then leased the Baker and Beale "Pico" claim and springpoled a hole to about seventy-five feet which made about five barrels per day.

This was encouraging. The Mentry lease plus the claims of Pico, Wiley, Gelcich, Leaming, and Lyon — about twenty-five acres — was taken over by Scofield as a nucleus of his California Star Oil Works Company. "Uncle Alec," as Mentry was known, directed the development of the Newhall field during its first quarter of a century.

In 1875, three spring pole wells were drilled by the C. S. O. C. S. O. No. 1 produced ten barrels of oil at 120 feet. C. S. O. No. 2 was good for thirteen barrels at 140 feet. C. S. O. No. 3 produced eight barrels at 145 feet but depleted the production of Numbers 1 and 2.

In 1876, the first well drilled with steam, the justly famous C. S. O. No. 4, pumped twenty-five barrels at 370 feet. The following year, No. 4 was deepened to 560 feet, which brought a flow of seventy barrels. That was the year when the price of oil slumped.

Too much competition earned little profit for drillers in the Pennsylvania fields at this time, and another oil field friend of Scofield's came west. This was W. E. Youle, a drilling contractor of reputation. In Youle's own words:

I arrived in California in 1876, and found that Scofield had interested his firm, F. B. Taylor and Company, ex-Mayor Bryant of San Francisco, and others to organize the California Star Oil Works Company. They had secured the services of C. A. Mentry . . . They had erected a light drilling rig, close to the shallow wells of previous prospectors in Pico Canyon . . . and drilled to 300 feet. They had penetrated 100 feet of oil bearing sand . . . The well was tested . . . showing a capacity of about thirty barrels. This was as far as the operations had proceeded when I reached the coast, together with J. A. Scott, a refiner of Titusville, Pennsylvania, to whom Scofield had written of his California developments.

Scott at once busied himself putting up a small still at Newhall to refine the oil. At this time, this was the only real production in California . . .



Scofield had been down to Newhall and Pico Canyon just before writing to me, and had examined what little work had been done there by Colonel Baker, Denker and their associates. They had sunk a little shaft and driven a tunnel or two right into the out-cropping oil sand; they had erected a three-pole derrick and used a car axle with a piece of steel welded in the bottom, and an eye in the top for a rope. The motive power was two men, teetering on a spring pole, allowing the bit to hit the rock. They went ninety feet deep and obtained a production of five or six barrels a day. These activities had apparently convinced Scofield that a productive oil field could be proven in the Pico hills.<sup>21</sup>

The first shipment of oil from the Star Oil Works, which is located in the San Fernando Mountains, near the tunnel of the Southern Pacific railroad, about twenty miles this side of Los Angeles, arrived in the city yesterday!

It consisted of fifty barrels, and is pronounced by competent judges to be equal to, if not superior to, the petroleum of Pennsylvania. Other quantities are on the way. As soon as the railroad is built and additional facilities for transportation afforded thereby, over 500 barrels can be shipped weekly.<sup>22</sup>

The wells commenced to flow about three or four months since and were at once bought up by enterprising parties. A company formed, which was duly and regularly incorporated under the laws of the state, of which Hon. A. J. Bryant is president, and Mark L. McDonald, of San Francisco, and Messrs. Denton and Scott, of Los Angeles, are trustees.<sup>23</sup>

General Baldwin, in discussing oil in the district, said:

The Southern Pacific Railroad . . . runs . . . towards the Santa Clara River . . . to a point called Newhall . . . first station beyond the tunnel. It is admirably located to serve as a point of departure for a branch running to Ventura . . .

The extension of the San Fernando range, west of the tunnel and south of the Santa Clara is the probable oil region of Los Angeles County. As yet, it is comparatively unexplored, but few attempts have been made by sinking wells to obtain oil, but some of the trials that have been made have been successful and encourage the hope that in the near future when railroad facilities will enable capitalists to inspect for themselves, the whole of that region will be properly prospected for oil.

Among those who have been successful, the most notable is the Star Oil Company, which had, at the time the writer visited its works, three wells, two of which are pumped and the third flows. the yield, at that time, from the three wells was from twenty-five to thirty barrels of crude oil per day.

The wells are situated in the Pico Canyon, at a point called Pico Springs, the flowing well being located in close proximity to the spring.

The distance from the wells to the station is about seven miles, perhaps eight miles, on a heavy down grade, of which fact the

## *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

company will avail itself to pipe the crude oil to the station, where refining works will be erected. At the time of the writer's visit, about a mile of pipeline was ordered, with a view to save transportation and to deliver it to wagons at points easily accessible.

As in most newly developed districts, so at these wells, transportation is expensive, the cost of delivering a forty-gallon barrel at the refinery at Lyons Station being \$1.00 — the distance traveled not exceeding nine miles.

According to the information derived from the foreman of the company, the wells varied from 130 to 150 feet in depth. Nearby was a well, the property of Mr. Robert (Sanford) Lyon, said to yield, by pumping, ten barrels of oil per day, and having a depth of 175 feet. These wells conjointly will yield an average of forty barrels per day, which would make, when purified, some fifteen barrels of fine burning fluid of an incombustible character, besides a large quantity of lubricating oil of such quality as to justify the S.P.R.R. to prefer it to any other.

The present location of the refinery of the Star Oil Company is at Lyons Station.<sup>24</sup>

The refinery was moved the following year to the nearby Railroad Canyon, the move making possible location on a railroad spur for trackage and loading facilities.

As evidenced by the following advertisement appearing in the *Los Angeles Express* on March 16, 1877, oil was becoming a business.

Why consumers should use the kerosene oil manufactured by the California Star Oil Works Company.

First, to patronize home manufacturers; Second, it has no equal; Third, it is entirely safe and will not explode.

It is put in first class packages and will not leak; it gives a light equal to gas. Hereafter there will be no delay in filling orders promptly.

All orders should be addressed

CALIFORNIA STAR OIL WORKS COMPANY

Andrews Station, Los Angeles County

and they will receive prompt attention.

By 1879, the camp was producing oil. However, that was before the day of internal combustion engines. As an illuminant, the California oil, in the words of many users, "just plainly stunk." Several years would elapse before that problem would be licked. The refinery was working. A two-inch pipe line, first ever laid for transport of oil, ran from Pico to Newhall. From the refinery, the oil was loaded in the "tank cars" of the day — an ordinary box car, with a square steel tank, capacity about sixty barrels, set at each end of the car and painted a violent blue.

Again, quoting from Youle:

I returned to Pico Canyon in May, 1877, to undertake a fishing job on a well started by R. C. McPherson for the San Francisco Oil Company. The well might be called a wildcat, as it was some considerable distance away from the Pico Canyon producing wells . . . it proved to be a dry hole and the location was abandoned. Due to this failure of the McPherson well, ex-Mayor Bryant and others withdrew from Pico, leaving Scott the responsibility there.

From which it may be inferred that Scofield's backers backed out.

Scofield realized that his "Star" Company was under-capitalized. In 1879, he succeeded in interesting Senator C. N. Felton and associates in oil. In September the group incorporated the Pacific Coast Oil Company, and absorbed the California Star Oil Works Company, the San Francisco Oil Company, the Santa Clara Oil Company, and other smaller Pico operators.

Senator Felton was president, Scofield was auditor, Lloyd Tevis, then president of San Francisco's Wells-Fargo Bank, was in the new set-up.

The machine shop was built in Pico. Then any machine parts were made on the job. Anything could be made by those old-time machinists, and frequently was.

Close to the shop was the loading dock, novel because of the heavy iron devices of all shapes, sizes and descriptions, flowing over its edges. There were weirdly shaped "fishing tools," developed for the problem of a moment when 500-feet was a deep hole, and six-inch casing was gargantuan. There were spears and wrenches painstakingly made for equipment and operations gone, but not regretted. In those days drillers "guessed" their wells down, inventing implements and tools as emergencies arose — which they always did.

"Spring poles" were followed by "cable tools," powered with steam. Oil field men were in short supply. Mentry and Youle tried to train local unskilled help. Pennsylvania had a monopoly of skilled oil field labor.

Scofield brought out some twenty or thirty oil men from the East. There weren't available houses in Newhall so the Pacific Coast Oil Company built a few small homes convenient to the oil field. It was known as "Pico." It was also known as "Mentryville." Everybody called it Pico and it was connected with Newhall by stage line which brought in housewives' supplies daily. Besides the railroad, the refinery, the post office and stores were all in Newhall. Pico was purely a "company" town.

Joe Leighton was one of the earliest stage drivers. He lived on



### *Mining Camps of the Soledad*

his ranch in Pico Canyon about a mile below the settlement. Being a company town, Pico was very dry, liquor prohibited. Rumor was that Leighton maintained what might be called a first aid station conveniently close to the camp borders.

Late in 1882, Lyman Stewart and his oldest son, Will, came to Newhall/Pico. Stewart had been a school mate of Scofield in Oil City and also a friend of Youle, Mentry and Scott. He sub-leased land from the P. C. O. and contacted his Pennsylvania partner, Wallace Hardison, who came out in 1883 with a couple of the heavy eastern rigs — very much up to that date. Stewart and Hardison had some \$70,000 in equipment, \$65,000 in cash, experience and definitely “know how.”

Stewart was almost fanatically religious. In no time at all, their lease was known as “Christian Hill.” Despite this, or, maybe because of it, they lost their tools at 1,850 feet, with no showings. They drilled No. 2 to 1,050, and lost their tools. Their bad luck continued through three years and five dry holes. Their sixth attempt finally made a well which they had to sell to get capital to move to Santa Paula where they joined with T. R. Bard, and the Union Oil Company of California was born.<sup>25</sup>

Newhall and Pico should show somewhere in Union’s pedigree.

This year, the P. C. O., having built a refinery at Alameda, the local refinery closed.

By 1885, there were enough folks living in Pico to warrant a new school district.<sup>26</sup> It was named after Felton. It ended in absorption by Newhall in 1933.

Pico itself died about 1922.

Under the superintendency of Alec Mentry, which incidentally was the entire life span of the P. C. O., apparently seventy wells were drilled from the Pico or the Newhall office. In or about 1880, the P. C. O. had built their warehouse and office on the square in old Newhall.

The state records show seventy-nine wells drilled from Pico by the Standard Oil Company (this includes both the C. S. O. W. and the P. C. O. wells), while in the Newhall area, the total listed is 233.<sup>27</sup> This record comes forward only to 1932. The many major fields since 1938 are not reflected here.

The biggest production years were 1930, 187,600 barrels (the tunnel field had just come in); and 1910, with 160,428 barrels.

When Scofield engineered the Standard Oil Company of California, centered upon the P. C. O. holdings, at the turn of the century, Mentry included his personally owned Placeritas Ranch and retired. His position was taken over by a senior employee, Walton

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Young. Young, in turn, remained in the superintendency until the "big layoff" of about 1922.

At that later date, some of the Pico cottages were brought down to Newhall. Thereafter there was only a skeleton force at Pico.

### DEBITS AND CREDITS

In turning the calendar back, help is always necessary. The courtesies received from the Bancroft Library, the Los Angeles County Library, and the Los Angeles Public Library are acknowledged. Without those courtesies, there would have been either great gaps or greater errors than occur.

Old-timers, Mrs. H. B. Russell, Mrs. Mabel Taylor, Mr. I. C. Gordon, the late Mrs. Jack Taylor, and Mrs. Celina Chaix, have been very helpful. The first two have been especially kind and forgiving. It is not practicable to list the individuals who have, in one way or another, co-operated through information, or original pictures of a past day.

My wife, Marguerite, has been most forbearing and patient with the foibles of a hobbyist. Besides that, she did much of the original research on the Soledad Mining Camp, and has patiently read for many days in many libraries that this attempt to give a solid, documented background of a "day that is gone," might come to pass.

### NOTES

1. Records of Los Angeles County, *Book of Deeds*, p. 119.
2. *Illustrated History of Los Angeles County*, (Lewis Publishing Co., Chicago, 1889) p. 575.
3. Informant, Mrs. H. B. Russell (*née* Pearl Pardee).
4. Informant, the late Mr. Lou Ledger.
5. Informant, Mrs. Mabel Gifford Taylor.
6. Postoffice Department archives.
7. Records of the Los Angeles County Board of Education.
8. *California of the South*, (Lindley & Widney, New York, 1896) pp. 132, 185.
9. Informant, the late Albert C. Swall.
10. Informant, the late H. Clay Needham.
11. Informant, the late Albert C. Swall.
12. Records of the Los Angeles County Board of Education.
13. Informant, Mrs. Selina Chaix.
14. *Sixty Years in California*, by Harris Newmark (Houghton Mifflin, 1930). Also see *Los Angeles in the Sunny Seventies*, by Ludwig Salvator. While the inaccuracies are slightly appalling, it could be interesting. Gelcich was apparently Salvator's closest friend in Los Angeles. A letter from Dr. Gelcich appears in the *Wilmington Journal*, Feb. 19, 1866. Gelcich was on duty at Ft. Tejon at time of earthquake. His pharmacy was in one end of the adobe, and the family lived in the other end, but all escaped without injury although the roof and walls fell in.
15. *Black Bonanza*, by Taylor and Welty (McGraw-Hill Book Co., New York, 1950) p. 34.
16. *Los Angeles Semi-Weekly News*, June 1, 1866.
17. *Black Bonanza* (see note 15) p. 38.
18. *Standard Oil Company of California*, by Douglas G. McPhee — a reprint from articles in *California Oil World*. P. 5 is about as good an introduction to Scofield as any other.
19. Informant was the late John Saunders, a Newhall pioneer.
20. Division of Oil and Gas, December, 1934, *California Oil Fields*, p. 12.
21. *Sixty-Three Years in the Oil Fields*, by W. E. Youle (Fuller Printing Co.)
22. *Ventura Signal*, June 24, 1876.
23. *Alta California*, July 22, 1876.
24. *Progress and Advantages of Los Angeles City and County* (Mirror Printing Company, Los Angeles, July, 1876, Chap. 18.).
25. *Black Bonanza* (see note 15).
26. Records of the Los Angeles County Board of Education.
27. As in note 20.

# Book Reviews

THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA BIBLIOGRAPHY OF ALL PUBLISHED WORKS 1884-1957. Compiled by Anna Marie Hager and Everett Gordon Hager. *Index* by Author and Title. (The *Historical Society of Southern California*, Los Angeles, 1958) Pp. xx, 184; 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ "x10"; cloth; 3-color jacket. \$9.00 (discounted to Society members and Society BOOK CLUB members).

The new publishing program of the *Historical Society of Southern California* is launched, appropriately, by this bibliography of the ANNUAL and QUARTERLY publications issued by it during the 75 years of its existence.

Most bibliographies are detailed, rather dull, lists of books prepared for collectors and specialists. This bibliography is more ambitious. It is a key, admirably fashioned, to a fascinating and important library of local and regional history. In the brief period since its publication it has already proved its usefulness to writers and students interested in Southern California. It consists, first of all, of brief, readable summaries of each volume and each article, beginning with the first published in 1884 and continuing through the year 1957. Then there is an Author Index and a Title Index. It will be supplemented, in a subsequent volume nearing completion, by a 400-page Topical Index.

The importance of this bibliography is obvious to anyone at all familiar with the contents of the Society's publications. They are primary and indispensable sources for students of Los Angeles, Los Angeles County, and Southern California history. They offer delightful adventures in reading and open up surprising vistas. In them history is caught in the making. They form a treasure house of the best in local and regional history. Throughout the 75 years the contributors have been historians, professional and amateur, pioneers with important stories that needed preservation, together with students whose projects in specific research called for publication.

The bibliography of these contributions is really a share-the-wealth tool. It opens the Society's publications and enables everyone to sample the opulent contents. Fortunately it was compiled with insight and painstaking skill. Surely the compilers will be in demand for similar jobs requiring ability of an equally high order. Thanks to Mr. and Mrs. Hager, therefore, to the Society and to Mr. Lorrin L. Morrison who is responsible for the BIBLIOGRAPHY format.

— W. W. Robinson



THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

THE LIFE AND DEATH OF A QUICKSILVER MINE, by Helen Rocca Goss. (*The Historical Society of Southern California*, Los Angeles, 1958). *Indexed; Reference Notes; Illustrated*. Pp. xvi, 150; cloth; two-color pictorial jacket; end paper maps and photographs. \$5.00 (discounted to Society members and Society Book Club members).

This story of a little-known feature of California history is a research, writing and printing accomplishment worthy of its place as the Society's *Special Book Publication Number 3*, just off the press. It lays bare the locale, the methods and the people involved in the late 19th Century production of the element known as mercury — that surprising metal which, being liquid at ordinary temperatures, runs away when we touch it but serves us well in our thermometers, in the manufacture of explosives and in medical science.

The locale is the State's fourth ranking quicksilver mine of 75 years ago, the Great Western Mine in Lake County, 16 miles north of Calistoga and just east of the Russian River. The mining methods described are half-way between modern techniques and the rude, but better known procedures of the famed California gold-seekers of a quarter-century earlier. The people are first of all members of the author's own immediate family and, secondarily, the persons they knew or worked with, including the 250 Chinamen who were the main labor force at the mine.

Set only a bit too early to be autobiographical, the story is actually to a great extent biographical of Mrs. Goss' father, Andrew Rocca, who as superintendent of the Great Western for twenty-three of its most productive years single-handedly ran this isolated community with a touch of benevolent monarchy. The author cannot quite speak from memory, since she was but three when the family left this mine for another, and although she grew to know the backdrop of her story intimately she herself experienced few of the events she recounts. Thus her absorption in exploring the history of the Great Western and, especially, her dedication to discovering the details of her father's guidance of that history have led her to do a workmanlike job with all of the available sources: local newspapers, correspondence, memoirs, interviews, reports, technical publications of the mining industry. To aid her in this task she fortunately had a mother who kept a diary and six older brothers and sisters who obligingly wrote down their recollections, not to mention a husband who helped to thumb through the old newspapers of the period.

Even though it often races merrily along like a 19th Century *Chicken Every Sunday*, this actually is readable *history* distilled out of painstaking research. Filled with anecdotes told with

## Book Reviews

insight and restraint, the work nonetheless is believable (even to the stories of the time Mr. Rocca tossed a green salad with castor oil and of his fisherman friend who hooked 146 trout in a day!) due to the thorough documentation, which occurs sometimes in the text but mostly in the notes separately and rightly placed at the back of the book. If the account has a fault carried to the point of tedium it is Mrs. Goss' understandable tendency to go out of her way to eulogize her father.

Yet Andrew Rocca must indeed have been an unusual man for his time and place in life. To cite only one example, it is surprising to learn that in a mine so isolated and so rough in many respects his enlightened management had brought many civilizing influences, including one of the first telephones in the area, a bath tub, a company store, a boarding house, pianos and a church boasting an organ, a sewing machine, a baseball team, even a form of health insurance for employees, and a school to which the author's mother went quite willingly as a young teacher in 1879 only to marry the mine superintendent within a year and quite as willingly stay on at the Great Western for 20 years more.

The design and letterpress printing of *The Life and Death of a Quicksilver Mine* have been done with artistry and skill by the Society's publisher, Lorrin L. Morrison, to produce a volume which gives pleasure in the owning and assures facility in the reading. The materials are of fine quality, including the sixteen halftones separately printed on enamel stock. Appropriately to the subject matter, the cloth cover is of a rich red tone suggesting the mercury ore cinnabar and is attractively stamped in silver. — *Robert W. King.*

DAVID LAVENDER, *Land of Giants, The Drive to the Pacific Northwest, 1750-1950* (Doubleday & Co., Garden City, N.Y., 1958). Pp. x, 468. \$5.95.

David Lavender belongs to that successful coterie of professional writers about the West which includes Oscar Lewis, Lucius Beebe, Idwol Jones, Paul Weleman, Stewart Holbrook, and Irving Stone. They are superior craftsmen, although not trained historians. For such writers, as Oscar Lewis himself once put it, "The Old West has become Big Business . . ." Almost always facile, and writing most frequently of the excitement, color, and "romance" of the West, such writers have become the major purveyors of "western history" to the masses. Focusing their attention as well upon the heroic, or the bizarre and exotic aspects of western America, their works occasionally evoke dramatic intensity.

Typical of this form of writing is the "Mainstream of America"

series, of which *Land of Giants* is a volume. The purpose of the series is to present a popular interpretation in narrative form "of this nation's history — from the earliest days of exploration to the recent days of turmoil and achievement." While these volumes do successfully make history "come alive," they are not history, as some professional historians (who do not write nearly as well as various authors in the series) would interpret the word. Such a book as *Land of Giants* rests, basically, upon the research of dozens of historians cited in its bibliography, historians who, with few exceptions, have not demonstrated the stylistic ability to integrate for popular audiences such large blocks of recorded time as Lavender attempts.

During the two hundred years of history treated by Lavender, the Pacific Northwest experienced some phenomenal changes. Into a country of big trees, big rivers, and big spaces came first English and Spanish mariners, searching for a northwest passage to the riches of the Orient. Following the North Pacific explorations of the Dane, Vitus Bering, Russian fur traders moved down out of the Aleutians to seek sea otter and seal in the waters from Alaska southward. Next came overland traffic in the nineteenth century; following upon the explorations of Lewis and Clark were various American trapping companies anxiously "competing for control of the fur-rich rivers and streams." American and English pathfinders like Jedediah Smith and Peter Skene Ogden became the pathmarkers for more official explorers like Frémont. And together explorers, mountain men, and also missionaries, prepared the way for a veritable procession of settlers. Here one finds Marcus Whitman, Jesse Applegate, old John McLaughlin, and other early leaders of the Northwest. While the scope of his book prevents Lavender from treating any one of these frontier types in great detail, he does sketch the process of western settlement rather concisely.

An objection that the academic historian might raise to such treatment concerns the fact that seldom does the narrative dwell at any length upon those wearing and routine processes of the frontier that made daily pioneer life tedious and enervating. The unknown down-and-out dirt farmers who lived in leaky log cabins need more space in a book such as this along with varmints, villains, trappers, Indians, explorers, and other stock characters of western life. This reviewer would also wish for treatment of the foreign immigrant; the Northwest was not exclusively an Anglo-Saxon frontier.

Discussion of the growth of railroads, steamship lines, fishing, and lumbering, into the twentieth century, is commendable. And Lavender does not confine himself to the niceties of history: he has



### *Book Reviews*

much to say about ruthless sacrificing of the Indian, the violent labor conflicts of the 1920's, the fight of the conservationists "to slow down the ravages on natural resources and wildlife." He is also concerned with urban development, particularly the mushrooming of new cities like Tacoma, Seattle, Portland, and Vancouver.

For the layman, who is not looking for the particularities of history, such a book as this, in the words of William O. Douglas, "brings history to life and gives one a sense of participation in moulding the manifest destiny of America." Excellent maps accompany the book. — *Andrew F. Rolle.*

## *Activities of the Society*

With the City Birthday celebration and the reception at San Gabriel Mission over no further activities of the Society were engaged in till October 7th when the Overland Trail Caravan arrived, celebrating the first arrival of overland mail from the East on October 7, 1858, via the Butterfield Stage which stopped at the old Bella Union Hotel, then on North Main Street. Many of our members participated in this event. The Caravan was on schedule proceeding from Tipton, Missouri, where it left on September 16th en-route to San Francisco where it finished its run on October 10th. The Postmaster of Los Angeles, Otto K. Olesen, our President, Gustave O. Arlt and Frank B. Putnam, our treasurer and program chairman, welcomed the arriving guests who had accompanied the Caravan from Missouri. An informal dinner was served in the Terminal Annex of the Post Office by Postmaster Olesen and then a program followed on the Post Office steps, in which the great grandson of John Butterfield, Charles W. Childs was a speaker. The occasion offered an opportunity to place a Landmark at 314 North Main Street to identify the site of the Bella Union Hotel; accordingly the bronze marker to be placed by the California Park Commission in cooperation with the Los Angeles Board of Supervisors was presented by John Henderson, Los Angeles County Librarian, and accepted by City Councilman Edward R. Roybal in whose district it will be placed. Landmark No. 656 will forever identify the location of the Bella Union Hotel and the Los Angeles terminus of the Butterfield route. It will finally be set in the sidewalk.

November was a busy month in which the signees of the Great Register at the City Birthday booth were canvassed. Also many invitations to membership were mailed. On November 11th, the Secretary attended the Pasadena Pioneer Society luncheon and found some of our own members were active in that group. The Society was busy also in getting ready for the Diamond Anniversary meeting.



— Photo by Six Watson Bros. for the Society's collection

### THE DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY MEETING OF THE SOCIETY

Pictured above is part of the large audience, composed of Society members and friends, who attended the *Diamond Anniversary Meeting* on November 21, 1958, at the Los Angeles County Museum. More than 300 were in attendance.





— Photo by Six Watson Bros. for the Society's collection

### THE DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY SOCIAL HOUR

Following the formal *Diamond Anniversary Meeting*, Society members and friends gathered around the urns and table of delicacies for a pleasant social hour before leaving the Museum. Here Miss Grace S. Stoermer, Society Director, is shown at one of the urns pouring coffee for Mrs. Legory O'Laughlin. In the background, awaiting their turns, are, from left to right: Director Frank B. Putnam; Legory O'Laughlin; William F. Holtz; Frederick W. Nelson, and Mrs. Kate Darling Chapin.

## Activities of the Society



— Photo by Six Watson Bros. for the Society's collection

### BIBLIOGRAPHY AUTHORS SHOW THEIR BOOK

Mr. and Mrs. Everett Gordon Hager, authors and compilers of *The Historical Society of Southern California BIBLIOGRAPHY of All Published Works*, were the center of attraction at the *Diamond Anniversary Meeting* as they unveiled the first copies of their work. In the top photograph Past President Rockwell D. Hunt (on the left) and Society Director W. W. Robinson, two faithful contributors to the Society's *ANNUALS* and *QUARTERLIES*, are shown with the authors. In the lower photograph Society Directors Ducommun, Gair, and Carver admire the work. Directors Robinson (who wrote the *Preface* for the *BIBLIOGRAPHY*), Ducommun, and Carver are all members of the Society's *Publications Committee* which is directing the *Special Book Publications* program.



— Photo by Six Watson Bros. for the Society's collection





### COMPTON'S HERITAGE HOUSE RECEIVES PLAQUE

On April 12, 1959, the "oldest house" in Compton will be marked with a plaque designating it as "*California Registered Historical Landmark No. 664.*" The original two-room house was built in 1869 by A. R. Loomis. The house was first located at 209 South Acacia Street, but when it was purchased by the City of Compton in 1957, it was moved to its present location and restored and refurnished, as well as being renamed "Heritage House." The City of Compton presented it to the public as a historical shrine to honor the community's pioneers on April 14, 1958. The plaque will be set in place by the California State Park Commission, in co-operation with the Compton City Council, Compton Parlor, Native Daughters of the Golden West, and Heritage House Auxiliary. It will be the first California State historical landmark within the limits of the city. "Heritage House" is now located in Civic Center Park in the City of Compton.



*Activities of the Society*

DIAMOND ANNIVERSARY MEETING

NOVEMBER 21, 1958

LOS ANGELES COUNTY MUSEUM

The *Historical Society of Southern California* celebrated its seventy-fifth birthday on November 21, 1958, at a specially presented *Diamond Anniversary Meeting*. The meeting was held in the main auditorium of the Los Angeles County Museum in Exposition Park. More than 300 Society members and friends attended the meeting which was presided over by President Gustave O. Arlt and at which Dr. Lawrence Clark Powell, librarian, University of California at Los Angeles, and Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt, past Society president and dean of contemporary California historians, were the principal speakers.

The address delivered by Dr. Powell, "The Sense of the Past," is printed in full as the feature article of this Number of the *QUARTERLY*. It was delivered before an appreciative audience which had just been thrilled by the short address of Dr. Hunt, in which he briefly outlined the parts he and other civic leaders had played in the growth and development of the Society during his fifty years of membership. Dr. Hunt served as Society president for eleven years, longer than any other individual has ever held the office. Dr. Hunt made his first contribution to the Society's *ANNUAL* in Volume IX, Parts 1-2, published in 1912-1913. His initial article, contributed when he was a comparatively young man, was appropriately entitled "The Historical Society's Outlook." Now, having passed his ninetieth birthday on February 3, 1958, Dr. Hunt, whose most recent contribution to the *QUARTERLY*, "Fifteen Decisive Events of California History," concludes in this Number, in describing the work that he, Dr. Finley Bovard, James Miller Guinn, George Butler Griffin, Mabel E. Guinn, J. Gregg Layne, Carl I. Wheat, Ana Begue de Packman, Edward A. Dickson, and many others had done for the Society in perpetuating its work, again pointed to the future with an inspiring message for the present and future generations to continue the Society's good and valuable works.

A highlight of the evening was the social hour that followed the formal meeting. Arranged by Mesdames Edmond F. Ducommun and Beatrice Sabichi Mitchell, co-chairmen of the *Hostesses Committee*, with the assistance of all members of the Committee in attendance, the hour proved to be a pleasant get-together for many old friends among the Society's membership. Presiding at the coffee urns were Mesdames Gustave O. Arlt and Justin G. Turner, who

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

alternated with Miss Grace S. Stoermer and Mrs. Lawrence Clark Powell.

Members and guests who signed the register at the Diamond Anniversary Meeting were:

Mr. and Mrs. Everett Gordon Hager	Joshua H. Marks
Florence Farmer	Mae Darling
Mr. and Mrs. Mno Pierce	Mrs. Hortense C. Steinicke
Mame E. Goodell	Mrs. Theodore Chapin
Mrs. Frank B. Duncan	Frederick W. Nelson
Mr. and Mrs. Charles D. Swanner	Mr. and Mrs. Ernest J. Yorba
Mr. and Mrs. Raymond K. Morrison	David I. Worsfold
Mrs. N. S. Garnier	Ernest G. McCabe
E. Phillips Kuhl	Mr. and Mrs. Alfred S. Chapman
Lucy R. Malin	Dr. and Mrs. J. R. Lacayo
R. Garnier	Mr. and Mrs. W. M. Hopper
Peter B. Kuhl	Neil Jones
Mrs. Dexter Monroe	Clyde Minni
Mrs. Edwin T. Lickey	Larry Northrop
Mrs. Phillipine Runnings	Alfred R. Aleman
Marsha Runnings	Ray White
Mrs. Eileen G. Graham	Jim D. Dell
Judith K. Graham	Mrs. Leigh Guyer
Dr. and Mrs. R. C. Gillingham	Grazilla Jacoby
Dr. Alice Page Ashton	Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion
Ralph C. Ashton	Mr. and Mrs. Burdick H. Eaton
Mr. and Mrs. W. L. Goldie	Thirza M. Schenk
Mr. and Mrs. Stanley K. Burgess	Larry Duncan
Miss Helen L. Moore	Brackenridge Clemens
Mr. and Mrs. L. H. O'Laughlin	Mrs. Waldo A. Avery, Jr.
Laura C. Cooley	Mrs. Richard O'Neill, Jr.
Vera H. Dunning	Lawrence G. Arguello
George A. V. Dunning	Mr. and Mrs. D. Seamans
Mr. and Mrs. A. W. Goddard	Les Cytron
Mrs. Walter K. Towers	Arthur Weil
John W. Snyder	Mr. and Mrs. Ferdinand Peret
Florence Dodson Schoneman	Dudley C. Gordon
Mr. and Mrs. Herbert E. Brown	Mr. and Mrs. George Swartz
Mr. and Mrs. Chuck Powell	Mr. and Mrs. Alex MacKenzie
Janet F. Brown	Mr. and Mrs. Robert Cummins
David Brockton Browne	Ray Howe
Cora F. Carpenter	Dr. and Mrs. Donald A. Charnock
Edwin H. Carpenter, Jr.	Katharine Carr
Herbert Morley	Caroline Stanton Thompson
Mrs. Dorothy E. Martin	Dr. and Mrs. Edgar P. Mauer
Mr. and Mrs. George B. Varnum	Maymie R. Krythe
Isaline M. Yule	Alice Sturdy
Eda K. Smith	Belle F. Siegel
Clementina de Forest Griffin	Mr. and Mrs. Moris B. Frosh
Mr. and Mrs. Colin M. Gair	Mr. and Mrs. H. H. Clifford
Irving Bancroft	John M. Connor
Mr. and Mrs. C. C. Ganahl	Joan Harper Bell
Rockwell D. Hunt	Mrs. Alphonso Bell
Robert W. King	Violet Ingraham
Mrs. Vera C. Roush	Mr. and Mrs. Otto Zahn
Henry Ferling	Raquel Miller
Frances Blake	Mr. and Mrs. W. A. Woods
Bertha A. Ruse	Marguerite Arlotto
Mrs. Cecil Otho Dale	Mr. and Mrs. Duncan Gleason
Joseph C. Harker	Mr. and Mrs. Ranson Matthews
Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill	J. Thomas Owen
Elizabeth M. Burrage	Mr. and Mrs. E. E. Hendeman
Dr. and Mrs. Elmer R. Pascoe	Mrs. E. K. Allen

## *Activities of the Society*

Mrs. P. H. Johnson  
Mabel E. Guinn  
Elizabeth B. Sawyer  
Mr. and Mrs. Clarence J. Shults  
Mr. and Mrs. N. Bostwick  
Thomas Quale Lempertz  
Dr. Donaldo Manuel  
William T. Holtz  
L. J. Grande  
Mrs. Blanche S. Mitchell  
Dr. and Mrs. Gustave O. Arlt  
Mr. and Mrs. E. F. Ducommun  
Mr. Elmer C. Weber  
Mr. and Mrs. Joseph H. Jenkins  
Frank B. Putnam  
Thorp Whitmore  
Dr. and Mrs. Robert L. Borland  
Mr. and Mrs. K. L. Carver  
Mr. and Mrs. Justin G. Turner  
Mrs. N. A. Garnier  
Scott Chapman  
Richard S. Ryder  
Mrs. Arthur Kemman

Bertha M. Ellis  
Mrs. Ernest Harris Perry  
I. D. Perry  
Mrs. Grace Olney  
W. T. Olney  
Mr. and Mrs. Paul T. Scott  
Mrs. Jean Hall Giles  
Elizabeth Snyder  
Charles E. Rozaire  
Edwin Castagna  
Mr. and Mrs. William S. Evans, Jr.  
Mr. and Mrs. Lawrence Clark Powell  
Margaret M. Forsythe  
Mr. and Mrs. M. E. Anderson  
Mr. and Mrs. Russell E. Belous  
Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison  
Bennett R. Forsythe  
Grace S. Stoermer  
Joey Barnes  
Erinda Sepulveda Eastman  
Rev. Philip Conneally, S.J.  
Mr. and Mrs. G. E. Fullerton

### ANNUAL CHRISTMAS PROGRAM, DECEMBER 9, 1958

The annual Christmas program gave us a delightful evening with two speakers, and an art exhibit for excitement at the L. A. County Museum. Katherine Bixby Hotchkis (Mrs. Preston), author of *"Christmas at Rancho Los Alamitos,"* spoke upon that same subject and told of the interesting holiday activities when she was a little girl. The charming way in which she referred to her parents and the guests they entertained delighted her audience, and the humor injected made it easy to follow. The picture she painted was most entertaining.

A companion Christmas talk by Rev. Wesley Havermale, dean of the Long Beach Convocation of the Episcopal Diocese of Los Angeles, entitled *"Christmas Comes to the Holy Land,"* gave a picture of present-day Palestine. His visit to Bethlehem gave an understanding of modern Jerusalem and the country thereabout. This talk gave real meaning to our Christmas season.

Since the Van Gogh exhibit opened to the public that same evening on another floor, our members, by courtesy of the Museum Association's invitation, went to see his paintings and then participated in the refreshments served there. Between 75 and 100 signed the register as follows:

Carmen K. MacFarland  
Zella O. Graves  
Mr. and Mrs. Everett Gordon Hager  
Dr. and Mrs. Gustave O. Arlt  
Mr. and Mrs. John A. Stransky, Jr.  
Mr. and Mrs. Herbert E. Brown

Mrs. Helen Moore  
Mrs. Stanford  
Mr. and Mrs. Carleton Ralston  
Dr. and Mrs. Robert L. Borland  
Mr. and Mrs. Joaquin Hernandez  
Mr. and Mrs. Moris B. Friesch



## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Mr. and Mrs. Fred W. Cleland  
Helen B. Walters  
William Menton  
Mr. and Mrs. Donald McLarnan  
Raymond Ahern  
Mame E. Goodell  
Dora M. Robbins  
Mrs. Frank B. Duncan  
Rose Hassell  
Mr. and Mrs. Otto J. Zahn  
H. W. Schrawin  
Mr. and Mrs. Bennett Forsythe  
Dr. and Mrs. R. C. Gillingham  
Mrs. Ben J. Little  
Mrs. M. Gristock  
Maymie R. Krythe  
Herbert Morley  
Raymond V. Morley  
Vivian G. Morse  
Mildred Pearce  
Belle F. Siegel  
Mrs. Jean Hall Giles  
Mr. and Mrs. Frank Pachmayr

Mr. and Mrs. Ernest J. Yorba  
John W. A. Off, Jr.  
Florence Farmer  
Mrs. Beulah Stuart  
Orpha Klinker  
Dorothy R. Hassler  
Margaretha Riedel  
Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill  
Dr. and Mrs. Elmer Pascoe  
Brother Cassian Miller, C.S.C.  
Brother Charles Escobar, C.S.C.  
Frank Frank  
Kate Darling Chapin  
Mae Darling  
Frederick W. Nelson  
J. C. Harker  
Frank B. Putnam  
Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion  
Clara LaTetra Darling  
P. H. Ackerman  
Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison  
Ruth I. Mahood  
Isaline M. Yule

## BALLOTS FOR NEW DIRECTORS

To replace the four retiring Directors, in accordance with our annual practice, ballots were mailed out on December 24th and 26th.

## BILLS FOR 1959 DUES

On December 28th the staff began to mail our bills for 1959 dues.

### *Las Posadas at Casa de Adobe, December 14*

*Los Californios Club* enacted this traditional pre-Christmas ceremony at the Casa de Adobe of the Southwest Museum and some of our members attended this function. Piñata and refreshments followed. Some two hundred people were present and the candle light procession around the inside patio of the adobe was pretty to see and significant for those participating. Around the refreshments, the opportunity was offered to meet several old members and others from as far away as Padua Hills. The Club's refreshments were much enjoyed by all.

## *Gifts to the Society*

*In each issue of THE QUARTERLY there appears a list of the donors and gifts made currently to the Society.*

*The Society is making an especial effort to build up its collection of historic materials, such as diaries, letters, account books, early newspapers, theatre and other programs, pictures of early-day life in California and costumes. We need your help.*

*Many members having treasured ancestral keepsakes were impelled to give them to the Society because of the realization that in private possession they would, sooner or later, disappear or deteriorate, whereas, in the custody of the Historical Society of Southern California they will be preserved indefinitely.*

MARCO R. NEWMARK,  
*Chairman, Committee on Gifts and Bequests*

ROBERT C. GILLINGHAM: Two copies of the 1921 ANNUAL.

MABLE E. LUNN: Donated her whole file of QUARTERLIES 1941-1957, and other pamphlets.

FREDERICK W. BEINECKE: McNeil's "Travels in 1894," to, through and from the Gold Regions in California.

MARCO R. NEWMARK: Twelve QUARTERLIES from the 1940's.

L.A. COUNTY ART INSTITUTE: "Southwest American Indian Art."

GEORGE H. WHITNEY: "Mining in Upper San Antonio Canyon" (10 copies).

ROBERT G. COWAN: "Booksellers of Early San Francisco."

PAUL MASON: "Activities of the Department of Motor Vehicles, September, 1958."

PHILIP S. RUSH: "A History of the Californias."

Two gifts were received without donors' names:

"Your Guidebook to Columbian Memories."

"Registered Historical Landmarks, County of Los Angeles."

## *Notes from the Secretary*

### *Two Important Losses*

On October 30th, our patron member Mrs. E. L. Doheny passed away at St. Vincent's Hospital. Mrs. Doheny was a liberal contributor to many causes and organizations. She served on the Board of Trustees of several civic and social welfare organizations and was also a renowned patroness of the arts. The *Los Angeles Times* honored her in 1954 as one of the "Los Angeles Women of the Year" for her many humanitarian activities. As a devout Catholic, she had the privilege of a private chapel in her home.

On December 10th, our recent honorary member, Don Adolfo Camarillo died in St. John's Hospital, Oxnard, at the age of 94, the last survivor of a family of 14 children of Juan and Martina Camarillo. He was recognized for many years in the parades, when, in black Spanish costume, he rode his great white horse. Perhaps he was best known popularly for his love of pure white Arabian stallions; which he bred for many years. Those attending Santa Barbara Fiestas will recall his daughters and granddaughters riding six abreast up State Street on these magnificent white horses.

Don Adolfo was best known for his services to County, to schools, to fair organizations, to banks, to lodges and to the Catholic church. A member of the Native Sons of the Golden West for 70 years, of the Ventura County Board of Directors for 38 years, of the County Board of Supervisors eight years and of the Knights of Columbus 50 years. Pope Pius XII conferred upon him the Order of St. Gregory. Those of our members on our 30th Pilgrimage will always remember his hospitality on that day when we visited Rancho Calleguas.




# Builders of Los Angeles . . .

## *The Story of Our Plaque*

By Ana Begue de Packman

*Secretary Emeritus*

HE BOARD OF DIRECTORS of the *Historical Society of Southern California*, at its November, 1950, meeting, approved a proposal made by Director Marco R. Newmark to create a memorial bronze plaque honoring outstanding Los Angeles citizens of the past for their services in commonwealth and civic development and betterment. The memorial, now known as the Society's "BUILDERS OF LOS ANGELES" plaque, was authorized by the Board of Directors, and President Edward A. Dickson appointed the Plaque Committee, which was composed of the following members: Marco R. Newmark, chairman, John C. Austin, Marshall Stimson, and John E. Fishburn, Jr.

Since the plaque would cost several hundred dollars, Mr. Newmark and his committee evolved a sponsorship plan whereby there would be no direct costs applied against general funds of the Society. A study was made of Los Angeles pioneers who should be honored on the plaque and after selection of the names by the committee, sponsorship came easily from descendents of some of the honorees, and from public-spirited members of the Society.

Mr. Newmark worked for many months on this project in which he envisioned a plaque that could be appropriately placed in a permanent setting when the Society should obtain a permanent home in the future. With meticulous care he, and the members of his committee, wrote the inscription, designed the mold, and provided that it should be adaptable to the addition of more names at any time in the future.

The BUILDERS OF LOS ANGELES plaque was unveiled at a special meeting held in the Society's old headquarters at the Earl Mansion on Wilshire Boulevard on October 1, 1952.

The inscription on the plaque, the names of the honorees, and the sponsors of the plaque, as it stands today, follows:

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

NAME	SPONSOR
GOVERNOR FELIPE DE NEVE .....	<i>Mr. Edward A. Dickson</i>
ANTONIO FRANCO CORONEL .....	<i>Mr. Marshall Stimson</i>
SENATOR STEPHEN M. WHITE .....	<i>Mr. Edward A. Dickson</i>
Dedicated to the daughter of the Hon. Stephen M. White, Miss Hortense White	
JOHN TEMPLE .....	<i>Mr. Marshall Stimson</i>
CHARLES L. DUCOMMUN .....	<i>Mr. Edmond F. Ducommun</i>
Dedicated to the four sons and one daughter of Mr. Charles L. Ducommun	
HARRIS NEWMARK .....	<i>Harris Newmark Estate, through Mr. Marco R. Newmark</i>
Dedicated to the descendants of Mr. Harris Newmark	
ISAIAS W. HELLMAN .....	<i>Farmers and Merchants National Bank, through Mr. Victor H. Rossetti</i>
Dedicated to I. W. Hellman, Mrs. E. P. Heller, Mrs. Sidney Ehrman, son and daughters of Mr. Isaias W. Hellman	
I. N. VAN NUYS .....	<i>Van Nuys Building Co.</i>
Dedicated to Mr. and Mrs. Benton Van Nuys, Mrs. Richard J. Schweppe, Mr. and Mrs. James R. Page, son and daughters of Mr. I. N. Van Nuys	
DR. J. B. WINSTON .....	<i>Miss Margarite Winston</i>
Dedicated to Miss Margarite Winston, Mrs. Sven Lokrantz, Mr. and Mrs. John Winston and family, Dr. and Mrs. Sven Lokrantz, grandchildren of Dr. J. B. Winston	
DON MANUEL DOMINGUEZ .....	<i>Dominguez Estate Co.</i>
Dedicated to the descendants of Don Manuel Dominguez	
JOSEPH MESMER .....	<i>Mrs. June Mesmer MacKenzie</i>
Dedicated to the daughter of Mr. Joseph Mesmer	
WILLIAM WOLFSKILL .....	<i>Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill</i>
Dedicated to the descendants of Mr. Joseph Wolfskill	
BENJAMIN S. EATON .....	<i>Mr. and Mrs. Burdick H. Eaton</i>
Dedicated to the grandson of Mr. Benjamin S. Eaton	
WILLIAM MAY GARLAND .....	<i>John Jewett Garland</i>
Dedicated to William May Garland, II, grandson of Mr. William May Garland	
ARTHUR MCKENZIE DODSON .....	<i>Mrs. Florence Dodson Schoneman</i>
Dedicated to the granddaughter of Mr. Arthur McKenzie Dodson through Mr. John Connell	
DR. JOHN R. HAYNES .....	<i>Dr. John R. Haynes Foundation</i>
Dedicated to Bureau of Governmental Research — University of California at Los Angeles	
BENJAMIN F. COULTER .....	<i>Mrs. James O. McReynolds</i>
Dedicated to the grandson of Mr. B. F. Coulter	
JAMES W. ROBINSON .....	<i>Mr. Edward R. Valentine</i>
Dedicated to the grandson of Mr. J. W. Robinson	
BENJAMIN D. WILSON .....	<i>Miss Anne Patton</i>
Dedicated to the granddaughter of "Don Benito," Mr. Benjamin D. Wilson	
FRANK WIGGINS .....	<i>Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce</i>
KASPARE COHN .....	<i>Union Bank &amp; Trust Co.</i>
Dedicated to Mrs. Ben Meyer and Mrs. Herman Hahn	
MAX MEYBERG .....	<i>Mr. Manfred Meyberg</i>
Dedicated to Mrs. Leo Meyberg and Mrs. Marco R. Newmark (Constance Meyberg)	
JOSEPH F. SARTORI .....	<i>Security-First National Bank, through Mr. James D. Shelton</i>
Dedicated to Mr. and Mrs. G. M. Wallace	
HENRY W. O'MELVENY .....	<i>Mr. and Mrs. Stuart O'Melveny, Mr. and Mrs. John O'Melveny</i>
ISADORE DOCKWEILER .....	<i>Dockweiler and Dockweiler attorneys, through Mr. Henry D. Dockweiler</i>
Dedicated to the family of Mr. Isadore Dockweiler	

## *Builders of Los Angeles*

### BUILDERS OF LOS ANGELES

ON THIS ENDURING BRONZE PLAQUE  
ARE RECORDED NAMES OF CALIFORNIANS  
WHO HELPED IN THE BUILDING OF THE COMMONWEALTH  
WHOSE LIVES REFLECT THE COURAGE, THE VISION  
AND THE DETERMINATION OF OUR HONORED PIONEERS

DEDICATED BY THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA  
DURING THE CENTENNIAL YEAR OF 1950 IN GRATEFUL RECOGNITION OF  
THEIR HISTORIC SERVICE

GOVERNOR FELIPE DE NEVE  
ANTONIO FRANCO CORONEL  
SENATOR STEPHEN M. WHITE  
JOHN TEMPLE  
CHARLES L. DUCOMMUN  
HARRIS NEWMARK  
ISAIAS W. HELLMAN  
I. N. VAN NUYS  
DR. J. B. WINSTON  
DON MANUEL DOMINGUEZ  
JOSEPH MESMER  
WILLIAM WOLFSKILL  
BENJAMIN S. EATON  
WILLIAM MAY GARLAND  
ARTHUR MCKENZIE DODSON  
DR. JOHN R. HAYNES  
BENJAMIN F. COULTER  
JAMES W. ROBINSON

BENJAMIN D. WILSON  
FRANK WIGGINS  
KASPARE COHN  
MAX MEYBERG  
JOSEPH F. SARTORI  
HENRY W. O'MELVENY  
ISADORE DOCKWEILER  
GENERAL HARRISON G. OTIS  
MME. CAROLINE SEVERANCE  
MARSHALL STIMSON  
OBADIAH BARKER  
EDWIN T. EARL  
JOHN EDWARD HOLLENBECK  
ALPHONSO E. BELL  
THOMAS D. MOTT  
WILLIAM W. ORCUTT  
GEORGE BUTLER GRIFFIN  
JEAN LOUIS VIGNES

J. GREGG LAYNE

NAME	SPONSOR
GENERAL HARRISON G. OTIS .....	<i>Los Angeles Times</i>
Dedicated to Mr. and Mrs. Norman Chandler, Mr. and Mrs. Philip Chandler, Mr. Harrison Chandler and Mrs. Franklin Booth	
MME. CAROLINE SEVERANCE .....	<i>Friday Morning Club</i>
Dedicated to the membership of the Friday Morning Club	
MARSHALL STIMSON .....	<i>Los Angeles High School, Summer Class of 1896, by Mrs. Hartly Shaw, together with Directors John C. Austin, Marco R. Newmark, Edward A. Dickson, Mr. and Mrs. F. C. Ripley</i>
OBADIAH BAKER .....	<i>Barker Bros. through Mr. Neil Petree</i>
EDWIN T. EARL .....	<i>Mr. and Mrs. Edwin Earl, a son</i>
JOHN EDWARD HOLLENBECK .....	<i>Mrs. Alphonso E. Bell</i>
ALPHONSO E. BELL .....	<i>Mrs. Alphonso E. Bell</i>





— Photo courtesy Ana Begue de Packman

### “BUILDERS OF LOS ANGELES” PLAQUE UNVEILING

The “Builders of Los Angeles” Plaque, which has become one of the valuable possessions of the Society, was officially unveiled by Society President John C. Austin and Director Marco R. Newmark, originator of the idea and chairman of the *Special Plaque Committee*, at a Society meeting on October 1, 1952. The meeting was held in the Earl Mansion on Wilshire Boulevard.

NAME	SPONSOR
THOMAS D. MOTT .....	<i>Mssrs. Lawrence Vanderleck and Thomas D. Mott, grandsons of Mr. Thomas D. Mott</i>
WILLIAM W. ORCUTT .....	<i>Mrs. William W. Orcutt</i> Dedicated to the grandchildren of Mr. William W. Orcutt
GEORGE BUTLER GRIFFIN .....	<i>Miss Clementine De Forest Griffin</i> Dedicated to the children of Mr. George Butler Griffin
JEAN LOUIS VIGNES .....	<i>Mrs. Adel Vignes Heyes</i> Dedicated to the granddaughters Mrs. Walter W. Smith, Mrs. Antoinette Rowe, Mrs. Marie San Souci, and Mrs. Marguerite Walp
J. GREGG LAYNE .....	<i>The Board of Directors of the Historical Society of Southern California</i> Dedicated to Mrs. J. Gregg Layne and family

# Roster of Members

As of December 31, 1958

## HONORARY MEMBERS

Ed Ainsworth  
Don Adolfo Camarillo\*  
Miss Mary E. Foy  
Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt  
Mrs. Lucy Gage Rand  
Lee Shippey  
Matt Weinstock

## LIFE MEMBERS

Mrs. Harold Bayly  
Mrs. Elmer Belt  
Fred Hathaway Bixby  
California Bank  
Dr. John W. Caughey  
Charles G. Clarke  
Carson Estate Company  
Homer D. Crotty  
Mrs. Edward A. Dickson  
Dominguez Estate Co.  
Edmond F. Ducommun, *Director*  
Mr. and Mrs. Burdick H. Eaton  
Mrs. Dorothy Dobbins Freeman  
Harry Groman  
F. James Hope  
Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce  
Mrs. Richard O'Neill, Jr.  
Mr. and Mrs. Earl R. Osborn  
Harold Oswald  
Mrs. Ana Begue de Packman, *Secretary Emeritus, Director*  
Dr. William B. Pettus  
Mrs. Richard J. Schweppe  
Mr. and Mrs. Sydney A. Temple  
Mrs. Robert C. Tipton  
Justin G. Turner, *First Vice-President, Director*  
Mrs. Carol G. Wilson  
Mrs. C. Jackson Zane

## PATRON MEMBERS

John C. Austin  
Mrs. Edward L. Doheny\*  
Mrs. Alphonzo E. Bell  
San Fernando Mission

## SUSTAINING MEMBERS

Henry J. Bauer  
Garner A. Beckett  
K. L. Carver, *Director*  
Shannon Crandall, Jr.  
Mrs. Richard Y. Dakin  
Miss O. W. Foster  
John Jewett Garland  
A. J. Gock  
Bill Goodan  
Daniel G. Grant, Jr.  
Richard A. Grant  
Harry G. Johansing, Jr.  
Oscar Thom Lawler  
John R. Mage  
George R. Martin  
Lorrin L. Morrison, *Director*  
Mr. and Mrs. Marshall S. Neal  
Mr. and Mrs. Frank Pachmayr  
Miss Anne Patton  
Mrs. Samuel K. Rindge  
Edward Royal  
Mr. and Mrs. Frank R. Seaver  
Roy C. Seeley  
Roger Bixby Smith  
Mr. and Mrs. John Joughin Tuttle  
Edward R. Valentine  
J. B. Van Nuys  
Mrs. George V. Wright  
Mr. and Mrs. Richard Zobelein

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

## ANNUAL MEMBERS

Mrs. Elsie B. Adams	Dwight L. Clarke, <i>Director</i>
Miss Ruth Albrecht	Miss M. Fern Clawson
Mr. and Mrs. Huston S. Alexander	Mr. and Mrs. Fred W. Cleland
Percy M. Allen	T. Brackenridge Clemens
Miss Marguerite Arlotto	Henry H. Clifford
Dr. Gustave O. Arlt, <i>President, Director</i>	George W. Cohen
Mrs. Elise Armstrong	Mrs. Ella Cole
L. L. Aubert	Mr. and Mrs. L. E. Colman
Franklin Baldwin	Miss Marjorie F. Combs
Mrs. Gates Baldwin	Hon. Newcomb Condee
Dr. Irving R. Bancroft	Miss Beatrice Cooke
Mr. and Mrs. Richard Bard	Miss Laura C. Cooley
Myron I. Barker	Andrew J. Copp, Jr.
Miss Ella Baxter	W. R. Copp
K. K. Bechtel	Mrs. F. E. Coulter
Frederick W. Beinecke	Robert G. Cowan
Mrs. J. Allison Bell	Mrs. Thelma Crain
Robert S. Bell	Mrs. Eunice C. Crittenden
Robert Bennett	Leonard C. Crittenden
Richard J. Berry	R. H. Cross
C. A. Bilicke	Mrs. Louise B. Crum
Eugene W. Biscailuz	Guy Richards Crump
Leet W. Bissell	Mr. and Mrs. Robert Cummins
Mrs. Fred H. Bixby	Miss Augustine Dalland
Mrs. Llewellyn Bixby	N. S. Davis
William E. Bloomfield	Mrs. W. Thomas Davis
I. A. Bonilla	Miss Zannie E. Davis
Mrs. Mona Wood Bonnell	Glen Dawson
Dr. Robert L. Borland, Sr.	Miss Helen C. Dean
Norris Bostwick	Robert Dechert
Hon. Fletcher Bowron	Paul M. DeFalla
Mrs. A. J. Boyle	William Dellamore
Ray Brandes	Carl S. Dentzel
Robert A. Brant	James P. Devere
Mrs. Arcadia Bandini Brennan	F. Theodore Dexter
George M. Breslin	Fred G. Doan
Harold L. Briggs	Robert G. Dodson, O.S.B.
John Bright	Rt. Rev. Msgr. James E. Dolan
Charles Brown	Arnold Dominguez, Jr.
Mrs. F. Walton Brown	Thornton G. Douglas
Mr. and Mrs. Herbert E. Brown	George W. Dryer
Miss Janet F. Brown	Alan N. Ducommun
Mrs. Joseph Brown, Jr.	Mrs. Alan N. Ducommun
Mr. and Mrs. P. Sumner Brown	Miss Bertha C. Ducommun
Ernest A. Bryant	Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun
Daniel P. Bryant	Edmond G. Ducommun
W. A. Bullis	Jean F. Ducommun
Mrs. H. Kenyon Burch	Donald Duke
Stanley K. Burgess	Mrs. Frank B. Duncan
Mrs. Clyde R. Burr	Miss Jennie Dunham
George E. Bushell	John A. Dunkel
Julien S. Caheen	George A. V. Dunning
James S. Cantlen	Miss Florence Durkee
Mrs. Guy B. Capps	Edwin Earl
W. B. Carman	J. C. Earle
Miss Alice L. Carothers	John H. Eaton, M.D.
Miss Katherine Carr	Charles F. Edwards
George Earl Carson	Sidney M. Ehrman
Harold C. Chambers	Robert G. Ellhamer
Mrs. Kate Darling Chapin	Mrs. A. E. Envoldsen
Alfred S. Chapman	Louis Epstein
D. S. Chesney	Lewis D. Erwin, II
Ralph O. Chick	W. J. Escherich



## Roster of Members

### ANNUAL MEMBERS (*continued*)

Miss Mariana T. Etchemendy	Adolf Holm
Mr. and Mrs. Majl Ewing	B. G. Holmes
McIntyre Faries	Miss Marie Alden Hopkins
H. G. Fairman*	Preston Hotchkis
Miss Florence Farmer	Hon. Frederick F. Houser
Francis P. Farquhar	Miss Flora Belle Houston
John Farquhar	Miss Luella Howard
Lion Feuchtwanger	Ray Howard
J. E. Fishburn, Jr.	Mr. and Mrs. Robert N. Hutchison
Mrs. Bennett R. Forsythe	Miss Violet Ingram
Frank Frank	Mrs. Leiland Atherton Irish
Mrs. Cecil Frankel	J. M. Isaac
Miss C. Marjorie Freeman	Mrs. Lida Houghton Izant
Mrs. Jeral D. Frey	Heard Houghton Izant
Moris B. Friesch	Mrs. Clifford Jackson
Leo J. Friis	Joseph H. Jenkins
Roy M. Fryer	Roger W. Jessup
E. W. Fuller	Clarence L. Johnson
Mr. and Mrs. Martin Fuller	Mrs. Harry Keeler
George E. Fullerton	Fred M. Keller
Mrs. Julia Fuqua	Mrs. Ruth Holly Kemman
Rt. Hon. Viscount Furness	Mr. and Mrs. E. J. Kennedy
Colin M. Gair, <i>Director</i>	Miss Margaret Ann Kerr
Judge Morgan Galbreth	Alexander King
Sidney K. Gallely	Robert W. King
C. C. Ganahl	Mrs. Howard Fithian Kingman
Mr. and Mrs. Banning Garrett	Mrs. Frederick Kingston
Mrs. Charles W. Gates, II	Knott's Berry Farm
Mrs. John Edward Gaunt	Frederick W. Koenig
Stephen D. Gavin	Dr. Martin L. Krieger
James M. Gerstley	Mrs. Maymie R. Krythe
Mrs. Jean Hall Giles	Mr. and Mrs. Peter B. Kuhl
Robert C. Gillingham	Joseph L. La Barbera, <i>Director</i>
Mr. and Mrs. W. Edwin Gledhill	Dr. and Mrs. J. R. Lacayo
Mrs. Lemuel Goldwater	Mr. and Mrs. O. D. Land
Miss Mame E. Goodell	Oscar Lawler
John B. Goodman, III	Thomas Q. Lempertz
Dudley C. Gordon	Joseph P. Loeb
Mrs. Helen R. Goss	Mrs. Sven Lokrantz
Mrs. Chester W. Gould	Richard B. Luckey
Mrs. Zilla C. Graves	Miss Mabel E. Lunn
Mrs. Douglas C. Gregg	Edward D. Lyman
Miss Clementine De Forest Griffin	Mrs. Carmen K. MacFarland
Mrs. Martha J. Gristock	Mrs. June Mesmer MacKenzie
Howard J. Guinn	Miss Cynthia G. MacNair
Miss Mabel E. Guinn	James D. MacNeil
Mr. and Mrs. D. R. Guthrey	Dr. Don MacQueen
Mrs. Everett Gordon Hager	Miss Ruth I. Mahood
Mr. and Mrs. Giles S. Hall, Jr.	Mr. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion
Mrs. Neil Halpin	Joshua H. Marks
Dr. George P. Hammond	Mrs. Hinton N. Marr
John Hankey	William M. Mason
Phil Townsend Hanna, Jr.	Mrs. Charles M. Masson
George L. Harding	Paul F. Mattoon
Orville J. Harrell	Mrs. Frank Mellus
Mrs. E. S. Heller	William W. Melnitz
I. W. Hellman	William B. Menton
Maurice J. Hellman	Shirley E. Meserve
Harold A. Henry	Mrs. Manfred Meyberg
Joaquin Hernandez	Eldred L. Meyer
Walter S. Hilborn	Dr. William P. Mikkelsen
N. B. Hinson	Brother Cassian Miller, C.S.C.
Mrs. Maurice Hirshfield	Mrs. Marvin Miller

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

## ANNUAL MEMBERS (*continued*)

John C. Mills	Dr. Lawrence Clark Powell
Dr. Ralph Eldin Minger	Mr. and Mrs. Charles Lee Powell
J. D. Minster	Ruth and Chuck Powell
Mrs. Beatrice Sabichi Mitchell	Charles Puck
Mr. and Mrs. George S. Moffatt	Miss Clara E. Purdum
Gilbert S. Moore	Miss Margaret Purdum
Mr. and Mrs. Herbert M. Morley	Frank B. Putnam, <i>Second Vice-President</i>
Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison	<i>and Treasurer, Director</i>
Raymond K. Morrison	Carleton H. Ralston
Mrs. Wayland Morrison	Robert H. Raphael, Jr.
Mrs. William T. McArthur	Mrs. Jennie Dion Raymond
Ernest G. McCabe	George W. Retzer, Jr.
Mrs. Frederick McCormick	Mrs. Elizabeth Richard
Lon S. McCoy	Douglas F. Richardson
Miss Anna M. McKee	Miss Frances C. Richardson
Miss Willa J. McKee	Vernon W. Riley
Mrs. J. W. McKinley	Mr. and Mrs. Edward P. Ripley
Mr. and Mrs. Donald McLarnan	F. C. Ripley
Mrs. James B. McLaughlin	Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley
W. H. McMillin	Mr. and Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Jr.
Mrs. Ilene Beatty McNulty	Ward Ritchie
Malcolm McNaghten	Miss Dora M. Robbins
William McPherson	Mrs. Ella Longmaid Robinson
John McWilliams	Frank L. Robinson
Mrs. Roy E. Naftzger	W. W. Robinson, <i>Director</i>
F. W. Nelson	Mrs. Rufus G. Rodgers
Miss Edna Newmark	Paul B. Roen
Harris Newmark	Miss Eleanor J. Rogers
Marco R. Newmark, <i>Director</i>	Walter H. Rolapp
Thomas L. Newmark	Frank Rolfe
Mrs. Louise S. Nordlinger	Dr. Andrew F. Rolle, <i>Director</i>
Mrs. Marie E. Northrop, <i>Director</i>	Mrs. Margaret Romer
S. Tilden Norton	W. S. Rosecrans
Fritz Nuernberger	Victor H. Rossetti
Doyce B. Nunis, Jr.	Mrs. Ruth Aperson Rous
Mr. and Mrs. Myron Nutting	Mrs. Vera C. Roush
W. G. O'Barr	Mrs. Antoinette Rowe
John W. A. Off, Jr.	Chester C. Rude
Milton Offner	Miss Phillipine W. Runnings
John O'Melveny	Philip S. Rush
Mrs. William W. Orcutt	Mrs. George Carlos Sabichi
Miss Eleanor Ormondy	Mrs. Gizella Sawtelle
Mrs. C. G. Osborn	Mrs. Justin Scharff
J. Thomas Owen	Fred H. Schauer
Mrs. Ernest Milton Pace, Jr.	Ludwig Schiff
James R. Page	Sol Schiff
Dr. Edwin O. Palmer	Mrs. Florence D. Schoneman
Llewellyn A. Parker	Mrs. Paul Segerstrom
J. C. Partsch	James E. Serven
Elmer R. Pascoe, M.D.	Miss Ida May Shrode
Marcia A. Patrick, M.D.	Miss Belle F. Siegel
Miss Mildred Pearce	M. B. Silberberg
Mr. and Mrs. Ralph Peplow	Dudley Sipprelle
Miss Helen Gladys Percy	Neil A. Skinner
A. B. Perkins	Mrs. M. S. Slocum
Ferdinand Perret	A. Maxson Smith
Miss Emma Harris Perry	John W. Snyder
Miss Mary Helen Peterson	John W. Spinks
Albert Raborn Phillips, Jr.	Dr. Norman F. Sprague, Jr.
Mno Pierce	Dr. Robert Gordon Sproul
Sid D. Platford	Mrs. James Langford Stack
Mr. and Mrs. John C. Plummer	Proctor Stafford
Mr. and Mrs. John L. Plummer	Jackson Stanley

## Roster of Members

### ANNUAL MEMBERS (*continued*)

Carey Stanton	Mrs. Marguerite Vignes Walp
Herbert W. Stanton	Miss Helen Walters
Rev. Luther E. Stein	Mrs. Stafford L. Warren
Harold M. Stern	C. P. Watson
Roger J. Sterrett	Roy B. Weathered, M.D.
Mrs. Norman S. Sterry	Raymond D. Weaver
Mrs. Carroll Stewart	Elmer C. Weber
Gordon Stimson	Albert C. Wheat
Miss Grace S. Stoermer, <i>Director</i>	H. H. West*
Mrs. John A. Stransky, Jr.	Mrs. Charles L. Whipple
Thomas W. Streeter	Mrs. Ann Stanford White
W. B. Stringfellow	George H. Whitney
Miss Alice Sturdy	Leon O. Whitsell
Charles D. Swanner	Mrs. M. E. Wilbur
Mr. and Mrs. George L. Swartz	Miss Vera L. Withall
Mr. and Mrs. Don B. Tatum	Mr. and Mrs. John C. Wolfskill
Thomas Workman Temple, II	Joseph W. Wolfskill
Gatesby C. Thom	Don W. Woods
Colonel Neil O. Thomas	Robert J. Woods
Harlan H. Thompson	Walter A. Woods
Lyman Thompson	Mrs. Thomas E. Workman, <i>Director</i>
Mrs. Birger Tinglof	Miss Mary J. Workman
Mrs. Walter K. Towers	David I. Worsfold
Robert Triest	Mr. and Mrs. D. D. Woodward
Mrs. Lester A. Tryce	Miss Sylvia Yellen
Maurice Turner	Mr. and Mrs. Ernest J. Yorba
Dr. John H. Urabec	Miss Ada M. Young
Mr. and Mrs. George B. Varnum	Miss Isaline M. Yule
C. C. Vernon	Mr. and Mrs. Otto J. Zahn
Irving M. Walker	* <i>Deceased</i>

### NEW MEMBERS FOR 1959:

The following people joined the Society in December for memberships to begin in January, 1959:

F. H. Bosbyshell	Frank L. Robinson
Clara LeTetra Darling	Paul B. Roen
Joseph Clyde Harker	Mrs. Pearl Segerstrom
Thomas S. McNeill	Neil A. Skinner
Lulu R. O'Neal	John W. Spinks
Mrs. Charles Lee Powell	Mrs. Herbert L. Sutton
Carleton H. Ralston	Herbert L. Sutton

### HISTORICAL SOCIETIES

Glendale Historical Society	Utah State Historical Society
Wisconsin State Historical Society	

### PUBLIC LIBRARIES

Alameda Free Library	Kansas City Public Library
Alhambra Public Library	Long Beach Public Library
Anaheim Public Library	Los Angeles County Public Library
Burbank Public Library	Los Angeles Public Library
Cleveland Public Library	New York Public Library
Corona Public Library	Newberry Library
Denver Public Library	Oakland Public Library
Detroit Public Library	Ontario Public Library
Fullerton Public Library	Pasadena Public Library
Glendale Public Library	Pomona Public Library
Glendora Public Library	

(*continued*)



## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

### PUBLIC LIBRARIES (*continued*)

Riverside Public Library	Santa Barbara Public Library
San Diego Public Library	Santa Monica Public Library
San Francisco Public Library	South Pasadena Public Library
San Marino Public Library	Upland Public Library
Santa Ana Public Library	Ventura County Public Library

### SPECIAL LIBRARIES

Academy of California Church History	Los Angeles Board of Education
American Antiquarian Society	Professional Library
Arizona Dept. of Library and Archives	Los Angeles County Medical Association
California State Library	N.D.G.W. L.A. Parlor No. 124
The Friday Morning Club Library	Provincial Archives (British Columbia)
Genealogical Society, Church of Latter	Riverside Daily Press
Day Saints	San Bernardino Daily Sun
California History and Landmarks	Dept., Tuesday Afternoon Club

### MUSEUMS

Bowers Memorial Museum	Los Angeles County Museum Library
Henry E. Huntington Library and	Southwest Museum
Art Gallery	Ventura County Pioneer Museum

### COLLEGES AND UNIVERSITIES

Alma College Library	San Jose State College
Brigham Young University	Santa Rosa Junior College
Bakersfield College Library	Stanford University Library
Brown University Library	University of Arizona Library
Chico State College Library	University of California at Berkeley
College of the Pacific	University of California at Davis
Columbia University Libraries	University of California at Los Angeles,
Cornell University Library	Bureau of Governmental Research
Duke University Library	University of California Library
Fresno State College Library	University of California at Riverside
Harvard College Library	University of Chicago Library
Honnold Library, Pomona College	University of Michigan
Indiana University Library	University of New Mexico
Los Angeles City College	University of Redlands
Los Angeles State College Library	University of San Francisco
Los Angeles State College,	University of Santa Clara
San Fernando Valley Campus	University of Southern California
Loyola University	University of Wyoming Library
Mount San Antonio College Library	Washington University Library
Northwestern University Library	(St. Louis, Mo.)
Occidental College Library	Washington University Library
Sacramento State College Library	(Seattle, Wash.)
Yale University Library	

### EXCHANGES

California Historical Society	Indiana State Historical Society
State Historical Society of Colorado	Nebraska State Historical Society
Texas State Historical Association	

## Roster of Members

### CONTRIBUTIONS TO SPECIAL PROJECTS

*Throughout the life of the Society many individual business firms and others have supported the "Centennial Year Roster" and other special undertakings. We take great pleasure in acknowledging their contributions in the following list:*

<i>Contributors</i>	<i>To These Purposes</i>
Bank of America .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
The A. J. Bayer Company .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Broadway Dept. Store, Inc. ....	<i>Special contributions</i>
Brunswig Drug Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Bullocks, Inc. ....	<i>Special contribution</i>
California Hardware Co. ....	<i>Special contribution and Centennial brochure</i>
California Portland Cement Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Capitol Milling Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Citizens National Trust and Savings Bank .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Coulters .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Ducommun's .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Farmers and Merchants National Bank of Los Angeles .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
William May Garland, II .....	<i>Special contribution</i>
General Petroleum Corp. ....	<i>Centennial brochure and roster</i>
Germain Seed and Plant Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Haas-Baruch & Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Harris and Frank .....	<i>Special contribution</i>
Los Angeles Historical Society .....	<i>Special contribution</i>
May Company .....	<i>Special contribution</i>
Pacific Mutual Life Insurance Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Republic Supply Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Riverside Cement Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
J. B. Shamel .....	<i>Loud Speaker</i>
Silverwoods .....	<i>Special contribution</i>
Standard Oil Co. ....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
State Mutual Bldg. and Loan Association .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Title Insurance and Trust Company .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Union Bank and Trust Company .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Union Oil Company of California .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>
Mrs. Elizabeth Schieffelin .....	<i>Centennial brochure</i>

# Index to Volume XL

By Carroll Spear Morrison

## A

- Abrego, José, 345  
Acquisition of California: Plans by Great Britain, 110; by France, 111; by United States, 111  
Acton, California, 289  
Adams, Charles Gibbs, 245, 246, 248  
Addison, General John E., 34  
Admission of California Into the Union, September 9, 1850, 266  
Alarcón, Hernando de, 6  
Alvarado, Governor, 341  
Amat, Bishop Tadeo, 72  
*American Fiction*, by Lyle H. Wright, *rev.*, 84  
Anderson, Alden, 356  
Anderson, Captain George B., 263  
Anderson, Andrew, 151  
Anza, The Overland Expedition of Juan Bautista de, 1774-1775, 11-14  
*Apache Life-Way*, *An*, by Morris Edward Opler, *rev.*, 84  
*Archives of the Archdiocese of Santa Fé, 1678-1900* by Fray Angélico Chávez, O.F.M., *rev.*, 84  
Argonauts of 1769: Padre Francisco Palóu, Padre Juan Crespi, Miguel Costanso, Junipero Serra, 9  
Arlt, Dr. Gustave O., 203, 258, 261, 263  
Armstrong, Captain, Frigate United States, 339  
Ashley, William, 101  
*Atlas of California*, by Paul F. Griffin and Robert N. Young, *rev.*, 186  
Atwood, Brad, 263  
Austin, John C., 250, 252, 258, 262, 410  
Averill, Commander G. J., *S. S. Senator*, 38

## B

- Bache, Lt. Richard, U.S.N., *S. S. Senator*, 34  
Bailey, William, 377  
Baker Block, 231  
Baker, Edward D., 273  
Baker, Marcus, 204, 224, 226  
Bancroft, George, 111  
Banning, Phineas, 39, 49, 52; residence, 242  
Baptism, First Indian, in California, 143  
Bard, Thomas R., 159, 385  
Barneson, Captain John, 281  
Baric, Charles, 152  
Barrows, H. D., 204, 226  
Bell, Horace, 224  
Beale's Cut, 168  
Beale, E. F., 150, 168  
Beale, Lieut. Edward Fitzgerald, 260-261  
Bear Flag Republic, 107-108, 113  
Bella Union Hotel, 232  
Bell, Theodore, 356  
Belshaw, Charles M., 355  
Benham, Lt., U.S.N., *S. S. Senator*, 34  
Bennett, Nathaniel, 266  
Benton, United States Senator Thomas H., 109  
Bermúdez, Domingo, 151  
*Bibliography of all the Published Works of the Historical Society of Southern California, 1884-1957*, by Anna Marie and Everett Gordon Hager, *rev.*, 393  
Bidwell, John, 108, 152, 273  
Bigler, Henry W., 116  
Bixby, Mr. and Mrs. Fred, 245  
Blackmar, Professor Frank, 10  
Bliss, Leslie E., 258  
Blue Sky Law, 357  
Blumberg, Wheeler, 80  
Bolton, Herbert E., 12  
Bovard, F. D., 59  
Bovard, George F., 64  
Bovard, Marion McKinley, 59  
Bowers Museum, 252  
Bowman, J. N., 138  
Bowron, Mayor Fletcher, 250  
Bradfield, A. J., 204, 226  
Brannan, Sam, 35  
*Brief Society History, A*, by Ana Begue de Packman, 223-263  
Briggs, Martin C., 273  
*Brinley, Charles Henry, A Case Study in Rancho Supervision*, by John C. Hough, 174-179  
Broderick, David C., 18  
Browne, J. Ross, 43  
Bryant, Joseph, Skipper of *S. S. Ada Hancock*, 49  
Bucareli, Viceroy Antonio María, 12  
Buchert, John W., 374  
Builders of Los Angeles Plaque, 200, 411-413  
*Builders of Los Angeles, The Story of Our Plaque*, by Ana Begue de Packman, 409-413  
Burch, John C., 270



## Index to Volume XL

Burnett, Peter H., 267  
 Burger, Mr. and Mrs. Edward F., 190, 263  
 Bury, H. A., 263  
 Bulter, First Mate of the S. S. *Senator*, 50  
 Butterfield Stage Route, 240  
 Butters, First Mate of the S. S. *Senator*, 42  
 Burns, Captain of the S. S. *Senator*, 38

### C

Cabrillo Day, 5  
 Cabrillo, Discovery by Juan Rodríguez, September 28, 1542 (California), 5-7  
 Cochrane, Vice-Admiral, 340  
 Cahuenga, Campo de, 240  
 Cahuenga, Treaty of, 240  
 Cajón Pass, 12  
*Californias, The*, by Philip S. Rush, *rev.*, 84  
 California Battalion of Mounted Riflemen, 108  
*California Firsts*, by Rockwell D. Hunt, *rev.*, 185  
*California, History of*, by Alexander Forbes, 1839, first book in English devoted to California, 114  
 California Literature, A Century of, 258-259  
*California, The New Empire State*, by Paul F. Griffin and Robert N. Young, *rev.*, 186  
 California Star Oil Company, 383  
 Camarillo, Don Adolfo, 263  
 Camarillo, Don Adolfo, In Memoriam, 408  
 Camarillo, Resolution Commends Mr., 193  
 Campton, George, 295  
 Canfield, C. A., 281  
 Caradine, John, 192  
 Carrillo, Leo, 250  
 Casillas, Maximo Alanís y, 223  
 Cass, Lewis, 268  
 Castro, General José, 106  
 Centennial of the American Flag Raising Ceremony in Los Angeles, 250  
 Chandler, Harry, 254  
 Chase, Pearl, 258  
 Chase, Salmon P., 268  
 Childs, O. W., 59  
*Citizen's Guide to California Government*, A, by S. Laird Swagert and Burton R. Brazil, *rev.*, 187  
 Clark, George J., 285  
 Clark, George Johnstone, 164-165, 167, 169, 170  
 Clark, George T., 271  
 Clarke, William J., 161  
 Clayton-Bulwer Treaty, 359  
*Cleland, Robert Glass, 1885-1957, An Historian's Appreciation*, by Andrew F. Rolle, 81-83

Clements, Mr. and Mrs. Colin, 244  
 Coffin, G. W., 171  
 Cole, Cornelius, 273  
 Collins, Rev. Father, 251, 252  
 Colton, Walter, 108  
*Commodore's Decision, The*, by Lou Ann Garrett, 337-352  
 Conness, John, 272  
 Cook, David, 79  
 Cornell, G., 167  
 Coronado, Vásquez de, 6  
 Coronel, Don Antonio F., 152, 204, 226  
*Correction, Please*, 321  
 Cortez, Hernando, 5  
 Cota, Manuel, 151  
 Coulter, Mrs. F. C., 252  
 Coutts, Cave, 245  
 Crane, Mike, 386  
 Creasy, Sir Edward S., 4  
 Crisco, Noah, 170  
 Curry, Charles F., 356

### D

Dall, Captain of S. S. *Senator*, 51  
 Dana, Jr., Richard Henry, 43  
 Davis, Jefferson, 19  
 Davis, John P., 277  
 Davis, William Heath, 35  
 Dead River of the Soledad, 158-162  
 Dedication of September, 1958 Quarterly to: Mrs. Ana Begue de Packman, Mr. John C. Austin, Mrs. Edward A. Dickson, Miss Mabel Guinn, Mr. Max E. Hayward, Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt, Mr. Oscar Lawler, Mrs. J. Gregg Layne, Mr. Marco R. Newmark, Mr. Frederic C. Ripley, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Mr. W. W. Robinson, Mr. Frank Rolfe, Mr. Roger J. Sterrett and Mr. Robert J. Woods, Miss Marion Parks, 199  
 Delano, T. A., 160  
 Del Valle, Ygnacio, 151  
 Dentzel, Carl S., 88  
 Devlin, Frank, 355  
 De Witt, Alexander, 285  
*Diamond Jubilee, Thoughts of the Eve of Our*, by Gustave O. Arlt, 203-210  
 Diamond Anniversary Year, Our, 94-95  
 Dickson, Edward A., 200, 250, 256, 258, 355, 410  
 Doheny, Edward L., 280  
 Doheny, Mrs. E. L., In Memoriam, 408  
 Douglas, Stephen A., 18  
 Discovery of Gold at Coloma by James Wilson Marshall on January 24, 1848, 114-118  
 Downey, J. G., 59, 204, 226  
 Draper, Lyman C., 206  
 Ducommun, Charles Louis, 247  
 Ducommun, Edmond F., 261, 262  
 Duvall, Robert Carson, 112

# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

## E

Edgerton, Henry, 273  
Editor's Note, 318  
Ellery, Nathan, 356  
Elwood, J. F., 280  
Espinosa, José, 154

## F

Fages, Governor Pedro, 12  
Farnsworth, R. W. C., 60  
Feliz, Don Tomás, 240  
Feore, James, 299  
Ferrello, Bartolomé, 7  
*Fifteen Decisive Events of California History*, by Rockwell D. Hunt, Part I, 3-16; Part II, 99-119; Part III, 265-284; Part IV, 353-372  
Fishburn, John E., Jr., 410  
Forbes, Alexander, 114  
Ford, Captain Henry L., 108  
*Forgotten Landmarks in Ventura County*, by Jeanne Riha, 77-80  
Fort Ross, 110  
Fort Tejon (Society Pilgrimage), 260  
Foster, Judge Marcus, 259  
*Fourth Estate in Old Tuolumne, The*, by Helen Rocca Goss, 120-137  
Foy, Miss Mary, 259  
Foy Harness Shop, Samuel, 232  
Frambes, O. S., 58  
Franklin, Lady, 47  
Frémont, Jessie Benton, 109, 206  
Frémont, John C., 267, 270; 1st, 2nd and 3rd Expeditions, 105-106, 206  
Frew, T. M., 377  
Frigate United States, 337  
Fryer, Roy M., 240  
Fuller, H., 224

## G

Gage, Henry T., 160  
Gálvez, Don José, 8, 10, 359  
Garces, Father Francisco, 12  
García, Francisco, 154  
García, Leon P., 167  
Garrett, Lou Ann, 337  
Gary, Thomas, 224  
*Gazette*, Mariposa, California, 129  
Geiger, Father of Mission Santa Barbara, 258  
Gelcich, Dr. Vincent, 384  
Gifford, John T., 294  
Gilbert, Edward, 267  
Gillespie, Mission of Archibald H., Frémont's Return to California, 1846, 105, 106, 270  
Gilman, Purser of the S. S. *Senator*, 54  
Gleason, George, 170, 285  
Goethals, George Washington, 360  
Gordon, I. C., 160  
Gorman, First Officer, S. S. *Senator*, 41  
Goss, Helen Rocca, 120  
Goux, Emil, 167

Grabhorn, Edwin, 228  
Guillén, Miguel Antonio, 181  
Guinn, J. M., 204, 205, 226  
Gwin, William M., 109, 267  
*Gwin, William M., Middleman*, by Donald E. Hargis, 17-32  
Gulley, James, 378

## H

Hager, Anna and Everett, 333  
Haight, Henry H., 277  
Hammond, Rev. D. D., 58  
Hancock, Winfield Scott, 46  
Hanscomb, Louis, 386  
Hansen, George, 204, 226  
Hargis, Donald E., 17  
Harloe, Captain M., S. S. *Senator*, 52  
Harper, Samuel, 287  
Haskell, John C., 161, 376  
Hastings, Mrs. John Russell, 258  
Hayes, Judge Benjamin, 43  
Haynes, Dr. John R., 355  
Hayward, Colonel Alvinza, 167  
Hayward, James, 164, 167, 170  
Hazard, Henry T., 285  
Healy, Ezra A., 63  
Hellman, Isaias, 59  
Heney, Francis J., 355  
Henry, Major Andrew, 101  
Hensley, Captain Samuel J., 108  
Hensley, Major Samuel, 46  
Hewitt, R. H., 224  
Hickey, G. S., 58  
Hill, Lawrence L., 231  
Historical Society of Southern California, Founding, 203-214  
"History Maker Citation," first award by the Historical Society of Southern California, 189  
Hittell, Theodore, 5, 9  
Home League, 273  
Hough, John C., 174  
Hough, Rev. A. M., 58  
Howard, Volney and Norwood, 259  
Howard, W. D. M., 35  
Howe, John, 153  
Hoyt, John, 160  
Hunt, Rockwell D., 3, 99, 228, 265, 353  
Hurley, Rev. Daniel, 259

## I

Ide, William B., 107  
Immigration Act of 1924, Passage by Congress of the, 363-367  
*Indians of California, Past and Present*, by American Friends Service Committee, rev., 86  
Ingalls, Captain J. N. of the S. S. *Senator*, 56  
Ingalls, G. W., 224  
Interesting Note About Three Fathers, An, 247  
Isbell, Mrs. Olive Mann, 79

## Index to Volume XL

*Islands and Ports of California, The*, by  
Duncan Gleason, *rev.*, 185

### J

Jenkins, W. M., 155  
Jenkins, W. W., 279  
Jervey, Edward Drewry, 58  
Johnston, General Albert Sydney, 46,  
271  
Johnson, Hiram W., Election as Gov-  
ernor, 1910, 354-358  
Johnson, Grove L., 356  
Johnson, N. B., 165  
Jones, E. W., 204, 226  
Jones, Thomas Ap Catesby, Commodore  
of the Pacific Fleet, 1842, 110, 337-351  
Judah, Theodore, 276

### K

Katzenstein, George B., 374  
Keller, Mat, 46  
King, Clarence, 280  
King, Thomas Starr, 273  
Kino, Eusebio Francisco, 11  
KleinSmid, Rufus B. von, 64  
Knowland, Joseph R., 258  
Kohler, A., 204, 226  
Krythe, Maymie R., 33

### L

*Lake Tahoe*, by John and Ricky Warri-  
ner, *rev.*, 305  
Lampson, Dr. R. M., 125  
Lang, John, 286  
Lang's Station, 286, 288, 289; Society  
Pilgrimage, June, 1957, 262  
Larkin, Thomas O., 107, 111, 344  
*Lavender, David*, *rev.*, 396  
Lazard, Sol, 41  
Leaming, Christopher, 165, 285  
Leighton, Joe, 390  
Leonis, Miguel, 192  
Lesseps, M. de, 360  
*Levering, Noah: A Biographical Sketch*,  
by Lorrin L. Morrison, 211-214  
Levering, Noah, 204, 223, 226  
*Life and Death of a Quicksilver Mine*,  
*The*, by Helen Rocca Goss, *rev.*, 394  
Lincoln-Roosevelt League, 355  
López, Francisco, 114, 151, 154, 279  
Lowe, Frederick E., 274  
Lummis, Charles F., 10  
Lynch, Jack, 386  
Lynch, Joseph D., 224  
Lyon, Sanford, 153, 154, 165, 279, 285

### Mc

McCaughy, Ann, 258  
McClatchy, James, 273  
McClellan, J. A., 170  
McConnell, John R., 272  
McDonald, Ed, 44

McDougal, John, 267  
McFie, Maynard, In Memoriam, 96  
McLaughlin, Dr. John, 102  
McPhail, E. N., 250  
McPherson, William, 254

### M

Maclay, Senator Charles, 60  
Maclay, R. S., 60  
Mafras, Duflot de, 152  
Mallard, Augusta, 51  
Manly, William Lewis, 152  
Mansfield, John, 204, 224, 226  
Mariné, Lieut. Juan, 183  
*Mariné, Searching for the Birth Date of  
Eulalia Pérez de Guillén de*, by Marie  
Northrop, 180-184; Children of: Maria  
Petra married Santiago Rubio; Isidoro,  
Domingo, Maria Josefa, Miguel An-  
tonio y Tomás, Saba; Maria Antonia  
Feliciana married José Leonardo Hi-  
guera; Maria de los Angeles married  
José Tiburcio López; Maria del Rosa-  
rio married Michael White; Maria Lo-  
reta married Daniel Martin Call; Ma-  
ria Rita married Vicente de la Osa  
Markley, Rice, 124  
Marshall, James Wilson, 114-118  
Martin, Miss Margaret Fry (Mrs. Noah  
Levering), 211  
Martin, William, 125  
Maxwell, Richard, 341  
Maynard, Lafayette, 33, 34  
Mellus, Alexander row, 232  
In Memoriam: Mrs. Marshall Stimson,  
Joseph Scott, Maynard McFie and  
Judge Hartley Shaw, 96  
Mendoza, Antonio, 152  
Mentry, C. A., 387  
Mentryville or Pico, 383  
Merced Theatre, 231  
Merritt, Ezekial, 107  
Mervine, Captain, 112  
Methodists, California Conference, 58  
*Methodist Church and the University of  
Southern California, The*, by Edward  
Drewry Jervey, 58-69  
Methodist Episcopal Conference of South-  
ern California, 59  
*Metropolitan Government Symposium,  
Proceedings of the*, by Los Angeles  
Chamber of Commerce, *rev.*, 305  
Micheltorena, General Manuel, 341  
Miller, John, 170  
Miller, William J., 279  
Millikan, Dr. Robert A., 258  
*Mining Camps of the Soledad*, by Arthur  
B. Perkins, Part I, 149-173; Part II,  
285-303; Part III, 373-392  
*Missions: Reports to Mexico, Annual, Bi-  
ennial and Status*, 139; Table showing  
number of Resident Neophytes, 1769-  
1834, 145-148



# THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Mission La Purísima, 248  
 Mission San Buenaventura (Society Pilgrimage) Commemorating 170th Anniversary, 259  
 Mission San Diego, 7; Founding by Junípero Serra, July 16, 1769, 8-10  
 Mission San Gabriel, 13-14  
 Mission San Luis Rey (Society Pilgrimage), 261  
 Mission Santa Ynez, 248  
 Mitchell, John, 298  
 Mofrat, Duflot de, 111  
 Moise, Mrs. Alice O'Neill, 269  
 Moise, Anthony, 259  
 Moise, Jerome O'Neill, 259  
 Mojave Desert, 12  
 Moncada, Fernando Rivera y, 223  
 Moore, A. P., 295  
 Moore, Charles C., 362  
 More, Ira, 204, 224, 226  
 Morrison, Lorrin L., 211  
*Mr. California, Autobiography* of Rockwell D. Hunt, *rev.*, 185

## N

Nadeau, Remi, 285  
 Narváez, Captain Pedro, 345  
 Neasham, Dr. Aubrey, 261  
 Needham, Henry Clay, 374  
*Neophytes (Existentes) of the California Missions, 1769-1834, The*, by J. N. Bowman, with table, 138-146  
 Newhall, Henry M., 292; Mr. and Mrs., 299  
 Newhall, J. O., 298  
 Newhall, Old, California, 290  
*Newhall Ranch, The*, by Ruth Waldo Newhall, *rev.*, 304  
 Newmark, Harris, 247  
 Newmark, Marco R., 200, 248, 254, 410  
 Nichols, Bill, 160  
 Nigger Alley, 238  
 Niles, J. B., 204, 224, 226  
 Northrop, Marie, 180  
 Notes from the Secretary, 196-198, 314-317, 408-409

## O

O'Brien, Father of Mission Santa Barbara, 258  
 O'Donnell, Thomas, 281  
 Oil as a Great Commercial Product, Discovery of, 279  
 O'Laughlin, Legory H., 87  
 O'Neill Park, 258  
 O'Neill, Richard, 258  
 O'Neill, Mrs. Richard, Jr., 259  
 O'Neill, Richard Jerome, 259  
 Orcutt, Mr. and Mrs. William W., 244  
 Orcutt, Mrs. William, 256  
 O'Reilly, Father of Ventura Mission, 263  
 O'Reilly, James, 286  
 Ord, Lieut. E. O. C., 227

*Our Heritage from the Days of the Dons*, by Thomas Workman Temple II, 70-76

## P

Pacific Railroad, Completion of, May 10, 1869, 275  
 Packman, Ana Begue de, 223, 256, 409  
 Palmer, F. M., 224  
 Palmerton, Lord, 110  
 Palomares Adobe, 246  
 Palomares Adobe in Pomona, Dedication October 20, 1957, 70  
 Panama Canal, Completion of the, 1914, 395-362  
 Pardee, Ed, 375  
 Parrott, John, American Consul in Mazatlan, 1842, 338  
 Pasadena Historical Society, 88  
 Patton, Miss Anne, 262  
 Perkins, Arthur B., 149, 263, 285, 373  
 Pico, Andrés, 108  
 Pico Hacienda, Don Pío, 238  
 Pico or Mentryville, 383  
 Pilgrimages of the Society, Annual, 1928-1958, 229-263  
 Placeritas, 1842, 151-154  
 Plaza Church, 231  
 Polk, James K., 105  
 Polk, Robert T., 170  
 Portolá, Captain Gaspar de, 9, 10  
 Portolá Expedition of 1769 (1947 Society Pilgrimage), 250  
 Powell, J. F., 296  
 Powell, Lawrence Clark, 325  
 Preston, E. B., 155  
 Putnam, Frank B., 262

## R

Raggio, Charles, 153  
 Raggio Rancho, 156-157  
 Raising the American Flag at Monterey, on July 7, 1846, by Commodore John Drake Sloat, 110-113  
 Rancho Camulos, 251  
 Rancho El Escorpión, 244  
 Rancho Las Encinas, 252  
 Rancho Las Virgenes, 244  
 Rancho Los Alamitos, 174, 245  
 Rancho San Joaquín, 176  
 Rancho San José de Buenos Ayres, 223  
 Rancho San Francisco, "San Francisco," 149-150, 251  
 Rancho San Pasqual (Society Pilgrimage), 262  
 Rancho Santa Anita, 254  
 Rancho Sombre del Roble, 243, 256  
 Rancho de Triunfo, 243  
 Rancho Trails from Los Angeles, 241-242  
 Ravenna, California, 286  
 Reitz, John K., 122  
 Reyes, Juan Francisco, 223, 252  
 Reynier, Joseph, 377

## Index to Volume XL

Richard, John, 258  
 Riha, Jeanne, 77  
 Ripley, E. P., 247  
 Ripley, Mr. and Mrs. Frederic, 200  
 Robinson, W. W., 259  
 Rocca, Andrew, 120, 123, 124, 127, 128, 130  
 Rogers, Harrison, 101  
 Rolle, Andrew F., 81, 87  
 Roosevelt, President Theodore, 360  
 Rossetti, Victor H., 262  
 Rowell, Chester H., 355  
 Rubel, Mrs. August, 250  
 Ruiz, Joaquín, 176  
 Rust, Horatio, 224  
 Ryland, Richard, 165

### S

Saez, Justo Nazario, 71  
 Sánchez, Father José, 101  
 Sánchez, José, 170  
 San Feliciano, California, 1843, 154-155  
 San Gabriel Mission Reception, September 7, 1958, 311  
 San Pedro Bay, 33  
*Santa Ana's Own, Company L., The Story of*, by Charles D. Swanner, rev., 305  
 Santa Barbara (Society Pilgrimage), 256  
 Salazar, José, 154  
 San Francisquito, California, 155-157  
 Saunders, John, 386  
 Scofield, D. G., 385  
 Scott, Joseph, In Memoriam, 96  
 Scott Joseph, 261  
 Searles, Dennis, 170  
 Sebastian, San Gabriel Mission Neophyte, 12  
*Second Century, In Our*, by Jerome A. Hart, rev., 85  
 Seeley, Captain Thomas W., of the S. S. *Senator*, 40-49  
*Senator, Favorite Coastwise Steamer, The*, by Maymie R. Krythe, 33-57  
*Sense of the Past, The*, by Lawrence Clark Powell, 325-336  
 Sepúlveda, José, 176  
 Serra, Junípero, Apostle of California, 8-10  
*Sespe, A Place Called*, by Robert Glass Cleland, rev., 85  
 Seward, Rev. W. D., 376  
 Seward, William H., 268, 362  
 Sewell, Dan, 133  
 Shadow Ranch, 244  
 Shaw, Judge Hartley, In Memoriam, 96  
 Sherman, Major Edwin A., 111  
 Shillabar, First Officer of the S. S. *Senator*, 54  
 Silliman, Professor Benjamin, 280  
 Silliman, Benjamin, Jr., 385  
 Silva, Captain Mariano, 344  
 Simmons, Bezar, 35  
 Sloat, Commodore, John D., 108, 110-113

Smith, Jedediah Strong, 270  
 Smith, The Overland Expedition of Jedediah Strong Smith to California, 1826, 100  
 Snytor, William J., 259  
 Soledad, California, 162-171  
 Soledad City, California, 289  
 Soledad, Mining Camps, 149-173  
 Sonora, California, 120-137  
 Southern Pacific, "S. P. Machine," 354  
 Spence, J. M., 165  
 Spencer, Purser of the S. S. *Senator*, 42  
 Spooner Act, 360  
 Springpole rigs, 386  
 Stanford as Governor, in 1861, Election of Leland, 270, 272  
 Stanton, Phil, 356  
*Steamers, of California*: Ada Hancock, 48; California, 33; Comet, 48; Confidence, 37; Constantine, 53; Golden State, 43; Gold Hunter, 38; Goliah, 38; Kalorama, 53; McKin, 37; Mohonogo, 53; Monterey, 53; New World, 33; Orizaba, 50; Pacific, 50; Seabird, 38; Senator, 33-57; Southerner, 38  
 Stearns, Abel, 58, 152, 174  
 Stearns, Don Abel and Arcadia Bandini, 245  
 Stephens, Henry Morse, 361-362  
 Sterrett, Roger J., 250, 256  
 Stewart, Lyman, 280, 391  
 Stewart, Paul E., 257  
 Stimson, Mrs. Marshall, In Memoriam, 96  
 Stimson, Mr. and Mrs. Marshall, 200  
 Stimson, Marshall, 242, 258, 259, 410  
 St. John, Governor John P. of Kansas, 374  
 St. John's Subdivision, 374  
 Stockton, Commodore Robert F., 108  
 Stothart, Captain of the S. S. *Senator*, 54  
 Stribling, Commodore, 346  
 St. Vincent's College, 238  
 Sumner, General Edwin V., 271  
 Suracco, Baptiste, 153  
 Sutter, Captain, 115  
 Swall, Jake, Albert C., Henry, Jake, Jr., 378  
 Swift, Captain Granville P., 108

### T

Tallack, William, 227  
 Tansey, John, 58  
 Tansey, Mrs. Sarah, 59  
 Taylor, Bayard, 35  
 Temple, Thomas Workman, II, 70  
 Temple, II, Gabriela and Thomas Workman, 311  
 Thomas, Vice-Admiral, of the English Fleet, 1842, 337  
 Thompson, G. H., 377  
 Toombs, Richard, 268  
 Truman, Ben C., 164, 170, 285

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Truman, Major Ben, 51  
 Trussell, Horatio Gates, 258  
 Tuolumne County, 121  
 Turner, Frederick Jackson, 278  
 Turner, Justin G., 88

### U

Ullóa, Francisco de, 5  
 United Nations Charter at San Francisco, 1945, Drafting of the, 368-371  
 University of Southern California, 59  
*Union Democrat* of Sonora, California, 120-137  
 Upshur, Secretary of the Navy, A. P., 338

### V

Vallejo, General M. G., 107, 111  
 Van Pelt, *Skipper* John, 35  
 Vásquez, Tiburcio, 287  
 Vásquez, Chico, 287  
 Ventura County Landmarks, 77  
 Vergennes, Monsieur Petit de, 44  
 Visscher, Edward, 152

### W

Walker Ranch, 152  
 Walker, Thomas B., 377  
 Wallace, Alfred J., 355  
 Warner, J. J., 204, 226  
 Warren, Governor and Mrs. Earl, 250

Warren, Robert T., 34  
 Waseurtz, G. M., 152  
 Weinstock, Harris, 355  
 Wheat, Carl I., 226, 227  
 White, George W., 63  
 Whitney, J. D., 280  
 Whitney, John, 377  
 Widney, J. P., 61  
 Widney, Judge Robert M., 228  
 Widney, Robert Maclay, 58, 62  
 Williamson, Lieut. R. S., 163  
 Wilson, "Don Benito," Benjamin Davis, 262  
 Wilson, C. N., 204, 226  
 Wilson, J. Stitt, 356  
*Winter Sports in California and the 1960 VIIIth Winter Olympics*, by Jerry Carpenter, *rev.*, 187  
 Wood, Will C., 102  
 Woollett, William, 87  
 Works, John D., 355  
 Wright, George, 267

### X

Ximenez, Antonio de Fortuno, 5

### Y

Yarborough, George, 165  
 Yarnell, Jesse, 374  
 Yorba, José Antonio, 254  
 Youle, W. E., 387

## INDEX TO PORTRAITS AND ILLUSTRATIONS

Adams, Charles Gibbs, *portrait*, 225  
 Annual Pilgrimage, 1955, to Lake Vineyard, showing John C. Austin, Miss Anne Patton, Edmond F. Ducommun, Jean Hall Giles, Marco R. Newmark, Frank B. Putnam, *photo*, 251  
 Arlt, Gustave O., *portrait*, 231  
 President Arlt with honored guests, Miss Clementina de Forest Griffin, Miss Mabel Guinn and Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt, at the Society's 75th Anniversary Meeting, *photo*, 331  
 Austin, John C., *portrait*, 229  
 Bacon, Walter R., *portrait*, 216  
 Baker, Professor Marcus, *portrait*, 207  
 Barrows, Henry Dwight, *portrait*, 209  
 Bibliography authors show their book, with former Society president and members of the Publications Committee, *photo*, 401  
 Bovard, George Finley, *portrait*, 217  
 Broderick, David C., *portrait*, 17  
 "Builders of Los Angeles Plaque" Unveiling, 1952, 412  
 California's First Oil Refinery, *photo*, 382  
 Adolfo Camarillo and Señoritas of the Camarillo Family, *photo*, 191, 255

Casa Figueroa showing Mrs. Ana Begue de Packman, Miss Close, Florence D. Schoneman and Mrs. Louise Ward Watkins, *photo*, 243  
 Cleland, Robert Glass, March, 1958, *Cover*  
 Cleland, Robert Glass, *portrait*, 222  
 Commemorative Program sponsored by the Society, the Daughters of the American Revolution, California Chapter and the Sons of the Revolution, California Chapter, July 3, 1897, *facsimile*, 236-237  
 Compton's Heritage House Receives Plaque, *photo*, 402  
 Coronel, Don Antonio, *portrait*, 204  
 Coronel, Don Antonio home, *photo*, 238  
 Diamond Anniversary Meeting of the Society showing part of large audience, *photo*, 399  
 Diamond Anniversary Social Hour, showing Miss Grace Stoermer at urn with guests, *photo*, 400  
 Dickson, Edward A., *portrait*, 228  
 Downey, Ex-Governor, John G., *portrait*, 205



## Index to Volume XL

- Earl Mansion on Wilshire Boulevard, *photo*, 245  
 Electric Light Pole in Los Angeles, The First, *photo*, 264  
 Ellis, Arthur, *portrait*, 219  
 Fishburn, Jr., John E., *portrait*, 230  
 Griffin, George Butler, *portrait*, 214  
 Guinn, James Miller, *portrait*, 213  
 Gwin, William McKendree, *portrait*, 16  
 Hansen, George, *portrait*, 206  
 Historical Pilgrimage, 1954, along the Mission Trail, showing John C. Austin, Joseph Scott, Edmond F. Ducommun and Marco R. Newmark, *photo*, 248  
 Historical Society Participates in Birthday Celebration, *photo*, 310  
 Honored Guest, Sheriff Eugene Biscailuz, President Arlt, Mrs. Huston Alexander, Señor Gabe Ruiz at Biscailuz Dinner, *photo*, 190  
 Hunt, Rockwell D., *portrait*, 218  
 Invitation to Reception at residence of Mr. and Mrs. Williamson, March 22, . . . , *facsimile*, 235  
 Jones, Major E. W., *portrait*, 212  
 Lang Station Pilgrimage of 1957 showing two historical markers honoring Francisco López, *photos*, 253  
 Larkin, Thomas O., *portrait*, 113  
 Layne, J. Gregg, *portrait*, 220  
 Los Angeles Celebrates 177th Birthday with Dr. Gustave O. Arlt and Miss Jeanne Cagney, *photo*, 309  
 Los Angeles County Museum, *photo*, 242  
 Los Angeles Settlers, Route Map of First, *map*, 8  
 Mariné, Eulalia, Pérez de Guillén de, *portrait*, June, 1958, *Frontispiece*  
 Marion, Guy E., *portrait*, 232  
 Mentryville (Pico), California, 1881, *photo*, 156  
 Moody, J. D., *portrait*, 215  
 Nadeau Building, Old, *photo*, 241  
 Newmark, Marco R., *portrait*, 226  
 Old Newhall, 1882; Newhall, 1892, *photo*, 156  
 Old Spanish Land Grant Tour, 1952, showing John C. Austin, Richard Bard, J. Gregg Layne, Marco R. Newmark, and Frederic C. Ripley, *photo*, 246  
 Old Temple Court House About 1891, September, 1958, *Cover*  
 Packman, Ana Begue de, September, 1958, *Frontispiece*  
 Pardee's Livery Barn, Newhall, California, 1887, *photo*, 157  
 Pilgrimage to Fort Tejon, 1953, showing Mrs. Edmond F. Ducommun, Marco R. Newmark, Dr. Aubrey Neasham, Edmond F. Ducommun, Mrs. Frederic C. Ripley, Roger J. Sterrett and Mr. Frederic C. Ripley, *photo*, 247  
 Plaque commemorating First Commercial Oil Well in California, December, 1958, *Cover*  
 San Francisco Harbor, *photo*, showing Steamers Senator and New World, 33  
 Scott, Joseph, Family photograph, 1931, March, 1958, *Frontispiece*  
 Sloat, Commodore John Drake, June, 1958, *Cover*  
 Society Blazon, The, designed by Colonel George Butler Griffin, with description, *facsimile*, 257  
 Society Book Plate, The, designed by Roger J. Sterrett with description, *line drawing*, 260  
 Spanish language letter from George Butler Griffin to Antonio Coronel, March 9, 1890, with translation by James Honey, *facsimile*, 234  
 The Southern Hotel in Old Newhall, *photo*, 381  
 Southwest Museum, *photo*, 244  
 Special Book Publication Program Announced showing the authors, Mr. and Mrs. Everett Gordon Hager with Dr. Lawrence Clark Powell and President Arlt, *photo*, 332  
 Special Meeting Notice, November 25, 1889, *facsimile*, 233  
 Speakers' Platform at the Society's Diamond Anniversary Meeting showing featured speaker Dr. Lawrence Clark Powell, honored guests, Miss Mabel Guinn, Miss Clementina de Forest Griffin, Miss Ruth I. Mahood, Legory O'Laughlin, Ed Roybal, presiding Dr. Arlt and directors of the Society, December, 1958, *Frontispiece*  
 State Normal School About 1885, *photo*, 238  
 Sterrett, Roger J., *portrait*, 227  
 Stimson, Marshall, *portrait*, 224  
 Stockton, Commodore Robert F., *portrait*, 112  
 Temple Block in 1890's, *photo*, 240  
 Wagner, Henry Raup, *portrait*, 221  
 Warner, Colonel J. J., *portrait*, 208

## SOCIETY FUNCTIONS, MEMBERSHIP ROLLS AND GIFTS

### ACTIVITIES

Meeting of January 14, 1958: Speaker: Mr. William Woollett; Subject: *Capitulation of Cahuenga*. Award was pre-

sented to Dr. Andrew Rolle by Legory H. O'Laughlin on behalf of the American Association of State and Local History. Members and guests signing Society Register, 87

## THE HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA

Meeting of February 11, 1958: Speakers: President Arlt and Director Justin G. Turner; Subjects: *Baron von Steuben—The Prussian General Who Served George Washington in the Revolutionary War*, by Dr. Arlt; *General Washington's Valley Forge Orderly Book*, by Mr. Turner. Members and guests signing Society Register, 88

Meeting of March 11, 1958 at Southwest Museum: Speaker: Mr. Carl S. Dentzel; Subject: *Aboriginal American Art*. Members and guests signing Society Register, 88-89

Meeting of April 8, 1958: Speakers: Ken Good, assisted by Russell Belous; Frank Putnam; Miss Ruth I. Mahood. Subjects: *A Pueblo in Stills and a Metropolis in Motion*, by Messrs. Good and Belous; *Oo-tse-tee Ar-dee-ish Skee Was the Father of California*, by Mr. Putnam; *A Short History of the Los Angeles County Museum*, by Miss Mahood. In addition film "*Lang Revisited*," consisting of pictures of the 1957 Trek. Members and guests signing Society Register, 188

Biscailuz Dinner, May 13, 1958, at Los Angeles Athletic Club: *Guest of Honor* and featured speaker: Retiring Sheriff Eugene W. Biscailuz. Remarks by: President Arlt, Thomas Workman Temple, II, and John C. Austin. Awarding of the first *Historical Society of Southern California History-Maker Citation*, to Eugene W. Biscailuz. Members and guests signing Society Register, 189

Annual Pilgrimage of June 21, 1958: Visiting Castaic Junction, Rancho Camulos, California Oil Museum, Ventura Historical Society, Ventura Mission, Rancho of Don Adolfo Camarillo, John Caradine's home, "Espirita," and many way points. Members and guests signing Society Register, 190-193

*Los Angeles City Birthday Celebration*, September 4, 1958; Booth at *The Plaza*. Program: Historical slide and picture show of the City shown by Miss Ruth I. Mahood, Mr. Ed Hughes, and Mr. Ralph Hill. *Society members assisting*: Chairman and Mrs. K. L. Carver, Mr. and Mrs. Joseph M. Northrop, Mr. and Mrs. Lorrin L. Morrison, Mr. and Mrs. George S. Swartz, Mr. and Mrs. Ernest Yorba, Joseph La Barbera, Mrs. Thomas Workman, Mr. and Mrs. Alfred S.

Chapman, Mrs. Jean Hall Giles, Mr. and Mrs. George S. Moffat, and Mrs. and Mrs. Guy E. Marion. Members and guests signing Society Register, 310-311

*Butterfield Overland Trail Caravan*, October 7, 1958: Welcoming of Caravan from Tipton, Missouri, at Terminal Annex of Post Office. Speaker: Charles W. Childs.

*Diamond Anniversary Meeting*, November 21, 1958, at Los Angeles County Museum. Speakers: Dr. Lawrence Clark Powell and Dr. Rockwell D. Hunt. Subject: "*The Sense of the Past*," by Dr. Powell. Members and guests signing Society Register, 403-405

*Annual Christmas Program*, December 9, 1958: Speakers: Katherine Bixby Hotchkis and Rev. Wesley Havermale. Subjects: *Christmas at Rancho Los Alamitos*, by Mrs. Hotchkis; *Christmas Comes to the Holy Land*, by Rev. Havermale; Viewing of the Van Gogh art exhibit. Members and guests signing Society Register, 405-406

### GIFTS TO THE SOCIETY

Received from: Mrs. Gertrude Allen, *California Historical Society*, George L. Harding, Miss Clara C. Hatfield, *Huntington Library and Art Gallery*, Heard H. Izant, Robert W. King, *Long Beach Public Library*, Guy E. Marion, Lorrin L. Morrison, Frank Rolfe, Leonore Rowland, Russell Simmons, *University of California Press*, 91-93; Duncan Gleason, Miss Charlot Hopperstead, Marco R. Newmark, Frank Rolfe, Smithsonian Institute, 194; *Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce*, Stree-ter Blair, Mrs. Joseph M. Northrop, Harry J. Volk, 312; Robert C. Gillingham, Mable E. Lunn, Frederick K. Beinecke, Marco R. Newmark, *Los Angeles County Art Institute*, George H. Whitney, Robert G. Cowan, Paul Mason, and Philip S. Rush, 407

### MEMBERSHIP

New members of the Society: December, 1957-March, 1958, 90; April 1-June 30, 1958, 195; July and August, 1958, 313

Roster of Members, as of December 31, 1958, 414-420

Society Officers, 1883-1958: *Presidents*: 215-216; *Vice-Presidents*: 217-219; *Secretaries*: 220; *Treasurers*: 221; *Curators*: 222

**PUBLICATIONS**  
*of the*  
***Historical Society of***  
***Southern California***

1909 South Western Avenue, Los Angeles 18, California

*Telephone REpublic 4-2823*



1892 — Annual Containing the Sutro  
 Documents with translations - - each \$3.00

1931 — One Hundred Fiftieth Anni-  
 versary Special Publication  
 (Annual for 1931) - - - - each \$5.00

All other numbers of Annual  
 Publications - - - - - each \$2.50

A limited number of sets of Annuals  
 (1892 - 1934, inclusive) are  
 available - - - - - per set \$75.00

These sets do not include An-  
 nuals for 1895, 1924 or 1933,  
 which are out of print.

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
 members - - - - - per run \$8.00

Individual single numbers to  
 members - - - - - each \$2.00

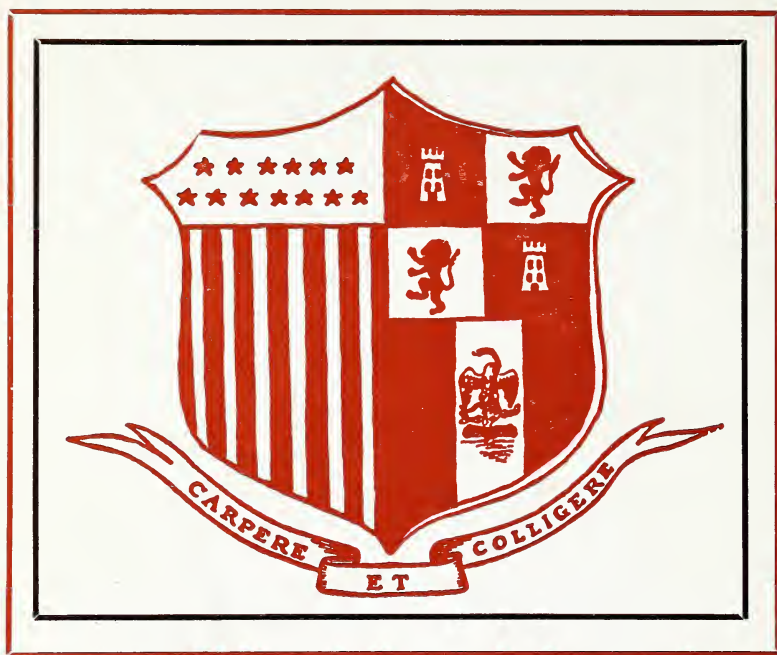
Individual double numbers to  
 members - - - - - each \$3.00

THE QUARTERLY — One full year to  
 non-members - - - - - per run \$10.00

Individual single numbers to  
 non-members - - - - - each \$3.00

Individual double numbers to  
 non-members - - - - - each \$4.00











HECKMAN  
BINDERY INC.



JUL 89



N. MANCHESTER,  
INDIANA 46962

